



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

3 2044 011 310 760



**HARVARD  
COLLEGE  
LIBRARY**









HISTORY  
OF  
NORTHAMPTON,  
MASSACHUSETTS

FROM ITS SETTLEMENT IN 1654

BY

JAMES RUSSELL TRUMBULL

"2 pt. 1"

VOL. II

---

Of Patriotism is Liberty Born

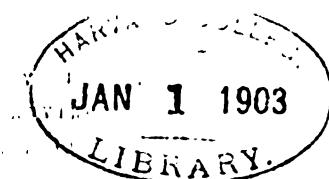
---

NORTHAMPTON:  
1902.

215 13382.5 (2, ft. 1)

10:22.29.5  
~~U.S.13382.5~~

215 13382.5 (2, pt. 1).



Bright illud.

Entered according to Act of Congress in the year 1902, by  
NANCY LAMB MILLER,  
In the office of the Librarian of Congress at Washington.



NORTHAMPTON, MASS.:  
PRESS OF GAZETTE PRINTING CO.  
1902.

## P R E F A C E.

---

The author of these volumes, James Russell Trumbull, was born in Williamsburgh, Mass., Dec. 21, 1825. He had only a common school education, but that proved to be the foundation of a course of study and research which continued as long as he lived. At the age of seventeen he entered the office of the Hampshire Gazette as apprentice, early showing the characteristics which distinguished him through life,—energy, perseverance and painstaking accuracy. His editorial ability was soon recognized, and at the close of his apprenticeship he was made foreman. In 1849, he became editor of the Hampshire and Franklin Express, published in Amherst. Here, with his young wife, whom he married in November of the same year, he made his residence until March, 1853, when he undertook the editorship of the Hampshire Gazette under Hopkins, Bridgman & Co., Proprietors. In October of 1858, he purchased the entire establishment, and a month later the Hampshire Gazette and the Northampton Courier were united under their respective editors with the firm name of Trumbull & Gere. This partnership continued till 1877, when the senior member was obliged to retire on account of his health. But his public service was not ended. As a member of the Village Improvement Society and of the Library Committee he worked faithfully in the interest of the city for many years; and in August, 1884, he was chosen to fill the place of the retiring city treasurer. To this office he was elected from year to year without opposition until his resignation at the close of 1889.

In 1881, Mr. Trumbull came into possession of the Judd MSS., a wonderful monument of patient research, but wanting somewhat in practical value because of its lack of an adequate index. In supplying this deficiency he spent years of careful study, becoming more and more impressed with the worth and interest of these annals of the past. Just when the purpose of writing a History of Northampton matured in his mind it is impossible to state, but it is safe to say that this work had been growing under his hands during all of the last twenty years of his life. As the increasing feebleness of his last few years diminished the prospect of his bringing this cherished hope to fulfillment, his nearest friends felt the depth of his disappointment, though it was borne with absolute silence. Still he persevered, working often far beyond his strength; and when, on the 3d of July, 1899, he was called to the

higher life, his story of Northampton's birth and development was nearly completed. It was never his design to follow its history farther than to the beginning of the nineteenth century, from which point the individual might easily carry it forward for himself by reference to the town records and the newspapers.

The task of editing and publishing this so nearly completed manuscript of the second volume of the History of Northampton was undertaken with reverence and affection, and the desire to carry out the dearest wish of a beloved uncle has overborne many misgivings. That the work cannot fail to have suffered from the fact that other hands than his must bring it to completion, is fully appreciated, but it is believed that its value is such as to overshadow the imperfections of its editing, and to justify the editors in asking for the indulgence of its readers.

The aim of the writer was not only to chronicle past events, but also to inspire the present generation with a just pride and with love for the city which was so dear to him, and to perpetuate the names of its heroes. If the years shall prove that this threefold endeavor has been successful, then will be realized the earnest hope with which this volume is offered to the public, namely that it may be a noble and lasting monument to the memory of its author.

NANCY L. MILLER.  
ANNA E. MILLER.

## CONTENTS.

---

### CHAPTER I.

#### DWELLINGS—FURNITURE—COSTUMES.

First Houses Built of Logs—More Substantial Dwellings Erected, 1  
—Interiors of these Houses, 2—An Increasing Family Demanded more Room, 3—Front Door—Roofing—Pinzzas and Paint unknown, 4—Barns, Kitchen and other Furniture, 5—Furnishing of one Parlor—Beds and Bedding, 6—Tables and Table Furniture, 7—Knives and Forks, 8—Chairs and Seats—Cooking Utensils—Warming-Pans and Foot-Stoves, 9—Clothing—Men's Garments, 10—Men's Clothing made by Seamstresses, 11—Women's Garments, 12—A Girl's Setting Out, 13.

### CHAPTER II.

#### FATHER RÂLE'S WAR.

Another War Cloud Darkens the Horizon—England and France not engaged in this War, 15—The Abenaki Indians encouraged by Jesuits Oppose the English—War Declared, 16—Commanders in Hampshire County—Attempts to Negotiate with Canada Indians, 17—Gray Lock Appears—Cavalry Ordered on Duty, 18—Assault on Northfield—Capt. Benjamin Wright offers his Services—Blockhouse Built above Northfield, 19—Opposition to Building of Blockhouse, 20—Lieut. Searl, Chaplain Daniel Dwight—Col. Stoddard Suggests use of Dogs—Indians to serve in Fort, 21—Garrisons in Northfield and Deerfield—Disaster at Hatfield—Scarcity of Men, 22—An Indian Ambuscade—Proclamation against Selling Liquor to Indians, 23—Aid Solicited from Connecticut—Conference with the Five Nations, 24—Express Messengers and Couriers, 25—The Indians get in More Work—A Northampton Party Attacked, 26—Edwards' gun recovered—Death of Father Râle, 27—Capt. Lovewell's Fatal Expedition—Another Unsuccessful Peace Negotiation, 28—Three Northampton Men Drowned—Gray Lock and his Fort, 29—Capt. Wright's Expedition, 30—Special Military Guard Ordered for Northampton—Carelessness and its Results, 31—Capt. Wright again Ordered Out—Peace Declared, 32.

## CHAPTER III.

## LEGISLATIVE CONTEST—SOUTHAMPTON SETTLED.

The War unnoticed on the Town Records, 33—No Fortifications deemed Necessary—Schoolmaster's Wages Increased—Sewer Controversy Becomes a Political Factor, 34—Upon it Turns the Legislative Contest—Characters of the Candidates, 35—Other Controversies. Testimony of Jonathan Edwards—History Corroborates it, 36—Caring for the Poor—Thomas Porter's Bargain, 37—First Settlement in Southampton, 38—Trespassers upon New Town Fined—Destruction of Dea. Hunt's Shop by Fire, 39—Baiting Stock Restricted, 40.

## CHAPTER IV.

## JONATHAN EDWARDS SETTLED AS COLLEAGUE PASTOR.

Pastorate of Rev. Mr. Stoddard, 41—Prompt Action by the Committee, 42—Rev. Israel Chauncey Engaged Temporarily, 43—Mr. Edwards Commences Preaching in Northampton—Propositions for his Settlement, 44—Money Raised to carry out the Preceding Votes, 45—Ordination and Installation of Jonathan Edwards, 46—All Auspices Favorable—Homestead Purchased for the new Pastor, 47—“Waiting on Mr. Edwards,” 48—Duties of those who Waited on him, 49—Mr. Edwards' Salary Increased from year to year, 1729 to 1745, 50.

## CHAPTER V.

## REV. SOLOMON STODDARD.

Death and Funeral of Mr. Stoddard—Parentage, Birth and Early Life, 52—His Position and Influence in the Community, 53—Religious Awakenings—His Influence—Distinguishing Peculiarity of his Pastorate, 54—Stoddardeanism Defined—His Practice, 55—Mr. Stoddard's Peculiar System a Means of Religious Education, 56—The Scheme Promulgated, 57—Its Popularity—Tradition Concerning His own Conversion, 58—Proposes to Establish a National Church—Takes part in the Reforming Synod, 59—The System Discussed—Mr. Stoddard's Version of the Debate, 60—Published Sermons—Personal Appearance—Preached without Notes, 61—His Preaching Powerful and Convincing—Pastor, 62—Repeated Visits to Boston—Judge Sewell's Diary, 63—Mr. Stoddard a Business Man, 64—Indian Tradition—Marriage—Estate, 63.

## CHAPTER VI.

## NEW MEETING-HOUSE.

A Meeting-House under Discussion—Decision to Build, 67—Probable Reason for Building—Committees sent to View Meeting-Houses—Gathering Materials, 68—An Attempt to Change the Location, 69—The Frame Raised, 70—Accidents—The Spire, Pews and Seats, 71—Money Borrowed to Pay Current Expenses—Interior of this Edifice, 72—Galleries—Four other Houses like this one—Seating the New Meeting-House, 73—The Seating Committee Instructed, 74—Plans of Sittings—First Occupation of the New Meeting-House—Serious Accident in the old one, 75—Fall of the Gallery, 76—The Old House Torn Down—Young People Behave Badly at Meeting—Porches Built and Tower Clock Obtained, 77.

## CHAPTER VII.

## JOSEPH HAWLEY—PHYSICIANS—TOWN HALL—PASCOMMUCK.

Suicide of Joseph Hawley—His Business, 79—Principally a Merchant—Store on “Pudding Lane,” 80—A Man of Intelligence—Religious Despondency, 81—Family—Mother of Major Hawley, 82—Crows—Town Map—Sheep Raising. Mt. Tom Fenced for Pasture, 83—Mt. Tom—Efforts to Equalize the Currency, 84—Surgeons and Physicians—Settlement of Dr. Hezekiah Porter, 85—School-House Reinovved, 86—Fines for Declining the Office of Constable—Town Hall and Court-House Built—The Building and its Cost, 87—Southampton Taxes Voted to that Precinct—Plurality Rule in Elections Adopted, 88—Pascommuck Resettled—Appropriation for Schooling there, 89—Southampton made a Precinct, 90.

## CHAPTER VIII.

## SCHOOL LANDS—SCHOOLS—MILL CONTROVERSY.

School Lands Sold—The Minister’s Woodpile, 91—Lower Grist-Mill Grant—Lawsuit about the Mill, 92—Controversy about the Common Lands Resumed, 93—Settled for a Decade and Expenses thereof—Dispute again Waxes Hot, 95—Suits Ordered to Recover these Lands—Action for Trespass against Timothy Dwight, 96—Final Adjustment of the Controversy—Land Granted to Southampton, 97—New Schools Established—Dogs Prohibited from Running at Large, 98—Infringements upon the Highways Dealt with—An Unfriendly Vote, 99—A Workhouse in Agitation—Unruly Youth to be Inspected, 100—Death-rate for Three Years, 101.

## CHAPTER IX.

## KING GEORGE'S FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR.

Indian Trade Solicited—War Declared, 102—Capture of Canseau—War Preparations in Massachusetts, 103—Commission on Defences Appointed—Fortifications Constructed, 104—Officers in Hampshire County—Soldiers and Dogs Enlisted, 105—The Town Adopts a New Method of Defence, 106—Mounts Ordered to be Built, 107—Remote Places Fortified, 108—Mounts Erected near the Center—Cost of the same, 109—Casualties of the Year, 110.

## CHAPTER X.

## KING GEORGE'S FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR.

Louisburg and its Fortress—Gov. Shirley's Proposition, 112—Expedition Organized—Ready to Sail, 113—Hampshire County Officers—Anti-Catholic Crusade, 114—Major Pomeroy's Company—Voyage of Hampshire Company, 115—Fleet set Sail for Louisburg—Capture of "Grand Battery," 116—Letter from Besieging Army—John Hooker Wounded, 117—Capitulation of the City—Northampton Men Return Home, 118—Illness of Major Pomeroy—Soldiers from Northampton, 119.

## CHAPTER XI.

## SETH POMEROY'S JOURNAL—121-146.

## CHAPTER XII.

## KING GEORGE'S FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR.

Aggressive Policy of French—Capture of Fort Massachusetts, 147—The Bars Fight, 148—Projected Invasion of Canada—Hampshire Troops Ordered to Boston, 149—Major Seth Pomeroy's Company—Ordered to Pursue the Indians, 150—Sent to Hoosack and Fort Massachusetts, 151—Afterwards in Boston—Indian Depredations at Southampton, 152—Attack near Fort Massachusetts—Attack on No. 4 Repulsed, 153—Soldiers at Fort Massachusetts—Vaudreuil's Futile Expedition, 154—Other Casualties—Elisha Clark Killed—St. Blein Wounded, 155—Fort Built in Easthampton, 156—Soldiers' Taxes Abated—Unsatisfactory Condition of Affairs, 157—Death of Col. John Stoddard—His Successor Appointed, 158—Col. Dwight's Suggestions—Series of Disasters, 159—Lieut. Hawley—Scout by Col. Dwight, 161—This Expedition Unnoticed—Letter from Major Israel Williams—Most of River Towns Escape, 162—Noah Pixley Killed—Southampton Deserted—Peace Declared, 163—Louisburg given up, 164.

## CHAPTER XIII.

## COL. JOHN STODDARD.

First Appearance—Graduation and Early Life—Stirring and Momen-tous Times, 163—Military Honors—Selectman, 166—Representative, Town Clerk, Councillor, 167—Engaged in laying out New Towns—Em-ployed in Negotiations with the Indians, 168—He Believes in Treating Indians Kindly—Misunderstanding with Dwight, 169—A Commissioner from Massachusetts—Judicial Employments, 170—Land Grant at Pitts-field—Little to be found Concerning Motives of Prominent Men, 171—Prominent among Leaders in Town, County and State—Loyal to the King, 172—Legislative Duties, 173—He had many Enemies—The Vil-lage Magnate, 174—Testimony of Thomas Hutchinson—Case of Rev. Mr. Breck, 175—Opinion of Rev. Jonathan Edwards—Characteristics, 176—His Death—Inventory of his Estate—His Family, 177—Residence, 178.

## CHAPTER XIV.

## NEW SCHOOLS—DIVISION OF THE ADDITIONAL GRANT.

Schools Carefully Nurtured—Town Boards the Schoolmaster, 179—New Schools Established—Improvements Suggested. New School-House Ordered, 180—The above Vote Rescinded—Still further Changes in the Schools, 181—Girls Excluded from Public Schools—Bills of Credit Depreciating, 182—Liberty Granted Second Precinct to Sell Land—Ad-ditional Grant Divided. Rule of the Division, 183—Statistics of this Division, 184-190.

## CHAPTER XV.

## PRECINCTS—MR EDWARDS' SALARY—GREAT AWAKENING.

Mill River Overstepping its Bounds, 191—New Bridge over the Stream—Pomeroy's Trading Shop—Town Pound, 192—Portions of High-way Sold—Recording Town Warrants, 193—The First Precinct—Its Organization, 194—Salary of Mr. Edwards—Permanent one Voted, 195—Report of the Committee, 196—Prices how Determined—Another Gift to Mr. Edwards—Naughty Children Punished, 197—The Con-troversy with Mr. Edwards—The Great Awakening, 198—Beneficial Effect upon the Town, 200.

## CHAPTER XVI.

## CONTROVERSY WITH REV. JONATHAN EDWARDS.

Young People Accused of Reading Immoral Books, 202—Mr. Ed-wards Repudiates Stoddardeanism, 203—Publishes his Views, 204—

Opinions of other Clergymen sought by means of a Fast-Day—Petition for Precinct Meeting, 205—A Family Party—Continuous Precinct Meeting, 206—A Day of Fasting—Adjourned Precinct Meeting—Committee of Conference Chosen—The Conference and Counter Propositions, 207—The Committee Reports to the Precinct—Mr. Edwards Objects, 208—A Church Meeting Called—Ignore the Book but want it Answered—A Stormy Meeting, 209—Major Pomeroy Swings the Meeting, 210—The Church Decides not to Celebrate the Lord's Supper—Composition and Report of this Committee, 211—Mr. Edwards Refuses to Accept these Propositions—Another Meeting. Strong Language, 212—Reply of Mr. Edwards—Report Debated and Adopted, 213—Precinct Meetings—Meeting of the Council—Mr. Edwards Argues his Case, 214—Contention of the Church Unrecorded—Mr. Edwards offers to Resign Conditionally—Decision and Adjournment of the Council, 215—Another Abortive Conference, 216.

## CHAPTER XVII.

### DISMISSAL OF REV. JONATHAN EDWARDS.

Final Decision of the Council—Pulpit Rights of the Pastor—Precinct Unwilling to allow him to Preach his Peculiar Doctrines, 217—Advice Sought from the Hampshire Association, 218—Another Animated Church Meeting, 219—Lower Association Applied to—Its Advice Rejected—Deacons Warn a Church Meeting, 220—Its Proceedings—A Mutual Council Decided upon, 221—Proceedings of the Council, 222—A Protest against its Action, 223—Compromise Impossible, 224—Pastoral Relations not Indissoluble—Extenuating Circumstances, 225—The Precinct followed Established Precedent, 226—A Doubtful Assertion—Not Justified by the Records, 227—Mr. Edwards Called to Stockbridge—Another Difficulty in Northampton, 228—Remonstrance of the Church, 229—Mr. Edwards Removes his Family—Major Hawley Arraigned, 230—He Writes to Mr. Edwards, 231—Major Hawley in Reply Apologizes to Mr. Edwards, 232—He Writes another Letter Six Years afterwards—Mr. Edwards' Friends, 233.

## CHAPTER XVIII.

### SELECTION AND SETTLEMENT OF A NEW MINISTER.

Advice Sought about a New Minister—An Illiberal Act—An Extraordinary Vote, 235—Lightning Strikes the Meeting-House—The Pulpit Supply, 236—Mr. Farrand Called—Sorrowful Circumstances—The Aggrieved Brethren, 237—Major Hawley Turns Jones out of the Pulpit, 238—Difficulties Increase—Rev. Judah Champion Invited—Rev. Mr. Hooker Preaches as a Candidate, 239—The First Precinct Merged into the Town—Mr. Hooker Invited to Settle, 240—He Accepts the Call—The Ordination, 241—Expenses of the Ordination, 242.

## CHAPTER XIX.

## FOURTH FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR.

The French and English extend their Conquests in all Directions—Union of the Colonies Discussed, 243—War Commenced—Several Expeditions Projected by the English—Protective Measures Adopted, 244—The Forts Already Garrisoned—Indian Raids in Western Massachusetts—Indians Discovered at Southampton, 245—Excitement in Southampton, 247—Militia of Northern Hampshire Reorganized—Major Hawley's Suggestions, 248—Activity Everywhere, 249—Service of Titus King—Preparations for Movement upon Crown Point, 250—Lieut. Lyman's Company of Scouts, 251—Col. Seth Pomeroy and Capt. Elisha Hawley leave Journals—Northampton Companies in the Army, 252—Capt. Hawley's Company—Baron Dieskau and his Army of French and Indians, 253—Capt. Hawley's Journal, 254-258—Capt. Hawley's last Letter, 259.

## CHAPTER XX.

## FOURTH FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR.

Col. Pomeroy's Journal, . . . . .	260-280
-----------------------------------	---------

## CHAPTER XXI.

## FOURTH FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR.

The "Bloody Morning Scout," 281—Exploit of Capts. McGinnis and Fulsome—Col. Pomeroy describes the Battle, 282—The French Commander Wounded and Captured, 283—Col. Pomeroy Superseded, 284—Reinforcements from Northampton—Other Northampton Men Killed and Wounded—Col. Pomeroy Prostrated by Sickness, 285—Operations Suspended—No Outrages in Hampshire County—French Neutrals, 286—Gov. Shirley Plans another Campaign—War Declared and New Commanders Appointed—The French Capture Oswego, 287—Position of Affairs—Casualties during the Year, 288—Slow Progress of the War—The Fort Finally Captured, 289—Northampton Soldiers among the Captives—Great Alarm throughout the Province, 290—Patriotism of the People—Reinforcements sent Quickly Forward, 291—The Mass. Colonels decline to obey Orders from New York—Magazine of Supplies formed at Springfield, 292—Patriotism in Hampshire County—Service of Hampshire Companies, 293—Death of Lord Howe. Capture of Fort Frontenac, 294—The Hampshire Regiment—The Indians get in some Work—Gen. Amherst Succeeds Gen. Abercrombie, 295—The Campaign against Canada, 296—Fall of Quebec—Capture of St. Francis—Last of the Indian Raids, 297—Frontier Posts—Montreal Captured—Attempt to Recapture Quebec, 298—Soldiers for Canada—Peace Declared, 299.

## CHAPTER XXII.

## FIRST SCHOOL-COMMITTEE—NEW COURT-HOUSE.

War not Recognized by the Town, 300—Fines for Refusing Town Offices—The Penalty Enforced, 301—More Difficulty about Constables—A New School-House Built, 302—“Shepherd’s Island,” a Bone of Contention, 303—The Purchase Money Disbursed—Levi Shepherd buys the Island—Town Action in 1756 and 1757, 304—School-House not to be used for a “Noon House,” 305—School-Committee Appointed, 306—Instructed—Meeting-House Repairs under Advisement, 307—Vote to procure a new Bell, 308—The Old Bell Sold—Smallpox, 309—Old House of Correction Sold—Various Town Matters acted upon, 310—Indicted for a Defective Highway—Division of Hampshire County, 311—Disputed Land in Middle Meadow—Attempt to make Northampton the Shire-Town, 312—Sabbath Wardens Chosen—New School Proposed over Mill River, 313—Interior of Meeting-House Improved—More New Counties Petitioned for—The Shirkshire Road, 314—Prosecuted for Malicious Mischief, 315—Bathsheba Hull, 316—Workhouse Proposed—Building of a New Court-House, 317—Site of the New Court-House, 319.

## CHAPTER XXIII.

## POLITICAL MATTERS—CENSUS—JAIL—NEW TOWNS.

Agitation Foreshadowing the Revolution, 321—Obnoxious Laws—The Stamp Act, 322—The Town acts upon the Bill, 323—The Town Undecided—The Bill passed by the Legislature—Further Strife with Parliamentary Laws, 324—The Town Considers the Matter—Action of the Convention—Districts and not Towns Instituted, 326—Meeting-House too Small—Poorhouse Provided—Census of the Town, 327—Other Statistics and “Faculties,” 328—A Severe Storm—An Extensive Flood, 329—Patrolling the Meeting-House on Sunday—Pascommuck People want Sabbath Services, 330—“Lickingwater” School—Change in the Sessions of the County Court, 331—Right of Southampton to the Interest of the School Fund—Several Matters Adjusted—Westhampton Petitions for a Minister, 332—A Mee’ing Protracted by Adjournment—The Pauper Question again, 333—Town Indicted for Defective Highways—Wolves—Pascommuck School-House—The Village sets up for Itself, 334—Jail Ordered to be Built, 336—Description of the New Jail—Another Jail Built, 337—Horse-Blocks—Subscription for Bounty on Wolves—Manufacture of Pottery, 338—Articles Manufactured—Orders to the Selectmen, 339.

## CHAPTER XXIV.

## REVOLUTION—PRELIMINARY EVENTS.

Irritating Movements by the Home Government—Mr. Hawley offers Resolutions of Protest, 340—No more Tea Allowed—British Troops sent to Support Gage—The “Boston Port Bill” and other Acts, 342—Commercial Non-Intercourse with England, 343—Other Obnoxious Laws, 344—The County Courts to be Stopped, 345—Proceedings of the Mob described by an Eye-witness, 346—No Court in Northampton—Committee of Correspondence chosen, 348—Conventions to stir up the People—A Convention in Northampton, 349—An Order for the Election of Representatives issued, and the Summons to meet Countermanded, 351—The First Provincial Congress Formed—Northampton Represented, 352—The Town makes no Response to the Action of the Provincial Congress—Committee of Inspection Appointed, 353—A Committee of Correspondence, Inspection and Safety—Militia Disorganized. Attempted Reorganization, 354—The First Hampshire Regiment, 355—Old Officers Resign—Companies of Minute-Men Formed—Second Provincial Congress, 356—Third Session of the Provincial Congress—The General Court again Convenes, 357—Ammunition Provided—Teacher of the Grammar School Cautioned, 358.

## CHAPTER XXV.

## REVOLUTION—PRISONERS OF WAR—TORIES.

Gov. Gage Precipitates the Contest—Northampton Minute-Men Start for the Scene of Hostilities, 359—News of Battle Received—The Company gather at the Church—March of the Northampton Company, 360—The Company at the Seat of War, 361—Officers of the Regiment—The Company Return—Ticonderoga and Crown Point, 362—Inception of the Enterprise, 363—Benedict Arnold Acts—Connecticut Scheme for Capturing Ticonderoga, 364—Minute-Men Rush to the Front—Bunker Hill—Gen. Pomeroy’s Arrival, 365—Gen. Washington offers him a Brigade—Treatment of Prisoners—Prisoners sent to Northampton Jail, 367—Harsh Treatment Countermanded, 369—Only one Ordered to Close Confinement—Expenses of the Prisoners—Other British Prisoners, 370—Whigs and Tories—Much Unpleasantness between Factions, 371—The Lines Tightly Drawn—Tories Mobbed—Northampton Tories sent to Jail, 372—Some of the Leading Tories—A Mob from Pelham, 373—Mr. Stoddard Unreclaimed—Tories put on the Town Limits, 374—Military Matters in Northampton—Mr. Hawley’s Address, 375.

## CHAPTER XXVI.

## REVOLUTION—INVASION OF CANADA.

An Expedition against Canada, 376—Benedict Arnold's Movement against Quebec—Northampton Men in this Expedition, 377—Narrative of one of the Survivors, 378—The other Northampton Soldiers Return—A Westhampton Soldier, 379—Results of the First Year of the War—Soldiers to Reinforce Arnold Raised in Hampshire, 380—Noah Cook's Account of the March to Canada, 381—An Incident, 384.

## CHAPTER XXVII.

## REVOLUTION—DEATH OF GEN. POMEROY.

Short Enlistments—Soldiers for Canada, 385—A Company for Boston, 386—Another Draft—More Soldiers Needed—Capt. Wales' Company, 387—The Second Year of the War—Sinews of War Promptly Provided, 388—Important Meeting in Hampshire County, 389—Result of this Convention, 390—Requisitions for Supplies, 391—No Town Action—The People Rule—A Permanent Form of Government Voted for—A Constitution Formed, 392—Declaration of Independence—Gen. Seth Pomeroy again in Active Service, 393—His Death, 394—Seth Pomeroy—Hampshire Committees of Safety Meet again, 395.

## CHAPTER XXVIII.

## REVOLUTION—SMALLPOX—DEATH OF REV. MR. HOOKER.

Composition of the Army, 397—Enlisting Continental Soldiers—Bonny Money Increased, 398—British Prisoners Enlisting—Soldiers Return Home without Leave—Pay Voted to the Soldiers, 399—Committee of Correspondence—Troops employed in 1777, 400—Gen. Burgoyne Commences his March—The Bennington Alarm in Northampton, 401—Another Regiment from Hampshire County—Other Alarms, 403—David Strong's Account, 404—The Killed and Wounded—A Company Enlisted for Three Months, 405—Losses by Northampton Men—Transporting Stores to the Army, 406—Reinforcements Ordered to the Northern Army—Third Year of the War—Smallpox Invades the Town, 407—Sickness and Death of Rev. Mr. Hooker—Several People die of the Disease and others are Inoculated, 408—Terms of Inoculation—“Monopoly and Oppression”—Committee to Procure Preaching—Soldiers' Aid and Reimbursing Taxes, 409—Rev. John Hooker, 410—A Monument Erected to his Memory, 411.

## CHAPTER XXIX.

## REVOLUTION--WESTHAMPTON--REV. SOLOMON WILLIAMS.

A Contribution for the Soldiers—Nine Months' Men—Bounty Money and Requisitions for Soldiers, 412—Requisitions for Clothing—Companies under this Call, 413—The Expedition to Rhode Island—Northampton Recruits—The Town Militia, 414—The Progress in 1778, 415—Necessity of Confederation—Articles of Confederation Approved by the town—Cider-Mill Privilege Granted—Generous to Mrs. Hooker, 416—Westhampton Seeks Municipal Privileges, 417—The New Town Incorporated—A New Minister—Rev. Solomon Williams Invited to Settle, 418—Terms of Settlement and Salary—Ordination Services, 419—The Ordination Dinner—Supplying the Woodpile, 420—Settlers for Southampton—Titus King desires to Build a House—Various Appropriations, 421.

## CHAPTER XXX.

## REVOLUTION—CONSTITUTIONAL CONVENTION.

More Soldiers Wanted—Major Hawley Addresses the Militia, 422—The British Raid Connecticut—The “Claverack Tour,” 423—Results in 1779, 424—Various Matters—The Constitutional Convention, 425—The Convention Voted—Its First Session, 426—The Second and Third Sessions—Expenses of the Delegates—The Constitution comes before the Town, 427—Mr. Hawley Criticises the New Constitution, 428—Laws against Monopoly and Oppression, 429—The Town Declines to Join the Crusade against Prices, 430—Few Towns from Hampshire County Represented at Concord—Convention to Regulate Prices held at Northampton—Requisitions for Men and Supplies, 431—Statement of Eli Edwards—Other Requisitions for Reinforcements, 432—David Strong's Narrative, 433—William Clark's Reminiscences—Lieut. Solomon Allen, 434—Further Reminiscences—Another Call for Continentals—Sixth Year of the War, 435—Sheldon's Light-Horse, 436—More Pews in the Meeting-House—Requisition for Horses and Beef, 437—New Constitution Adopted. First Town Vote for State Officers—Result of the Election and Choice of Representatives, 438—Accidental Death of Major Jonathan Allen, 439—Major Allen, 440.

## CHAPTER XXXI.

## REVOLUTION—ARMY SUPPLIES—SAMUEL ELY.

Continental Soldiers Required—A System of Drafting Soldiers Devised, 441—The Town Adopts the New Method—Another Call for Three Months' Men, 442—The Last Requisition—The Town hires Teamsters

—Closing Year of the War, 443—Arnold Raids Virginia—The Capture of Cornwallis—Discouragement Prevails, 444—Supplies Demanded of the Town—The Town Borrows Money—Another Requisition, 445—Clothing also in Demand—A Deficiency—No Committee—No more Free Dinners, 446—Irrepressible Youth, 447—“Hard Money” Scarce—Tobacco—Immunities to Soldiers—Attempt to Suspend Judgment against Debtors, 448—The Last Call for Men—Peace Secured, 449—Much Counterfeit Money in Circulation—Ferry. Representation. More Land Sold, 450—Deplorable State of Affairs, 451—Conventions the Order of the Day—Their Frequency in Hampshire County, 452—Convention at Hadley, 453—The Meeting at Hatfield—Samuel Ely Appears, 454—First Attempt to Stop the Court, 456—Testimony of an Eye-Witness—Ely Bound Over—His Trial, 457—A Mob Gathers—Ely Released by the Mob, 458—The Mob Pursued, 459—An Agreement with the Mob—Capt. Dickinson Commands the Mob—And makes Another Demonstration, 460—Mr. Judd’s Account of the Affair, 461—Northampton Militia—Aid from the Tories, 463.

## CHAPTER XXXII.

### A SERIES OF CONVENTIONS—PEACE—EASTHAMPTON.

A Critical Situation, 464—Action of the Legislature—A Letter from Major Hawley, 465—The Committee Calls a Convention, 466—The County Convention—Resolutions Adopted by it—Results of the Action of the Committee, 467—From Mr. Judd’s Diary—Conventions Continue, 468—A Demonstration at Springfield, 469—A New Proposition, 470—A Treaty of Peace and Local Rejoicings—Authenticity of this Account Questioned, 471—Murder of Elisha Brown, 472—A Remonstrance from Northampton—An Ungallant Act. Safety for the Clock Winder, 473—Salary of Representatives—Permission to Erect a Meeting-House—Easthampton Incorporated—The Mob makes another Demonstration, 474.

## CHAPTER XXXIII.

### DIVIDING THE COUNTY—HAMPSHIRE GAZETTE.

Schools for Girls, 475—First Teacher, 476—School-House used for a Private School—A Counterfeit Bill—Horse-Blocks Provided—Division of the County, 477—A Convention Considers the Subject—Pews in the Meeting-House, 478—The Newspaper, 479—The Advent of the Hampshire Gazette, 480—William Butler. His Printing-Office, 481—Means and Methods of Circulation, 482—Still in Existence—The Newspaper was Needed—The Discontent Increases, 483—Conventions again Resorted to, 484—The Opening Convention, 485—Hatfield Convention, 486—Result of this Assembly, 487.

## CHAPTER XXXIV.

## SHAYS REBELLION.

Opening Events—The Mob in Control, 488—The Governor's Proclamation—Demonstrations by the Rioters Elsewhere, 489—The Criminal Courts Attacked, 490—The Supreme Judicial Court Assailed—Some of the Insurgent Leaders, 491—The Affair in Springfield, 492—Mr. Judd's Account of the Demonstration—Other Volunteers, 494—The Mob in Berkshire—Legislative Action Resented by the Mob—Shays Musters his Forces, 495—The Government Decides to Protect the Judiciary, 496—A Demonstration at Worcester, 497—The Mob Excited—Shays Retreats—Northampton Greets the Mob, 498—An Important Convention, 499—The Rebels state their Case, 500—A Committee of Strategy—Demonstration at Springfield, 501—The Government Acts, 502—The Insurgents Prepare to Resist—The Arsenal to be Seized, 503—Efforts to Combine the Rebel Forces—Day Summons Gen. Shepherd to Surrender, 504—A Proposition from Shays—The Fight at Springfield, 505—The Killed—Shays Retreats, 506—Day makes no Movement—Incidents at South Hadley, 507—Movements of Gen. Lincoln, 508.

## CHAPTER XXXV.

## SHAYS REBELLION.

Pursuit of Capt. Luddington, 509—Movements of Gen. Lincoln—Negotiations with Shays, 510—Shays Evacuates Pelham, 511—The Victory Complete—Beginning of the End of the Rebellion, 512—Trouble in Berkshire—The Legislature Meets—War Continued, 513—Skirmishes with the Rebels—Tried for Treason and Sentenced to Death, 514—Prisoners Reprieved at the Gallows, 515—Hanged for Burglary—Closing Scenes of the Rebellion, 516—A Story of the Insurrection, 517—The Rebels before the Courts, 518—The Rebels Seize Hostages—No Rebels Executed—The Commissioners Meet, 519—Few take the Oath, 520.

## CHAPTER XXXVI

## FEDERAL CONSTITUTION—MANUFACTURES—CHURCH MUSIC.

Probate Office Conducted in Jail—No Disgrace to be there, 521—The Town Votes to Sustain the Government, 522—The Representative Instructed—The Town Provides for its Safety—A Northampton Company, 523—Constitution of the United States, 524—The Constitutional Convention—Regulations to be Observed at Funerals, 525—Town Clock out of Repair—Manufacturing in Northampton, 526—Duck Manufac-

tory, 527—Ropewalk—New School-House—Training Field, 528—Ball Playing Prohibited—Time of Religious Services Fixed. Teacher of Singing Employed—Church Music, 529—Change in Singing in Northampton, 530—The School-House—Warned out of Town, 532.

## CHAPTER XXXVII.

### MAJOR JOSEPH HAWLEY.

Birth and Ancestry—Early Education, 534—Chaplain at the Siege of Louisburg—Studies Law—A Volunteer—First Public Office—Opposes Rev. Mr. Edwards, 535—As a Lawyer, 536—Moderate in his Charges, 537—Member of the Legislature—A Leader, 538—Friendship with John Adams—As a Presiding Officer—Statesman—Prominent in Council, 539—Member of the Provincial Congress—Declines an Election to the Continental Congress, 540—Major Hawley Declines all Office—Impaired Health Responsible for much of his Effacement of Self, 541—His Home Life—Disposition to Melancholy, 542—Personal Reminiscences—Appearance and Dress—Marriage—Gift to the Town, 544—Ebenezer Hawley's Property—Lawsuit to Recover the Real Estate—The Town Accepts the Gift, 545—The Land Sold—The Hawley Fund, 546—Business Arrangements—As a Statesman—Aids in Recruiting, 547—Religious Principles—A well-rounded Character, 548.

## CHAPTER XXXVIII.

### ST. CLAIR'S DEFEAT—POST OFFICE—FIRE-ENGINE.

The Ohio Adventurers, 550—St. Clair's Defeat—Schooling Girls, 551—The Work of Coeducation Permanently Settled, 552—The Arrangement Continued—Other Votes about Schooling Girls—Lickingwater School-House—Minister's Salary Increased, 553—Post-Office Established, 554—Mail and Stage Line—Stage Line to Boston, 555—Stage Lines Beneficial—When the Post-Office Commenced, 556—Postmasters—No Method of Extinguishing Fires in Practice, 557—The Engine, 558—A Water Supply—Another Aqueduct Company, 559—Division of the County, 560—A Committee to Investigate—Attempt to Increase the Schoolmaster's Wages. Dancing, 561—Dancing and Dancing Schools—The first one, 562—Schools at Lone Town and Lower Farms—Mill River Bridge—The Embargo, 563—Bounty for Soldiers, 564—Treasurer's Account-Books Burned—First Town Map—Music Teacher Provided, 565—School-Committee Appointed—Monument to Major Hawley, 566—A Memorial from the Minister, 567.

## CHAPTER XXXIX.

## MEMORIAL TO CONGRESS—CANALS—SCHOOLS.

Revision of the Constitution—The Constitution Satisfactory, 568—Singing-Master Employed—Guide-Posts Erected—Funerals in the Meeting-House—The New Treaty Opposed—Memorial to Congress, 569—Town and County Approve, 570—Approved by the Militia—Geese not to run at Large—A Pest-House—Protection against Fires, 571—Other Precautions to Subdue Fires—No Visible Reason for this Activity, 572—Another Fire-Engine, 573—Better Machines Substituted—Destruction of Crows—Canal at South Hadley Falls—Connecticut River the Great Water-way, 574—River Navigation much Interrupted by Rapids and Falls—Canals decided upon, 575—Specifications, 576—The Lower Canal—Method of Passing, 577—The Canal Opened—High Water in the Meadows causes Sickness in the Town, 578—Attempts to Remedy the Evil, 579—The Towns Petition for Relief—Alleged Lawsuits on account of the Dam, 580—The Canal Improved, 581—The Rapids at Willimansett—Illegal Voting Suppressed—School-House in Easthampton and Roberts Meadow. Singing-Master Hired, 582—Rev. Mr. Williams Petitions for an Increase of Salary—No Change in Boundary. Grant to Israel Rust, 583—A Pauper Proposition—South Street Reduced in Width—Preserving Order on the Sabbath, 584—A New Street Rejected—Girls' Schools, 585—Schoolmistresses Employed by the Town, 586—The Report of the Committee under Consideration—Other School Matters—School-Districts, 587.

## CHAPTER XL.

## EXECUTION OF DAILEY AND HALLIGAN.

The Trial—The Convicts Seek Religious Consolation, 589—M. Cheverus Accedes to their Request—And Preaches the final Sermon, 590—The Priest Interests the People—Is Requested to Remain here, 591—The Picture Highly Colored—The Execution, 592.

## CHAPTER XLI.

## CALEB STRONG.

Birth and Descent—Education, 593—As a Lawyer, 594—Offices of Trust in the Gift of the Town, 595—Larger Public Service, 596—United States Senator—Governor of Massachusetts, 598—Family and Residence—Religious Life, 600—Death and Funeral—Personal Appearance, 601—Private Character, 602—Character as a Public Man, 603.

## APPENDIX.

A. Father Râle's War. Muster-Rolls from 1722-1725, . . . . .	605
B. King George's War. Northampton Soldiers at Louisburg, . . . . .	606
In Service after the Fall of Louisburg, . . . . .	607
C. Friends of Mr. Edwards, . . . . .	608
D. Fourth French and Indian War. Soldiers in Hawley's Company, . . . . .	609
In Seven Years' War, . . . . .	610
E. Site of the New Court-House, . . . . .	615
F. Revolutionary Soldiers' Terms of Service, . . . . .	616
G. Ephraim Wright's Expenses to Boston, . . . . .	630
H. Capt. Allen's Mob Roll, May and June, 1782, . . . . .	631
I. Capt. Solomon Allen's Pay-Roll, Sept., 1786, . . . . .	631
J. Capt. Russell's Pay-Roll, Jan., 1787, . . . . .	632

## ILLUSTRATIONS.

Engraving of James Russell Trumbull, . . . . .	Frontispiece
Solomon Stoddard's Sermon—fac-simile, . . . . .	64
A Plan of the Sittings of the Meeting-House in 1737, . . . . .	80
Site of the new Court-House in 1767, . . . . .	616

## AUTOGRAPHS.

James Otis, . . . . .	369	Jed <sup>b</sup> Foster, . . . . .	369
Samuel Adams, Sec'y, . . . . .	369	James Prescott, . . . . .	369
Caleb Cushing, . . . . .	369	Chas. Chauncy, . . . . .	369
G. Winthrop, . . . . .	369	M. Farley, . . . . .	369
John Adams, . . . . .	369	S. Holten, . . . . .	369
Joseph Gerrish, . . . . .	369	Jabez Fisher, . . . . .	369
John Whetcomb, . . . . .	369	Moses Gill, . . . . .	369
Enoch Freeman, . . . . .	369	Seth Pomeroy, . . . . .	369

## MAP.

First Town Map, 1794, . . . . .	560
---------------------------------	-----

# HISTORY OF NORTHAMPTON.

---

## CHAPTER L

### DWELLINGS—FURNITURE—COSTUMES.

**First Houses Built  
of Logs.**

No authentic description has been found of any dwelling-houses erected by the first settlers of Northampton. Undoubtedly they were built of logs, though some may have been constructed of plank. It is not probable, however, that the first comers found time to split or rive plank or clapboards. The practice prevailing in other settlements was unquestionably followed here. Each settler, intent upon obtaining shelter as soon as possible, made use of the most available materials, which were the trees growing upon the lot where the house was to be placed. Nearly all of the logs were daubed or plastered on the outside with clay, and the windows were few and small. Little better than huts, the pioneers managed to live in these dwellings till they were able to build better ones. Nearly all of the first houses were but a story and a half high, and many of them had but one room on the main floor. One plan sufficed for all.

**More Substantial  
and Better Dwell-  
ings Erected.**

Scarce a generation passed, however, before larger and better houses were erected. The log house was superseded by a framed structure, covered with plank or clapboards. Nearly all of them were placed broadside to the street, and close upon its border. No use had then been discovered for sidewalks, and the front door was literally the street-door, opening directly upon the highway. Like their ruder predecessors, these houses also were modeled after one design, their

ground plan never varied, and they differed only in size and height. Ordinarily they were two stories high. Forty feet seems to have been the standard length, while twenty feet was the established width. More houses were constructed forty by twenty feet than of any other dimensions, though occasionally one might have been found forty-one by twenty-two, and sometimes thirty-eight and one-half by twenty-two. In some the upper story projected about eighteen inches. It has been stated that this feature was for the purpose of affording better means of repelling an Indian attack, by firing down upon the foe. But the style was evidently imported, as houses were built in England after that pattern. The house was placed close to the ground, with very little underpinning. In many instances the floor was below the sills. All these framed dwellings were substantially built; the timbers were usually of oak, all hewed, and in some cases the posts were eight and one-half by nine inches square. Every house had two rooms on each floor, separated by a huge chimney, which held the place of honor in the center of the structure. These chimneys were of various sizes. Some of them measured at the base ten by twelve feet, others nine by fourteen, and still others were nine by twelve. The rooms on the main floor were usually about seven feet high, and in a house forty-one by twenty-two feet, would be about sixteen by twenty in dimensions. One noteworthy feature of the chimney was the huge fireplace. As it formed the only means of heating the room, it was made as large as the size of the chimney would permit. It is probable that a few of these chimneys may have been constructed of wood, thickly plastered on the interior. But these were dangerous and not infrequently the means of setting the house on fire. Stones gathered on the premises or on the commons were most generally used, though afterwards chimneys were built of brick.

Interiors of these Houses. In front of these huge fireplaces, piled with blazing logs, gathered the family, burned or nearly blistered by the heat on one side, and chilled or nearly frozen on the other by the "eager and nipping" blasts that forced their way through every crack

and crevice. Opposite the front door, built against the chimney, was the narrow, steep and crooked stairway, to the upper story, leaving an entrance-hall barely wide enough to swing the door. These four rooms constituted the house. Those on the lower floor were commonly wainscoted to the ceiling, which was usually sheathed. For many years very little plaster was used. In the second story the rooms corresponded in size with those below, but were without a fireplace. One of the first floor rooms was kitchen, dining-room, living-room, and frequently contained a bed, and the other, though termed the parlor, was mainly a store-room, and when the family became large, was sometimes used as a bedroom also. Neither of these apartments had ordinarily more than two windows, one in front and the other in the end, but none in the rear. They were square, set with small panes of glass, for which oiled paper was sometimes substituted. Previous to 1750, diamond-shaped glass was commonly used. The panes were set in lead, and the frames swung inwards on hinges. When square panes of glass came into use, windows were made larger, and moveable in the casings. Closets in those early days were an unknown quantity, and they never found space upon the ground-plans of any house. Moveable clothes-presses, and sometimes corner cupboards were preferred. Chests, many of them elaborately carved and highly finished, that had been brought across the ocean, were not uncommon. Nearly every house was provided with a cellar, but it was small, and extended only under a portion of one of the rooms. Sometimes it was walled with stone, occasionally with logs, and in some instances with nothing but the bare earth, as it was left when the excavation was made. A good sized cellar was eleven feet square. It was entered, if at the rear of the house, through a trap-door in the floor, usually by means of a ladder; if near the front, ordinarily by a flight of stairs under the stairway in the hall.

An Increasing Family Demanded more Room.

While the family was small the house as above described was ample. But as the household increased,—in those days ten or even twelve children were not uncommon,—greater accommodations were required and the house must needs be en-

larged. This was usually accomplished by an addition in the rear. The roof on a two story house was continued at the same angle, down to the height of the first story, and sometimes lower. This was termed a "lean to," or in the vernacular of the times a "leanter." In it generally, a kitchen and buttery, and occasionally a bedroom, were provided.

**Front Door.** Outside doors were of oak, more especially the front door, which was double sheathed, strong and durable, sometimes studded with huge nails or spikes,<sup>1</sup> and nearly always divided horizontally. Fastened by stout oaken bars, they were practically impregnable against the assaults of the savages. Occasionally, however, they managed to tomahawk a hole sufficiently large to admit a gun-barrel, but seldom are they reported as having demolished a door. The solid wooden latch was raised from without by a heavy cord or leatherthong, thrust through an aperture. When the latch-string was out friends were welcome, when it was withdrawn, enemies found it difficult to enter, even if the bars were not in place.

**Roofing.** Shingles were used somewhat when the town was first settled, though thatch-grass was plenty along the banks of the Connecticut. Houses were covered with thatch in the neighboring towns of Hatfield and Hadley, as late as 1679. Undoubtedly the first houses built in Northampton were thatched, and it is very probable that the first meeting house erected here was covered with the same material.

**Piazzas and Paint equally Unknown.** Little need existed for the modern luxury of a piazza; indeed there were convincing reasons against any such comforts. They greatly increased the danger from fire, whenever any little difficulty with the Indians occurred, and the sturdy pio-

<sup>1</sup> There is a tradition that the old house which stood on the lot on Pleasant Street, near the present location of the brick house, occupied by the late Dr. Graham, was picketed during the Indian wars, and that a heavy oaken door, filled with spikes to resist the Indian tomahawka, with the date 1703 upon it, had been seen on the premises within the memory of persons recently living. This was undoubtedly the home-stead of Preserved Clapp, and was one of the houses fortified, at the commencement of Queen Anne's War.

neers had scant leisure to loiter under their pleasing shade. Paint was never used about these structures. The early settlers did not cultivate the esthetic faculty, and for many years found no employment for a painter. While the coloring of the exterior of their houses was speedily accomplished by the elements, the ornamentation of the interior proceeded as rapidly under the agency of smoke from the fireplace, as well as from the pine torches that were their first candles.

**Barns.** In such plain but substantial dwellings lived the first generations of the original inhabitants. Near by stood the barn, constructed in the same durable manner, and of similar materials. Ordinarily it was placed as close to the street as possible, sometimes overstepping the boundary; being built wholly within the limits of the highway as often as the town could be induced to grant land therein for "barn spots." The offal was thrown directly into the street, which was simply a wide lane, in many places bristling with tree stumps, between which a single cart track found its sinuous way.

**Kitchen and other Furniture.** The people who inhabited these structures were as hardy and rugged as their homes were uncouth and comfortless. In these dwellings, with floors—innocent of carpets except among the wealthier classes—covered occasionally with a coating of sand, but kept always clean and spotless by means of repeated and thorough scrubbings, they passed the largest part of their toilsome if not cheerless lives. In summer these houses were barely endurable, but in winter, compared with modern conveniences, they must have been torture houses indeed. Their furniture was the simplest, and judged by the standards of to-day, the most uncomfortable of its kind. In the kitchen, which was also the living-room, in front of the spacious fireplace, stood the long wooden "settle," with its straight high back; this latter appendage being apparently intended as a shield against the cold blasts of winter, that forced their way through every opening, great or small. A few chairs, as angular and ugly as the family bench before the fire, stood about. In one

corner might have been seen the spinning-wheel and reel, when not in use, without which no house was suitably furnished. In another the cupboard, or it may be a bundle of candlewood. Placed against one wall was the dresser, or a huge wooden chest, sometimes elaborately carved, unless the space should be needed for a bed. Near the center of the room, or possibly pushed back against the wall, was the table, under which were the "jointed stools" used at meal time. Over the fireplace, across the chimney breast, as high as a man's head, was the narrow shelf, called the "mantletree." On it were arranged the pewter candlesticks, maybe the candlewood iron, the tinder-box, and perchance the family Bible, or such other books as were in possession of the household. At the back of the chimney, were the hooks upon which, from the trammels, hung the pots and kettles and other cooking utensils, before the crane came into general use. Against the jamb of the fireplace leaned the shovel and tongs and possibly the long handled "peel" or shovel, belonging especially to the oven. In one corner, particularly in war time, stood the trusty flint-lock musket. In more peaceful days it rested on hooks above the mantel.

Furnishing of one  
Parlor.

In the parlor was usually a miscellaneous collection of many things, more for use than ornament. It did not then appear to be a room whose sacred precincts were to be invaded only on special and important occasions. A glimpse at the inventory of David Wilton, who died in 1671, exhibits the contents of one parlor in those early days:—

"Bed and complete furniture, viz., Curtains 20<sup>o</sup>: rug 25<sup>o</sup>: blankets 25<sup>o</sup>; sheets 25<sup>o</sup>; 2 bolsters, 2 pillows, coverlid: all £13. 0. 0. Table and four joint stools, 5 chairs 14<sup>o</sup>; Carpet<sup>1</sup> and small table 40<sup>o</sup>; 9 cushions 23<sup>o</sup>; 2 scales and weights, 3 pair steelyards 40<sup>o</sup>; 4 weights; wampum 30<sup>o</sup>; Lead 4<sup>o</sup>; 2 jugs, cupboard 30<sup>o</sup>; 4 glasses and earthen dishes and 2 baskets 9<sup>o</sup>; powder 5<sup>o</sup>; hand irons, lanthorn, tongs, fire shovel 25<sup>o</sup>."

**Beds and Bedding.** Beds were plenty everywhere. They were composed of feathers, corn husks, and of wool, the latter being called "flock beds." "Dust beds" are also mentioned in many inventories, and have been inter-

<sup>1</sup> Carpet was the name ordinarily given to a table-cover.

preted to mean "drest" or dressed beds, but their significance is uncertain. Bolsters, pillows of similar material with the beds, coverlids and blankets abound. Sheets, whether of linen or of other material is not always stated, were usually found in profusion. They were of calico, wool, cotton called linen, and were sometimes designated as "Flaxen and coarse." Much Holland sheeting is noticed, and in one inventory "9 negro sheets" are named. In Wilton's inventory twenty-four pairs of sheets are mentioned, and in others there always seemed to be an ample supply. In every enumeration may be found "pillow beers" (pillow-cases) and napkins. Valences for beds were not unknown, but bed curtains are rare. The four post canopied bed with curtains, seems not to have been in very general use in this part of New England in the eighteenth century, though occasionally one is mentioned.

**Tables and Table Furniture.** Other furniture, only in sufficient quantity for the real needs of the family, was strongly made, but of coarse texture, and not at all celebrated for graceful proportions. Tables were round, square, oblong or oval. They were made of oak, black walnut, mahogany, pine, etc.; but few if any had folding leaves. Forms or benches, jointed (folding) stools, were used at meal-times, chairs seldom. Among the poorer classes tables had usually no covering, though the "well-to-do" were well provided with table-cloths. Napkins seem to have been one of the essentials of housekeeping, and are found in every family, and among all classes. Some were of calico, some of damask, some of linen, and some of "huckabuck." These conveniences were often found to the number of 60, 80, 100, and 125 to a family. They are seldom named in inventories from 1760 to the Revolution, though "tea napkins" sometimes appear. With the advent of knives and forks, napkins gradually went out of use. When people ceased to eat with their fingers, napkins were no longer deemed indispensable.

Tableware of all kinds was made largely of pewter, more particularly spoons, cups, basins, dishes, plates, bowls, tankards, porringer, bottles, tea-pots and cans. Wood

also entered to a great extent into the manufacture of trenchers, plates, platters, trays, bowls, cans and bottles. Earthenware, red and brown, was much used in the latter half of the eighteenth century. Pie plates, milk-pans, mugs, bowls, pitchers, pudding dishes, and after the introduction of tea, tea-pots, and "tea dishes," were kept in stock at the stores or sold from house to house, by peddlers. It was not till the last decade of the century that crockery, blue and white, gradually displaced the coarser and heavier articles of table furniture.

**Knives and Forks.** These indispensable articles did not come into use in New England till about the opening of the eighteenth century, and many years elapsed before they found their way into the households of farmers in the interior. In 1707 no forks were used to eat with, and knives were seldom found at table, although the latter were much employed for other purposes. They did not become popular for twenty years or more. The first notice of sales of them in this town, is to be found upon the account-books of the second Joseph Hawley. In 1735, in the inventory of his stock of merchandise, were many knives, apparently for table use, but no forks, though for a number of years previous he had been in the practice of selling them. He purchased in 1726, two dozen "women's horn spring knives." His sales of these articles were quite limited. After 1760, they became much more common. Timothy Dwight, who traded here for a long time, down to within a dozen years of the Revolution, sold them in sets of six each. Some persons, who evidently could afford no more, bought one-third of a set, others one-half, and some more ambitious or better able financially, purchased an entire set, which cost them 6s., equal to one dollar. In the more wealthy families, silver knives and forks are often inventoried, but in many cases they were only silver handled. Silver knives and forks were found in the inventory of Col. John Stoddard, who died in 1748. His father, Rev. Solomon Stoddard, who died about twenty years before, had ten knives and nine forks, but they were of the ordinary kind.

**Chairs and Seats.** Chairs were classed among the luxuries. A few were usually found in every house, but they were heavy, clumsy articles, neither comfortable to use, nor artistic to behold. Forms, benches, stools, all without backs, and "settles" were the most common seats. Occasionally an "arm-chair" or a "great chair," is mentioned, but that modern convenience, the rocking-chair, seems to have been unknown. At least such chairs were seldom or never named among the personal belongings of people in Northampton. Seats with backs were not intended for rest, so much as for protection against the cold drafts that pervaded the best constructed tenements. Flag, wicker and cane seat chairs; stuffed and leather covered seats came in later. Many cushions and coverings for chairs are noted, but apparently they were for ornament rather than use. The first settlers had little occasion and less time to spend lolling in cushioned chairs.

**Cooking Utensils.** Kitchen utensils for cooking purposes, which are now of tin or iron, were made of brass to a great extent, though some were of copper, and occasionally something in iron might have been found. An iron pot was an important utensil in New England, and some were so highly prized as to descend by will from generation to generation. But pots and kettles, pans for milk, for baking, for stewing and other purposes, skillets, skimmers, porringers, "posints," etc., were all of brass. In one inventory (not in Northampton, however), a brass gun is named, though that kind of implement was not in general use, in the common run of kitchens.

**Warming-Pans and Foot-Stoves.** The central source of warmth in these houses was the blazing fire in the huge fireplace, and to it there were few supplementary aids. One of the most universal of them, however, was the warming-pan. It was truly an institution of "y\* olden tyme," made of brass and indispensable in every household. Scarcely an inventory can be found upon the probate records, in which one or more of them is not catalogued. It was an article for which there was no substitute in the cold and freezing bedroom, and usually it was the only artificial heat ever allowed to enter there.

Closely allied in usefulness to the warming-pan was the foot-stove, but there are no indications that its use was by any means as universal. They are seldom found in the earlier inventories, though they were for many years the only source of heat in the meeting-house. Of special service as a Sunday heater, they were undoubtedly of no insignificant value in every-day life at the farm-house.

**Clothing.**

As substantial in texture and as uncouth in shape as the other surroundings of the settler, was the clothing he wore. Much of it was of domestic manufacture, made from the wool grown upon the farm, or from the flax raised in the meadows. At first they were spun, woven and made into garments by the inmates of the farm-house. Weaving, however, soon became a distinct trade, and those who carried it on were found in every community. It was customary for every farmer to raise an acre or more of flax, which was usually dressed and prepared for the loom at home.

**Men's Garments.**

The most common material for men's every-day wear was serge, a mixture of cotton and wool. Knee-breeches, with long stockings, waistcoats, with long flaps, and coats short and long, resembling the dress-coat of modern times, are everywhere named. Breeches were fastened at the knee, sometimes with buckles, sometimes with ribbons, and often with a simple band. Red suits, many times of serge or more costly material, were quite popular, and there are few inventories in which they do not appear. The "quality" and the clergy wore black broadcloth. Among farmers and mechanics leather garments were not uncommon. Comparatively few had leather suits, but nearly everybody had at least one pair of leather breeches. Stockings, reaching to the knee, were an important article of male attire. Ordinarily they were made of wool or worsted, but among the wealthier classes many pairs of silk are noticed. "Trowses," "trowzes," "trousers," are found nearly everywhere, but the word had not then the significance of to-day. They were evidently loose outer garments of the nature of overalls, and were in fact intended for that purpose. Pantaloons

or trowsers as known at the present day, did not usurp the place of knee-breeches and stockings till after the opening of the nineteenth century. Many persons had doublets, which seem to have been a loose undergarment, with or without sleeves, gathered at the waist, and ordinarily worn under the coat. This garment apparently went out of fashion before 1800, and was abandoned for the waistcoat. "Boot hose" are frequently enumerated. They were coverings for the legs, to protect the stockings and small-clothes, and were usually worn by horsemen. David Wilton had "doublets and drawers" as well as "boot hose." The drawers were simply another name for overalls. Fine shirts, Holland shirts, calico shirts, were abundant. Checked shirts, made of wool or flax, were much worn in the Connecticut river towns during the latter part of the eighteenth century. In Worcester County, white shirts were the most fashionable, and people living there averred that they could always tell Connecticut river men by their checked shirts, saying that they wore their mother's aprons for shirts. In 1768, Benjamin Tappan, who had just removed to Northampton, was much impressed by the number of checked shirts he saw in the meeting-house on Sunday. All the men, he said, had them on but five or six.

As the material for these garments<sup>1</sup> was nearly all made at home, the merchants did not usually keep much cloth in stock. They dealt mainly in trimmings, silk, twist, buttons and linings. Occasionally a few yards of broadcloth would be purchased by thrifty farmers or mechanics, but ordinarily the cloth for every-day garments was not to be found at the village store.

**Men's Clothing made by Seamstresses.** Nearly all the men's clothing was made up by women. Few tailors could be found in any of the inland towns. Sometimes tailors and shoemakers went from house to house. They were newsmongers as well as artizans, and retailed the gossip of

1 For a coat, vest and breeches about three and one-half yards of broadcloth were required and about five yards of kersey or other narrower material. The three garments were usually made from the same or similar cloth; no vestings were manufactured. For the vest about as much cloth was used as for the breeches; it was quite long and had enormous flaps. Buttons were of brass or other metal, or of mohair or silk. An ordinary coat required usually three dozen buttons, to keep it in proper shape, and occasionally room was found for the fourth dozen.

the neighborhood or the news of the day. There were also itinerant tailoresses, though some of them carried on the business at their own homes. They plied their trade in different families, much as do the dressmakers of the present day. Catherine (Phelps), wife of Simeon Parsons, carried on the tailoring business for more than forty years, during the latter half of the eighteenth century. Commonly she employed three or four apprentices, and sometimes more. Those who boarded themselves served for a year; if she boarded them, they worked for her eighteen months. She made garments for most of the men in Northampton, and for many in other towns. Major Hawley, Major Dwight, Mr. Stoddard, and a few others, had their coats made in Boston, but their vests and knee-breeches were made by Mrs. Parsons. Her price for coats was from 6s. to 10s.; for breeches, if made plain, 4s.; but if more elaborate, she charged 6s. For making vests her charge was 4s. Major Hawley and others would employ her to turn their coats, after they had become worn. For many years after Mrs. Parsons was married, in 1752, there was no tailor in town.

**Women's Garments.** The every-day dress of women, like that of men, was of homespun material. It was worn and reworn, perhaps not so often made over as at the present day, but the goods were much more durable. Linen and woolen, cotton and silk were used. Almost every one purchased "speckled calico," but ordinarily not in sufficient quantities for dresses. A material called "garlix" or "garlet," was in great demand. It was a species of linen, indispensable in every household. "Lockram" was much used by both sexes for undergarments, before people manufactured cloth of flax for that purpose. "Slesy" (silecia) was another kind of cloth much in use. The fashions were plain, and the dresses were intended for service rather than show. There was always a dress for Sunday of better material and more fashionable cut than the working-day garments. It was preserved with great care for many years and sometimes for more than one generation. Women bought many things of the merchants, but very few dress-goods. Most of the material used for gowns and

undergarments was made at home. It was coarse and heavy, but well made and substantial. The trimmings were of the greatest importance, and these with aprons, "scarves," hoods, stays, and articles of neckwear were purchased at the stores. Apparently everyone was her own dressmaker, and though there may have been sewers who made themselves useful throughout the town, dress-making establishments did not flourish in the country. No bonnets seem to have been sold in those days, milliners were unknown, and the traders dealt in nothing that is named as belonging to the head, except hoods, and very little for the feet. Some bought hats at the hatters, and others, hoods, coifs, etc., of the storekeepers. The shoemakers made all the shoes, the ladies knit their own, as well as the family stockings and mittens, and manufactured most of their own head-gear.<sup>1</sup>

*A Girl's Setting Out.* Mindwell, daughter of John Lyman of Northampton, married John Montague Jr., of Hadley, in 1712. She had for her "setting out" the following articles :—

..7 chairs, and one great chair . . . . .	0.16.6
Pillion and Pillion Cloth . . . . .	0.05.0
Spinning Wheel, flyers, & Spindle & quill . . . . .	0.06.0
Pr Andirons 15", Slice and tongs 11" . . . . .	1.06.0
Trammel 4", Warming Pan 16" . . . . .	1.00.0
Frying pan 6", Iron Kettle 11" . . . . .	0.17.0
Iron Pot 14", Brass Kettle 68" . . . . .	4.02.0
7 pewter platters 45" . . . . .	2.05.0
6 pewter plates 7" 6", Tin pan 3" 6" . . . . .	0.11.0
3 Basons, Salt cellar, 7 porringer dram cup and ten tumblers . . . . .	0.12.0
Chamber pot 4", Beer qt. pot 7" 4", and 5 alchemy spoons 7" 4" . . . . .	0.11.4 sic
2 brass skillets with frames . . . . .	0.10.0
Box and irons 5" 6", Candlestick 1" . . . . .	0.06.6
Vinegar Earthen jug & other Earthen . . . . .	0.05.0

<sup>1</sup> Women did much needlework outside of their own families. They made garments of all kinds for men, women and children. Early in the last century the average price for making a gown was 3s. 6d., though a crape gown cost 4s., while one of a more ordinary kind cost but 1s. 6d.; for making stays 5s. 6d. was charged; for a pair of leather breeches, 5s.; for a coat and jacket, 2s. 6d.; linen breeches, 2s. 6d. Samuel Pomeroy Jr., was a tailor in 1730. He cut and made men's garments and was called "Stitcher" Pomeroy."

2 wooden bowls, 3 dishes 8 platters & 10 trenchers	0.04.8
Cupboard 60 <sup>0</sup> , carved chest 30 <sup>0</sup>	4.10.0
Plain chest 5 <sup>0</sup> , Table 12 <sup>0</sup>	0.17.0
Looking glass & drinking glass	0.08.0
Trunk 6 <sup>0</sup> , 4 Cushions 6 <sup>0</sup>	0.12.0
Feather bed, bolster, pillows & beers	6.00.0
Coverlids 60 <sup>0</sup> . Curtains & Valence 48 <sup>0</sup>	5.00.0 sic
4 prs. pillow beers, 6 napkins, 2 table cloths, 8 towels & a cupboard cloth	1.08.0
11 sheets 95 <sup>0</sup>	4.15.0
	<hr/>
	37.03.0"

## CHAPTER II.

### FATHER RÂLE'S WAR.

Another War Cloud  
Darkens the Hori-  
zon.

AFTER an interval of peace, lasting something less than ten years, another Indian war broke out in the eastern section of the colony. During that brief period the towns scattered along the banks of the Connecticut, recovered from the disasters of former conflicts, and became thrifty and prosperous. The twice abandoned town of Northfield had been permanently reoccupied, Deerfield had greatly increased in wealth and population, and a new settlement had been commenced at Swampfield (Sunderland).

England and France  
not engaged in  
this War.

The fourth conflict with the Indians, known as Father Râle's war, was not an international conflict. In it England and France took no active part. Massachusetts and New Hampshire only were engaged in hostilities with the tribes inhabiting what is now the State of Maine. The Indians with whom it was waged, while not openly aided by the French in Canada, were secretly encouraged by the government of that country. Though active hostilities were in progress but four years, and though the principal battle-ground was in the far eastern section of the province, there was universal alarm along the western frontier, and the valley towns were in a state of constant trepidation. While little actual bloodshed occurred in this section, there were occasional inroads, and uninterrupted vigilance and circumspection were demanded. Anything more than a brief summary of the causes which led to the rupture is unnecessary in this connection.

The Abenaki Indians encouraged by the Jesuits to Oppose the English.

By the treaty of Utrecht, Acadia and Nova Scotia came into the possession of Great Britain. But the Abenaki Indians, inhabiting that territory, disputed the claims of the English, when the latter began to repeople the abandoned settlements and establish new ones. The red men could not understand how their allies could have relinquished the country to their common enemies. Appealing to the French in Canada to ascertain if the country had changed owners, they were encouraged to resist the advance of the English, and claim proprietorship in the soil. The boundaries of these two provinces had not been clearly defined, and a controversy arose concerning them. Having been advised that the treaty with the English made no mention of their territory, the Abenakis decided to resist any further occupancy of their hunting-grounds. For more than twenty-five years missions had been established by the Jesuits among these tribes, by means of which they obtained a powerful ascendancy over the Indians. Most conspicuous among these institutions was that of Father Râle, and it was owing mainly to his influence that the Abenakis were constrained to oppose the further intrusion of the English. An attempt was made to establish a Protestant mission, in order to counteract in some degree the influence of the Catholics, but it met with no success, and on its final abandonment, left but an intensified bitterness of feeling that only paved the way for future hostilities.

**War Declared.** Gov. Shute, in 1717, negotiated a satisfactory treaty with the Abenakis, which was observed for three years. But when on the death of the old chief, he attempted to renew it, he was thwarted by Jesuit influence. Finding that it was impossible, owing to the instructions of Father Râle, to carry on further negotiations, Gov. Shute, in Dec. 1721, sent an armed force to capture the priest. Having been notified of its approach, the latter fled to the woods. His papers fell into the hands of the English, and his perfidy, as well as that of the Governor of Canada, already suspected, was amply confirmed. In June following, the Indians, under instructions from Father Râle, went on the war-path, captured a number of

persons near Merry Meeting Bay, and burned the town of Brunswick. During this time negotiations for a settlement of these troubles were in progress with Vaudreuil, Gov. of Canada; but while apparently friendly towards Massachusetts, he adroitly managed to foil them all. It was in connection with this service that Joseph Kellogg and Thomas Baker visited Canada,<sup>1</sup> as bearers of dispatches. Though hostile acts had been performed by both parties, no formal declaration of war on the part of the government of Massachusetts was made till July, 1722. At the same time a bounty of £15, which was soon after increased to £100, was offered for every Indian scalp obtained. A body of English troops was at once dispatched to the scene of operations, and the Abenakis were reinforced by nearly 200 Indians sent from Canada.

**Commanders in Hampshire County.** The immediate theater of the war was remote from this section of the Province, but it was uncertain how soon a horde of savages might invade the Hampshire villages. Preparations for the defence of the valley towns were promptly begun. Col. John Stoddard was second in command in the county, under the venerable Col. Samuel Partridge of Hatfield, then in his 77<sup>th</sup> year. Capt. Samuel Barnard of Deerfield, with ninety men garrisoned the towns of Northfield and Deerfield. His company contained sixteen men from Northampton, and was in the service from July to November. Both towns were put in a good posture for defence, and scouts were sent up the Connecticut River, eastward to the great Monadnock, and across the Ashuelot and Contocook Rivers. No enemy, however, appeared during that year.

**Attempts to Negotiate with the Canada Indians.**

When it became known that Vaudreuil was giving encouragement to the eastern Indians, fears were entertained lest the tribes in Canada, influenced by the French, should declare war and attack the western towns. Attempts were made to form treaties of neutrality with them, but without success, for the French had already arrayed them against the Eng-

<sup>1</sup> See vol. 1, p. 490.

lish. It was considered of the first importance to conciliate the Indian nations, and either to secure their alliance or a pledge from them to observe strict neutrality. Commissioners were sent to negotiate with the Five Nations in 1721, Col. Stoddard being one of them. A proposition was entertained for a conference with a delegation from the Indian nations to be held at Deerfield, but it was not carried out. Negotiations were resumed in the fall of the following year, which resulted in an Indian delegation being sent to Boston in August, 1723. But no arrangement could be made with the red men. While professing friendship, and eagerly accepting the presents offered, they were averse to joining in open hostilities, though permission was granted to their young men to take service with the English on their own responsibility. It was feared that the Canada Indians, piqued by these proceedings on the part of the white men, would at once swoop down upon the river settlements.

**Gray Lock Appears.** These forebodings were in a measure realized when Gray Lock, with four companions, appeared on the northern frontiers about the middle of August. Two men were killed at Northfield, three at Rutland, and two others captured. In the latter encounter, one of the Indians was shot and another wounded. The marauders fled to Canada with their prisoners, both of whom were subsequently redeemed. Gray Lock was one of the chieftains with whom an alliance had been sought.

**Cavalry Ordered on Duty.** At this time there were two companies of cavalry in Hampshire County, one under the command of Capt. Henry Dwight of Hatfield, and the other commanded by Capt. Adijah Dewey of Westfield. Capt. Dewey was ordered by Col. Partridge, on the 30<sup>th</sup> of August, to march to the upper towns with his company, to serve fourteen days, "scouting and repairing to the places of most danger." He was then to be relieved by Capt. Dwight's company, and they were to serve, relieving each other every two weeks, for a campaign of eight weeks. Intelligence was received from Albany that a body of fifty Indians had crossed the lake, September 1<sup>st</sup>, with the intention of attacking the frontier towns. On the

11<sup>th</sup> of October Capt. Dewey was ordered to march forthwith to Deerfield, send one half his company to Northfield to guard the people while gathering their harvest, and to range and scout the woods to the northwest.

**Assault on Northfield.** These orders came too late ; the enemy were at their bloody work before the troops received them. On the 9<sup>th</sup> the Indians assaulted a party of men at work in the Northfield meadows. One man was killed, two were wounded, and a third, Samuel Dickinson, captured and taken to Canada. He had been previously taken prisoner at Hatfield. In June of the following year he was redeemed, and returned to Deerfield, bringing important information concerning the movements of the enemy. After this alarm a company of Connecticut troops was on duty at Northfield four weeks. In November the General Court ordered that a company of forty men should be enlisted, and placed under the command of Lieut. Joseph Kellogg, who was commissioned as its Captain. This company remained at Northfield during the winter.

**Capt. Benjamin Wright offers his Services.** Capt. Benjamin Wright, whose exploits form a brilliant page in the history of his time (being then a resident of Northfield), proffered his services to the government, asking the "liberty of commanding forty or fifty men to go on the track of this army, which came to Northfield, as far as Otter Creek, and then round to White River and home by Connecticut River." Col. Stoddard, about this time, suggested that an expedition to St. Francis, the headquarters of the Canada Indians, would be of great service, and that four hundred men would be sufficient. But "as the winter was far advanced," it was not thought "best to attempt the march, but of service to send forty or fifty men to Otter Creek and White River." Nothing, however, was done at this time.

**A Blockhouse Built above Northfield.** When affairs became serious and threatening, the authorities decided to construct a blockhouse above Northfield, and there maintain a garrison, for the purpose of scouting along the frontier, and giving seasonable warning of the approach of

an enemy. Authorized by the Legislature on the 27<sup>th</sup> of December, 1723, it was built on "Equivalent Lands" in the town of Brattleboro, on the west bank of the Connecticut River, on what is now known as "Brooks Farm."<sup>1</sup> Col. Stoddard was ordered to superintend the building of the fort. In February, 1724, he writes that he had committed the work to Lieut. Timothy Dwight of Northampton, who had under him a detail of "4 carpenters, 12 soldiers with narrow axes, and 2 teams." The structure was built of yellow pine logs, hewn and laid up after the manner of an ordinary log house. This blockhouse was about one hundred eighty feet square, houses being built against the walls, leaving the center open and unobstructed, for a parade-ground.

**Opposition to the  
Building of the  
Blockhouse.**

Allusions in the correspondence of Col. Stoddard, indicate that there was considerable opposition in Northampton, if not in other places, to the establishment of this fort. In November, Col. Stoddard writes, "Many find fault with it (the blockhouse), some out of ignorance, and more out of perverseness." The opposition, however, amounted to but little, and was not long continued. It had some effect upon the political fortunes of Col. Stoddard, and contributed largely to his defeat in the contest for representative in that year, though dissatisfaction with the Sewer Commission, already noted,<sup>2</sup> had perhaps as great an influence. The fort was of great value during the war, and served an excellent purpose. Col. Stoddard frequently alludes to its utility. Writing to Gov. Dummer, in August, he says:—"No party of the enemy hath passed the fort without being discovered, which has been the means of preserving many lives." For some time after its erection it was known as the "Blockhouse," but was afterwards named "Fort Dummer," by Capt. Dwight, in honor of the then acting Governor of the Province. Capt. Dwight, with a company of fifty-five men, held command of the fort during the war. According to his report, its cost in labor and materials was £256.4.1.

<sup>1</sup> Sheldon's History of Deerfield, vol. 1, p. 407.

<sup>2</sup> Vol. 1, p. 351.

**Lieut. Searl, Chaplain Daniel Dwight.** When Capt. Dwight was ordered to build and garrison the blockhouse, he selected for his second in command Lieut. Elisha Searl, who when a boy, had been captured by the Indians at Pascommuck, carried to Canada, and afterwards returned.<sup>1</sup> Col. Stoddard thus endorses him: "He is now a Sergeant under Capt. Kellogg; was put in at the request of the assembly, on his return from Canada, where he had long been a prisoner. He seems to be a discreet and careful man." Capt. Dwight had not long been on duty at the new fort, before he applied for a Chaplain. He writes: "We shall lead a heathenish life, unless a chaplain be allowed" them. Consequently, in July his request was granted by the appointment of Daniel Dwight<sup>2</sup> of Northampton, who served two years. His salary was £100. The muster-roll of Capt. Dwight's company contains the names of but three Northampton men, Captain, Lieutenant, and Chaplain.

**Col. Stoddard Suggests the use of Dogs.** In March, Col. Stoddard reiterated the proposal of his father, made twenty years before,<sup>3</sup> that dogs should be used in the pursuit of Indians. Another twenty years passed, however, before the suggestion was carried into effect in this vicinity. In a letter dated Northampton, March 27<sup>th</sup>, 1724, Col. Stoddard writes:—

"If the Indians do not join us shortly, it will be best that a number of good dogs be provided, which I hope may near as well answer our design, for I think they may be instructed to pursue an enemy, and if they should kill an Indian it will more effectually prevent their coming than the killing of 20 in any other way."

**Indians to Serve in the Fort.** Fort Dummer was an outpost, headquarters of observation, from which scouting parties were sent in all directions, and as Indians were thought to be expert in such business, an attempt was made to engage them for service there. Capt. Kellogg was sent to Albany to enlist them, but few only were obtained, and those who were employed were careful to absent themselves when any fighting was to be done.

<sup>1</sup> Vol. 1, p. 492.

<sup>2</sup> Daniel Dwight was the third son of Nathaniel Dwight of Northampton, and was afterwards a minister at Charlestown, S. C.

<sup>3</sup> Vol. 1, p. 477.

**Garrisons in Northfield and Deerfield.**

Garrisons, composed largely of men from the valley towns, were kept constantly in Northfield and Deerfield. Capt. Kellogg was in command there, his Lieutenant being John Pomroy of Northampton. The utmost vigilance was required to ward off threatened danger. Reports that bands of Indians were seen in various directions, were frequent, and traces of them were everywhere visible.

**Disaster at Hatfield.** Gray Lock, who had returned to the scene of his former exploit, made an attack on the 18<sup>th</sup> of June, upon a party of men who were haying about three miles above Hatfield. Benjamin Smith was killed and Aaron Wells and Joseph Allis taken captive. The savages also killed two oxen in one of the farm wagons and disappeared as suddenly as they came. Col. Partridge immediately sent out men in different directions in pursuit, but as usual, the enemy escaped. Joseph Allis was killed the next day, and a detachment of twenty-one men, in addition to those already ordered out, started for Otter Creek. It was commanded by Sergt. Joseph Clesson and Joseph Wait, both of whom were Northampton men. They suffered greatly in their hurried and hazardous pursuit. When they started "they were Lusty & in good plight—Effective men;" when they returned they were "much emaciated & their feet so Swolen and galled that they could scarce Travel." Gray Lock spent the summer hovering about the settlements, and succeeded in killing several men in different towns. His headquarters were at Missisquoi Bay, just above the Vermont line in Canada.

**Scarcity of Men.** The necessity for constant scouting so depleted the settlements of men that there were not enough left to carry on the customary work and do guard-duty. The need of additional soldiers in every town was most conclusively shown by the above attack. On this point Col. Partridge writes:—

"Our Towns all the day are so emptied of men that we are very much exposed & the Enemy seem to shape there course upon the lower Towns and our men abroad at their work in a moments tyme may be shot down before anything can be seen who it is that doth it."

In this connection Joseph Hawley writes from Northampton to Col. Partridge, suggesting that this and other towns should have eight or ten men to scout and do guard duty, and that stores, especially Indian shoes and "biscake," should be provided in each town.

An Indian Ambuscade. Traces of a party of Indians, to the number of forty, were discovered on the east side of

Connecticut River, in June. Col. Partridge ordered out forty men from Northampton, Hadley, and Hatfield to follow the enemy and protect Sunderland. Another detachment led by Capt. Wells, went from Deerfield, on the same errand. Neither party discovered any Indians and it was believed that the savages had fled. As the men from Deerfield were returning in fancied security, the leading file was fired upon by Indians in ambuscade, about three miles above that place, and Ebenezer Sheldon<sup>1</sup> of Northampton, Thomas Colton and Jeremiah English, a friendly Indian, were killed. The soldiers immediately charged upon the enemy, as they were scalping the slain, but they fled into the woods and escaped, though briskly pursued. Ten packs were recovered, and it was afterwards ascertained that two of the Indians died of their wounds. Ebenezer Sheldon was the son of Ebenezer, and grandson of Isaac Sheldon, the first of the name who settled in Northampton. He was about twenty-five years of age, and a member of the military company stationed at Deerfield.

Proclamation against  
Selling Liquor to  
the Indians.

While these bloody tragedies were in progress, while it was uncertain whether the crops upon which the inhabitants depended for their subsistence could be gathered, while the government was straining every nerve to conciliate the western tribes, and treat with those in Canada, sending them thousands of pounds in presents, while soldiers were scarce, and the air was thick with rumors of hostile inva-

1 "There is a tradition in the Sheldon family that Ebenezer was killed by a hatchet thrown by one of the enemy, which stuck in his skull; that he wore silver shoe buckles, which an Indian was trying to get off when interrupted by the fire of Capt. Wells. The buckles were bent in the attempt, but not secured. The hatchet and the buckles were long kept in the Sheldon family at Northampton, as mementoes of that bloody day."—Sheldon's History of Deerfield, vol. 1, p. 421.

sion, there were men living within the sound of the guns that killed their neighbors and friends, so lost to all sense of honor and patriotism, as to furnish fire-water to the Indians, receiving for it in many instances, the very gifts which the government had just presented to them. So pronounced had this evil become that Lieut. Gov. Dummer, in June, was forced to issue his proclamation against the nefarious practice. He says:—

“Divers evil minded persons, especially in Hampshire County, for the sake of lucre, have taken and received arms, ammunition, clothing and provisions of divers Indians of the 5 nations for strong drink, sold to them contrary to law,” and warns them not to continue the evil practice.

Aid Solicited from Connecticut. Rumors from Canada of the departure of seven hundred Indians in small squads to slay and pillage in New England, added greatly to the alarm in the valley, and upon their confirmation an appeal was made to Connecticut for reinforcements. Gov. Saltonstall sent up Capt. Goodrich with seventy-five men, Capt. Walter Butler with thirty men, and a company of forty-two Indians. The first named company and the Indians remained only a short time, but Capt. Butler and his command stayed till October.

Conference with the Five Nations. Col. Stoddard and Col. Schuyler, appointed to treat with the Indians, were in conference with them for several months. Capt. Kellogg acted as interpreter, and in company with Capt. Ebenezer Pomeroy, of Northampton, who had been appointed one of the commissioners, went to Albany in the latter part of May. Negotiations were continued during the month of June, and on the 3<sup>d</sup> of July, a treaty of peace was concluded with the Canada Indians, and a covenant made with the Five Nations. The latter undertook to persuade the eastern Indians to treat for peace, and in case they refused, agreed to compel them to do so by force of arms. This arrangement, like so many others entered into with the red men, was of no especial value. The Five Nations did not succeed in intimidating the Abenakis, who refused to make peace with the English till their lands were restored to them and their hostages returned.

**Express Messengers and Couriers.** Official communication between the extremities of the Commonwealth was made by means of posts, express riders or couriers, always on horseback. This was toilsome and difficult in the best of times, but positively dangerous when the Indians were hostile. Yet there were hardy and courageous men constantly employed in this duty, most of whom, even when the peril was greatest, went alone. Particularly during the wars were the services of these men important and valuable. They made most excellent time, almost marvelous, when the state of the country is taken into account. Not only was the way beset with dangers from Indian scouts, but the paths, for most of the distance, were but single trails. Roads, in the common acceptation of the word, there were none, even within the limits of the oldest plantations. Yet these men were scarce twenty-four hours on the way between Albany and Northampton, or between Northampton and Boston. Man or beast had little time for rest while on duty.

One of the most prominent and courageous of the men employed in this section, was Benjamin Alvord of Northampton. His first experience was during this war, from 1722 to 1726, and he acquitted himself so acceptably, that his services were in demand for many years after. While the above negotiations were going forward, he seems to have been almost constantly on the road. He started with dispatches from Albany on the 19<sup>th</sup> of June, was in Northampton the next day, and set out for Boston the day following. Another person engaged in this work was Benjamin King, and on one occasion at least, they went in company. At this time Joseph Hawley, in a letter to Col. Partridge, writes as follows:—

“According to your desire I have procured a man to go to Boston on his Majts Service: viz: Daniel King. \* \* \* Sir since I wrote the above Benj Alvord is come from Albany, ordered to Boston, and to travel to-day. I would advise y<sup>t</sup> King go along with Him think it to much boldness for one to travel alone especially upon public service. \* \* King is now at Hadly w<sup>th</sup> Alvord waiting your Honors pleasure.”<sup>1</sup>

The following year the horse of John Kingsley of Northampton, was impressed for Alvord's use to go to Albany,

<sup>1</sup> Sheldon's History of Deerfield, vol. 1, p. 410.

and Kingsley received £4 in payment for its hire. He claimed that the horse was left for some days in the woods and thereby injured.

**The Indians get in  
More Work.**

Meanwhile the war continued. Parties of marauders lurked in the woods, plundering at every opportunity, killing, scalping, or making prisoners of any white men upon whom they came unawares. In July, a party of savages plundered several unoccupied houses at the "Bars" in Deerfield, the settlers having retired within the stockade for safety during the night. A day or two afterwards a party of farmers at work in Deerfield north meadow, were attacked while on their way home, near nightfall, and two of them wounded. The whole country was alarmed, and in the upper towns guards of thirty or forty men were sent out daily, while the work of harvesting was in progress. Indian signs were discovered in Springfield, and the inhabitants petitioned for a guard while gathering their harvest. They were referred to Connecticut, and about thirty Pequots came to their aid.

**A Northampton  
Party Attacked.**

Notwithstanding the general alarm and constant danger from roving bands of Indians, much carelessness or foolhardy courage was manifested on every hand, else such incidents as the following had not occurred. On the 26<sup>th</sup> of August, Nathaniel Edwards 2<sup>d</sup>, Abram Miller, Reuben Corse, and one other, whose name has not been preserved, all from Northampton, went with teams to the vicinity of Bartlett's Mill (Easthampton) to gather flax in Pomeroy's Meadow, on Manhan River. They were without a guard, and evidently took no precautions for safety. The Indians, concealed by the roadside, were watching the party, and as they started to return, fired upon them, killing Nathaniel Edwards, and wounding Abram Miller. Edwards was with the last team, and having been detained at the ford, fell behind his companions. The tragedy occurred "on the Northampton side of the brook, this side of Ocran Clapp's house" <sup>1</sup> "nere unto Joseph Bartlett's house, about

<sup>1</sup> Judd MSS.

4 score rods from s<sup>d</sup> house, towards Northampton,"<sup>1</sup> "a few rods south of the residence of Samuel Phelps."<sup>2</sup> He ran about twenty rods after receiving the fatal wound, and fell dead. The savages took his scalp and his gun. Miller and his companions fled to Northampton, reporting that they had been attacked by a large number of Indians. A party at once set out in pursuit, but were unable to find the enemy. They brought the body of Edwards back with them. A pile of stones marked the spot where he fell, near the top of the hill, for fifty years. Reuben Corse was the brother-in-law of Edwards.<sup>3</sup> Nathaniel Edwards was the son of Samuel, and grandson of Alexander Edwards, a first settler; he was thirty-nine years of age. Within a few days, Samuel Edwards, brother of Nathaniel, and several others who were putting hay into stacks at Baker's Meadow (Florence), were ambushed by the Indians, but escaped unharmed.

Edwards' Gun Re-covered.

On the day following the above disaster, a number of Indians were discovered in the vicinity of Westfield. In the pursuit, one white man was wounded and one Indian killed, upon whom was found the gun of Nathaniel Edwards. Noah Ashley, who shot the Indian, received £100 for his scalp.

Death of Father Râle.

In August an expedition consisting of two hundred eight men, under command of Capts. Harmon and Moulton, was sent to destroy the headquarters of the Abenakis at Norridgewock, and capture Father Râle, if possible. They succeeded in surprising the enemy, and killed a number of noted Indian chiefs. The Jesuit Missionary Râle, the instigator and promoter of the war, was among the slain. He was killed in the heat of battle, while encouraging his men, and aiding them in their own defence. The town was plundered and burned. A large number of Indians were slain and many scalps taken to Boston. From this blow the Norridgewock tribe never recovered, and the disaster sensibly dampened the spirits of the Canada Indians.

<sup>1</sup> Col. Partridge's Letter, Aug. 27, 1794.

<sup>2</sup> Lyman's History of Easthampton, p. 19.

<sup>3</sup> Tradition, see Lyman, p. 19.

**Capt. Lovewell's Fa-** tal Expedition. Capt. Lovewell, from Dunstable, with a company of volunteers, made several expeditions against the eastern tribes, in two of which he was quite successful, killing a dozen or more of the enemy. In April, 1725, he started on another enterprise, with a party of forty-four men. Coming suddenly upon a large body of Indians near Ossipee, a desperate fight ensued, in which Capt. Lovewell and most of his men were killed.

**Another Unsuccess-**  
**ful Peace Nego-**  
**tiation.**

In December, in response to a dispatch from Col. Schuyler, stating that Mons. Vaudreuil was ready to render assistance in arranging a treaty with the Indians, Lieut.-Gov. Dudley appointed an embassy, consisting of his son William Dudley, and Col. Stoddard, to proceed to Canada, and enter upon negotiations. The Governor of New Hampshire appointed Thomas Atkinson to represent that colony. Col. Stoddard was unable to accept the appointment. Probably he had not forgotten his diplomatic encounter with the wily Frenchman twelve years before, when he sought the release of the English captives. Samuel Thaxter was substituted, and the commissioners set out on their journey. They reached Montreal on the 13<sup>th</sup> of March, 1724, and three days afterwards had their first interview with the French Governor. Several other conferences were had with him, but with his usual tact he parried all their propositions. It was not till the 24<sup>th</sup> of April, that the Indian delegates and the commissioners met, and then it was found that the former were in no mood to negotiate, except upon their own terms. Acting under the advice of Vaudreuil,<sup>1</sup> they demanded the restitution of their lands, indemnity for the death of Father Râle, and the demolition of their

<sup>1</sup> "Being persuaded that nothing was more opposed to his Majesty's interests than peace between the Abenakis and the English, the safety of the Colony on its eastern frontier having been the sole object of this war, M. de Vaudreuil thought of sounding the chiefs of these Indians on their arrival and before they should speak to the English, and of insinuating to them that it was not enough to demand of the English the demolition of the forts they had built on the Abenakis territory, and the restitution of their lands and prisoners, but that the death of Father Râle and of a great number of their people, whom they had killed, and the burning of their Church, ought to make them demand heavy indemnities, without which they ought not listen to any proposals for peace, or a suspension of hostilities."—N. Y. Col. Documents, vol. 9, p. 96.

church. To yield all that the Abenakis insisted upon was impossible, and the envoys could only return home and report.

**Three Northampton Men Drowned.** While this commission was carrying on its work, a large scouting party was dispatched towards the frontiers of Canada, under Capt. Thomas Wells of Deerfield. On their return, on the 24<sup>th</sup> of April, a canoe, containing Lieut. Joseph Clesson, Samuel Hannum, Simeon Pomeroy, Thomas Alexander and Noah Allen, while crossing the Connecticut, was upset near the mouth of Miller's River, and Pomeroy, Alexander and Allen, all soldiers from Northampton, were drowned. Simeon Pomeroy was the son of Ebenezer Pomeroy (grandson of Medad), and twenty-two years of age; Thomas Alexander was the son of Nathaniel Alexander and was twenty-eight years old; and Noah Allen was the son of Joseph Allen, about twenty-one years of age. This was the most serious loss that befell Northampton during the war.

In November, Ebenezer Pomeroy, Samuel Allen, Joseph Clesson, Samuel Hannum, and Nathaniel Alexander, petitioned in behalf of themselves and relatives in the service as volunteers, for pay for clothes, guns, blankets, etc., lost at this time. Capt. Pomeroy was allowed 90s.; Lieut. Joseph Clesson, £8.5.0; Samuel Allen, 80s.; Samuel Hannum, 80s.; Nathaniel Alexander, £5. Alexander represented that he had spent a great part of his life in service against the Indian enemy, was now old, and his son Thomas was drowned under Capt. Wells.

**Gray Lock and his Fort.**

The noted chief Gray Lock was quite conspicuous during this war. Not only was the first attack in this county attributed to him, but to his tribe were charged many of the atrocities committed within its borders. Having formerly lived at Warranoak, or on the Westfield River, he was familiar with this entire section of country, and was able to accomplish much mischief. Several attempts were made to conciliate him, but without result. His headquarters were at Missisquoi Bay, within the borders of Canada, where he had a

fort. From the opening of hostilities the authorities cherished a plan for demolishing this stronghold. Its capture was included in the proposed raid upon the St. Francis Indians, and the fighting captains in Hampshire County were eager for permission to lead an expedition for its destruction. But nothing was accomplished, and it was not till May, 1725, that any decided movement was made to that end. Early in that year, Gov. Dummer suggested to Col. Partridge that Capt. Benjamin Wright should be sent upon an expedition to the Canada frontiers. Though the Governor<sup>1</sup> may not have had in mind Gray Lock's fort as an objective point. After Gov. Dummer had suggested the enterprise to Col. Partridge, Capt. Wright sent the following letter to his excellency: —

“ Northampton, May 29, 1725.

Sir I Received an order from Col<sup>l</sup> Partridge Pursuant to your Houn-  
er's directions for me, to wait upon him, In order to Inlist men to Goe  
in Quest of the enemy. Sir, I am very Willing to Goe and doe what I  
can but y<sup>e</sup> undertaking being so very dificolt, and y<sup>e</sup> fitting out so  
chargable y<sup>e</sup> the men Cant Possibly Goe upon y<sup>e</sup> Encorridgment but if  
there was a suitable Encorridgment, No doubt but men would Goe (but  
y<sup>e</sup> unhappy Loss of y<sup>e</sup> men in y<sup>e</sup> Last Expedition, by y<sup>e</sup> missmanag-  
ment of y<sup>e</sup> officers<sup>2</sup> has very much dispirited People young and old)  
and it seems to me y<sup>e</sup> Probable Place to be attained, and y<sup>e</sup> most Sar-  
viceable when done, is Measesquich Gray Lock's fort but I would not  
Prescribe to your houner, but only Just offer my opinion, if y<sup>e</sup> cannoes  
which was Last vsed In y<sup>e</sup> expedition, was secured for y<sup>e</sup> Government It  
Would be Well. I Remain Sir your obident and most Humb<sup>l</sup> Sar<sup>lt</sup>.

BENJ. WRIGHT.

To y<sup>e</sup> Hon<sup>bl</sup> Will<sup>m</sup> Dummer Esq.

Left. Gov. & Command<sup>l</sup> In chief &c.”

Capt. Wright's Ex-  
pedition.

Col. Partridge advised that Wright's party should be allowed double pay if “they return with scalps.” Capt. Wright speedily raised a company of sixty or seventy men, started from Northfield for Missisquoi Bay on the 27<sup>th</sup> of July, and returned on the 2<sup>d</sup> of September. No traces of the enemy were found till they were well on their homeward way. Three Indians were discovered near Miller's River, but being mistaken for friends, they were permitted to escape.

<sup>1</sup> In January, Gov. Dummer in a letter to Col. Stoddard, regretted that an attack had not already been made upon Gray Lock's Fort. But Stoddard thought the time inopportune, as commissioners were then in negotiation with the Indians.

<sup>2</sup> Very probably he refers to the drowning of the three Northampton soldiers, alluded to above.

On the 23<sup>d</sup> of August, their provisions having become nearly exhausted, the party turned homeward, not having been within sight of Gray Lock's fort. Capt. Wright's journal, showing the course and extent of the march, was forwarded to the Governor, and has been several times printed.<sup>1</sup>

**Special Military Guard Ordered for Northampton.** About the middle of June, Lieut. Gov. Dummer ordered that ten men from this town should be detailed to scout, guard and watch within the town of Northampton. They were under the control of Capt. Ebenezer Pomeroy, but were commanded by Sergt. Joseph Clesson. One half the squad served at a time, alternating every few days. The following twelve names, however, are upon the muster-roll:—"Joseph Clesson, Sergt. John Miller, Samuel Allen, Josiah Pomeroy, and Benjamin Lyman, alternately; Joseph Wait, Ebenezer Corss, Ebenezer Kingsley, Gideon Parsons, Samuel Hannum, Medad King and Joseph Phelps, alternately." They were on duty from June 23<sup>d</sup> to October 25<sup>th</sup>, at an expense for wages and subsistence, of £135.18.4.

**Carelessness and its Results.** Thus far the experience gained in Indian warfare seems to have been of little avail.

The folly of visiting the outskirts of the settlements without a sufficient guard, which had so often proved fatal, taught the people nothing. Although the military authorities were persistent in their efforts to obtain a sufficient number of soldiers to protect the inhabitants in their necessary work, and the commanders zealous in their endeavors to caution and warn the citizens against too great carelessness, men constantly went about their usual employments without taking reasonable precautions for safety. On this point Col. Stoddard writes in September, in a letter to the Governor, as follows:—

"Our people live too careless, most of them live in secure places in the town where they depend upon being alarmed before they are in danger themselves. \* \* \* I protested to our officers against our careless way of living, & used all arguments I was capable of to persuade them to order a watch that might be of some significance, in case of the approach of an enemy, but to very little purpose."

<sup>1</sup> See History of Northfield, pp. 210-212; History of Deerfield, pp. 445, 446.

The heedlessness which caused the disaster in this town in 1724, was repeated at Deerfield in the following year. In August, five men went into the woods, searching for cattle, having but one gun among them. They were way-laid by Indians, and Dea. Samuel Field of Deerfield wounded. In September, a scouting party of six men, sent out from Fort Dummer, was attacked while at dinner; two of them were killed, three were captured and one escaped to tell the tale.

*Capt. Wright again  
Ordered Out.* Scarcely had Capt. Wright returned from his expedition (after Gray Lock) than he was again ordered to enlist another company of forty men, and scour the woods. He succeeded in obtaining twenty-five soldiers from among the northern troops and came to Northampton for the rest. But the sudden appearance of the enemy who caused the mischief in August and September, brought him an order to look after the safety of the upper towns, and very materially delayed his preparations. Col. Stoddard thought that if he could start immediately for Otter Creek, there might be a possibility of intercepting the marauders. But men and stores were hard to get, the pay of the soldiers was in arrears, cold weather was at hand, the duty was hazardous, the way difficult, and the impression prevailed that the red men were ready to bury the hatchet. Consequently Capt. Wright did not get away until the 10<sup>th</sup> of October; was gone about a week, but discovered nothing.

*Peace Declared.* Marquis de Vaudreuil died on the 25<sup>th</sup> of October, 1725. He was succeeded by the Marquis de Beauharnois, and soon after a treaty of peace was prepared. It was signed by both parties at Boston, December 15<sup>th</sup>, and ratified at Falmouth, Me., in August of the following year. Within a short time presents to the value of £300 were made to the Indians.

## CHAPTER III.

### LEGISLATIVE CONTEST—SOUTHAMPTON SETTLED.

*The War Unnoticed  
on the Town Rec-  
ords.*

SCARCELY anything appears upon the records of the various town-meetings held during these eventful years, relative to the war. The condition of affairs was similar to that which obtained during previous periods of strife and bloodshed. There was the same sudden enlistment and impressment of soldiers, the same billeting of men upon the inhabitants, the same excitement of guard-mounting, watching, warding and scouting. The startling alarm, followed by the same quick gathering, the same hurried pursuit, was supplemented by the sad and melancholy return, bearing the mutilated remains of friends, neighbors or kindred. The history of these four years was but a repetition of the daily life of the community during all those other years of Indian warfare. Through all the horrors of the situation, no notice of the possible danger, nor any suggestion for adequate protection, was deemed necessary by the town in its corporate capacity. Precautions were taken to guard against surprise, and for safety in case of a raid, but all these matters were left to the care and supervision of the military authorities. No real apprehension of a concerted attack upon the town was at any time manifested. Danger was most imminent from roving bands of Indians, small detachments of whom were known to be watching the settlements. As heretofore, men planted their fields or gathered their crops in constant fear. From all quarters came appeals to the authorities for guards, lest interruption to the work of the husbandman should bring famine and starvation. Throughout the war the enemy by means of a series of movements made by small bands, kept the country in a state of constant alarm, and steadily enlarged their collection of scalps. No attack was made upon

any town in the valley, but the Indians, constantly on the alert, fell upon such small unguarded companies of the settlers, engaged in their daily tasks, as came in their way.

No Fortifications  
deemed Necessary.

Very little seems to have been done in the way of fortification during this war. But a single item of that nature appears upon the town books. In December, 1724, among the accounts allowed and paid by the Treasurer, is one for five loads of "poles" for "M' Stoddard's fort, 2 lbs. of candles and wood and poles for the watch," the whole amounting to 46s. 8d. Mr. Stoddard's fort must have been either a palisade about his house, or a tower or place of rendezvous for the guard. The former method of enclosing the town with palisades was not again employed. A few years afterwards, during the next French and Indian war, a system of fortified houses was adopted. Other "forted houses" may have existed at this time, but in all probability the fortifications, if any, were erected by their owners and not at the public expense.

Schoolmaster's  
Wages Increased.

No material interest of the town was neglected in consequence of the unsettled state of affairs. Though the citizens quarrelled among themselves, they were apparently united in carrying forward the work of sustaining those institutions that were vital to the welfare of the community. For a number of years the schoolmaster had been paid at the rate of £40 per year. An increase of £5 was voted in 1725, when Mr. Allis was employed. That sum was to be paid him for two years "provvided He Continue in the School among us." Mr. Samuel Allis<sup>1</sup> lived in Hatfield, and there is an entry of 3s. paid "for going to Hatfield after the schoolmaster." The next year he was paid £48.

The Sewer Contro-  
versy Becomes a  
Political Factor.

A division of sentiment of some years standing, existed in the community, arising from questions growing out of the acts of the sewer commission appointed to change the channel of

<sup>1</sup> Samuel Allis was the son of Ichabod Allis of Hatfield. He was graduated at Harvard College and ordained at East Enfield in 1727.

Mill River. That undertaking and its successful issue have already been detailed.<sup>1</sup> The controversy reached its height after the work had been accomplished, apparently centering upon the matter of assessments. Public opinion differed in regard to this question, and it entered largely into the representative election.

And upon it Turns For ten years, from 1716 to 1725, legislative  
the Legislative honors were divided between Joseph Parsons  
Contest. Esq., and Col. John Stoddard. Pre-

vious to this date, five times in succession, from 1711 to 1715, Mr. Parsons had been elected. Col. Stoddard, then a young man, but of approved courage and ability, was first chosen in 1716. The year following Mr. Parsons was elected, and during the next three years Col. Stoddard bore the honors. In 1721, Col. Stoddard was defeated by Mr. Parsons, but was again successful in 1722 and 1723. Mr. Parsons came to the front again the next year, and from a sentence or two in the correspondence of Col. Stoddard, the inference may be drawn that the sewer quarrel was the main cause of his success, though dissatisfaction with the establishment of the blockhouse—Fort Dummer—may have aided in bringing about that result. Gov. Dummer in a letter to Col. Stoddard, written in May, 1724, says:—“I observe the choice your town has made. I am sorry for this ignorance and ingratititude.” Col. Stoddard replies, May 22<sup>d</sup>:—“I hear that Mr. Parsons has promised to some whom it suits, two things, both unreasonable I think, 1<sup>st</sup> That the Block House shall be demolished or at least slighted; 2<sup>d</sup> to obtain the dismission of the commission of the Sewers.” The following year, however, Mr. Stoddard was again chosen.

Characters of the Mr. Parsons, son of Cornet Joseph Parsons,  
Candidates. was an old man, then in his 77<sup>th</sup> year. He  
was a wealthy landowner, and to him was  
accorded that title, so common in the rural districts of  
England, where each little community had its village  
squire. One of the few among the early settlers, to whom  
was given this significant appellation, he was one of the

<sup>1</sup> See vol. 1, pp. 518-524.

most honored, respected and influential men in the town. Col. Stoddard also belonged to the Puritan aristocracy. His father was the well-beloved and venerated minister, and to the confidence and popularity commanded by his own talents, were added the inherited dignity and esteem that descends from father to worthy son. During these ten years Mr. Stoddard was elected representative seven times, and Mr. Parsons three.

**Other Controversies. Testimony of Jonathan Edwards.**

This, however, was only one among the many dissensions that had occurred in the community, since the first controversy in which Edward Elmore was charged with having caused a disturbance which created "a breach or rent in the town concerning the Lord's dayes meetings." Rev. Jonathan Edwards bears the following testimony:—

"There were some mighty contests and controversies among them, in Mr. Stoddard's day; which were managed with great heat and violence: some great quarrels in the Church, wherein Mr. Stoddard, great as his authority was, knew not what to do with them. In one ecclesiastical controversy in Mr. Stoddard's day, wherein the church was divided into two parties, the heat of spirit was raised to such a degree, that it came to hard blows. A member of one party met the head of the opposite party, and assaulted him, and beat him unmercifully. \* \* There has been for forty or fifty years, a sort of settled division of the people into two parties, somewhat like the *Court and country party*, in England, (if I may compare small things with great). There have been some of the chief men in the town, of chief authority and wealth, that have been great proprietors of their lands, who have had one party with them. And the other party, which has commonly been the greatest, have been of those, who have been jealous of them, apt to envy them, and afraid of their having too much power and influence in town and church." <sup>1</sup>

**History Corroborates the Statements of Mr. Edwards.**

While the previous history of the town too plainly corroborates the general statements of Mr. Edwards, no evidence has been discovered in any way bearing upon the cause of the bitter contest to which he alludes. One or two controversies crop out as the record advances, and in them all an evident jealousy between clans or parties is plainly noticeable. A difference of opinion whether upon an ecclesiastical or any other question, so pronounced as to lead to

<sup>1</sup> Dwight's Life of Edwards, pp. 402, 404.

blows, would naturally be expected to bring the antagonists before the criminal courts, but no record of any such result was made. The acts as well as the actors in that disgraceful episode, must remain forever hidden. There seems to have been on many occasions a lively clashing of opinions, which undoubtedly lead to other heated debates, and possibly to other knock-down arguments.

**Caring for the Poor.** Though measures had been taken early in the century to provide a poorhouse, it is not probable that such an institution was in existence at this time. The number of paupers must have been small. For 1728, the Treasurer's account names but four persons who were cared for by the town, at an expense of £19.4, and they were distributed among as many different people. Between six and seven pounds per year were paid for their entertainment, and in most cases they were cared for by their own relatives. A brother would be paid for boarding his sister, or a son or son-in-law for the care of his mother. Under such circumstances there seems to have been little need for a poorhouse.

**Thomas Porter's Bargain.** Items of expenditure for the care of paupers abound. Usually these accounts, never very large to any individual, were paid annually, but a departure from this practice was made in 1727. During that year Thomas Porter was given a small house and three quarters of an acre of land, near "Bartlett's gate," at the lower end of Pleasant Street, "where His Mother Now Lives," on condition "that He Shall free and Endemnify the Town from any Charge Respecting The Maintenance of His Mother in default of which the s<sup>t</sup> House and Land to Revert to the Town again." Porter seems to have had the best of the bargain, for his mother died in the following year, and in 1730, he sold the place to Jonathan Burt for £40. This lot was first granted to Robert Danks, probably during the Indian war, he built a house upon it, and lived there several years. In 1684, the town gave him other lands in Nashawannuck, in exchange for the homestead. It was owned in more recent years by the late Asahel Wood.

First Settlement in  
Southampton.

The prophecy<sup>1</sup> of Mr. Stoddard, made at the opening of the century, that "many young men would plant themselves" on the strip of land between Northampton and Westfield, and that vicinity, "and so make a village in time," showed the first sign of fulfillment about the time of his death. Settlers began to turn their attention in that direction in 1729,<sup>2</sup> though definite action was not taken till the following year. Measures were then adopted which resulted in the settlement of the town of Southampton. A division of the land in that section was made by the proprietors of Northampton, in 1730, and the first settlers planted themselves there permanently during that and the succeeding year. This division was made "amongst the original or ancient proprietors, their heirs or assigns or to any that hold by purchase under the ancient or original proprietors." The design seems to have been to grant the land only to actual settlers, the conditions being that they should occupy their home lots within two years. Some to whom grants were made, declined to remove, and others were substituted. The first mention of the new plantation upon the Northampton records was made December 11, 1732, when an order was passed to "Lay out a Highway over the Branch of Munhan River, at or Near Punroy's Meadow, or Some other Suitable and Convenient Place, so as to Accommodate the New Settlements." Preaching was provided the next year, and Rev. Joseph Ashley<sup>3</sup> was the first minister named as having been employed there. In December of that year, Northampton voted to pay £5 to those persons who had advanced that sum "for Divers Ministers who preached at the New Settlement Over Munhan River." From that time onward, appropriations were annually made to sustain preaching at "Newtown," till it was incorporated as a Precinct eight years afterwards. Mr. Ashley received from Northampton, £44, in 1734, for preaching and board, at the "new place over Munhan," and £50 in 1735. Two years afterwards, Mr. Noah Merrick is named as the New Town

<sup>1</sup> See letter to Gov. Stoughton, vol. 1, p. 465.

<sup>2</sup> There is a tradition that the first houses were built in Southampton in 1729 or 1734.

<sup>3</sup> Rev. Joseph Ashley was the son of Samuel Ashley of Westfield, and was graduated from Harvard (?) in 1730. He was settled as pastor at Winchester, N. H., in 1736.

Minister, and he was paid £48. For a number of years £63 was paid to the Second Precinct for ministerial purposes.

Trespassers upon the  
New Town Fined.

No sooner had the new settlement begun before trespassing upon the territory commenced, or rather was first discovered. It may have been and probably was practiced with impunity for many years. People residing to the southward, at Westfield and elsewhere, had been appropriating timber and using land to which they had no claim. Consequently in 173 $\frac{1}{4}$ , the town voted to prosecute

"all Such Persons as Have already or Shall Hereafter Committ any Trespass on the Lands belonging to the Town in the additionall Grant on the Southwardly Part of the Township, and Lying between the old Grant and Westfield bounds."

This action, however, did not prevent the continuation of the unlawful practice. Fourteen years later Joseph Hawley was choseu agent to proceed against all such trespassers, and nine persons, residents of Westfield, were brought before the court, and fines to the amount of £73.16 were paid into the town treasury.

Destruction of Dea.  
Ebenezer Hunt's  
Shop by Fire.

Dea. Ebenezer Hunt, a descendant in the third generation from Jonathan Hunt, one of the first settlers, came to Northampton from Lebanon, Ct., about the year 1729. He was by trade a "Felt Maker," and in 1730 purchased the homestead, shop and business of Benjamin Stebbins, at the corner of Main and South Streets, now occupied by the Hampshire County Bank building, and adjoining stores to the west as far as the head of South Street. On the night of January 19<sup>th</sup>, 173 $\frac{1}{4}$ , his shop and contents were destroyed by fire. The loss was estimated at a trifle less than £200; the shop being valued at £50, and its contents at £147. Insurance was then an unknown quantity, and the friends and neighbors of Dea. Hunt subscribed the sum of £50 towards reimbursing his losses. Nearly every person in town gave something; a few individuals gave 30s. each, a number 20s., and the rest smaller amounts. The gifts were not all from Northampton, a number of persons residing in other towns participating. At that time silver was valued at 25s. per ounce.

It appears also that his friends were liberal in something besides money. Dea. Hunt alludes in his journal to the kindness of his

"christian friends and neighbors. They freely contributed in many ways to restore me into business. In nine days time I got to work at my trade in my new shop. The fire happened on Saturday morning; some timber was got that day for another shop and the remainder on Monday, and all hewed and some framing done; Wednesday it was raised; Thursday it was shingled, boarded and my bow room filled in with brick. Saturday I did something at my trade, and on Monday I was settled to business."<sup>1</sup>

Baiting Stock Re-  
stricted. In 1734, persons were prohibited from baiting cattle or horses in the common field and leaving them

"teddered in the Night time Nor In the Day time Save In His owne Land: or on Such part of the Highway as borders on His own Land and that No Cows be at any time Baited In s<sup>d</sup> field: And that No person Bait any Cattle or Horse Kind In s<sup>d</sup> field Save on His own Land."

1 Hunt's Journal, Judd MSS.

## CHAPTER IV.

### JONATHAN EDWARDS SETTLED AS COLLEAGUE PASTOR.

*Pastorate of Rev.  
Mr. Stoddard.* REV. Solomon Stoddard, the venerable and venerated minister, had now reached his 82<sup>d</sup> year, having passed by three years the half century line of his pastorate. His life had been an uncommonly active one. Town and church had prospered greatly under his spiritual lead, and he had grown old and infirm in the service of the people.

"While the existing members of the church, with scarcely an exception, regarded him as their spiritual father, all the acting inhabitants of the town, had grown up under his ministry, and had been accustomed, from infancy, to pay a respect to his person and character, and a deference to his opinions, such as children pay to those of a loved and venerated parent."<sup>1</sup>

Since his ordination the town had suffered the miseries, uncertainties and vicissitudes of four Indian wars. Friends and neighbors had been killed, wounded or carried away captive; houses had been burned; seasons of want and hardship had intervened; and yet notwithstanding all these discouragements the town had increased in wealth and population, and great additions had been made to the church. Always interested in the material as well as spiritual welfare of the town, zealous for everything that tended to its prosperity, few questions of real importance concerning its best interests, were decided without the approval of the venerable pastor. The large congregation was by no means harmonious, either in an ecclesiastical or worldly point of view. Wrangling and contention were rife, and rare tact and judgment were required to guide or arbitrate between them. But with the expansion and increase of the town came more arduous and exacting labors

<sup>1</sup> Dwight's Life of President Edwards, p. 108.

for the minister. Up to this time he had performed all his duties unaided, but the weight of years, together with other accumulating infirmities, rendered assistance in his work imperatively necessary. So feeble had he become that only with great difficulty was he able to preach more than once on the Sabbath. When his people began to realize the true condition of affairs, they at once and without hesitation set about providing a colleague. However much they may have been divided upon other matters, they were united and generous upon this proposition. At a town meeting held April 4th, 1725, the annexed votes were unanimously adopted :—

“ The Town taking into Consideration that their Reverend Pastor M<sup>r</sup> Solomon Stoddard being far advanced into years And that through His Age And Some Infirmitie that He is attended withall the whole work of the Ministry being too Hard for Him.

“ 1<sup>o</sup>. Voted Unanimously to Gett Some Meett Person to Assist Him In the Work as above s<sup>t</sup>.

2<sup>o</sup>. Voted to Chuse a Committee to Manage the affair In Providing Such Person as above s<sup>t</sup>.

“ The Committee then Chosen for that Service Was :

JOHN STODDARD, Esq  
Cap<sup>t</sup>. EBENEZER PUNROY  
Dea. EBEN<sup>r</sup> WRIGHT  
Dea. JOHN CLARK  
Dea. SAM<sup>ll</sup> ALLYN  
JOSEPH HAWLEY  
JOSEPH PARSONS, Esq.”

Prompt Action by  
the Committee.

Full powers were given to this committee to act in the premises, and they proceeded in their work without delay. Apparently some uncertainty existed as to the proper person to fill the position. Though many young clergymen throughout the country were eligible, public opinion had not then crystallized upon any individual. A question had undoubtedly come suddenly upon them, which no one was quite ready to decide. At all events there is no indication that the person who was finally selected, was at that time the choice of the committee. Their first move was to send one of their number in search of a candidate. Accordingly Dea. John Clark was speedily dispatched to Hartford, Ct. He was

absent eight days, but seems to have accomplished nothing. Whom he interviewed on his journey is not recorded. In May, 1725, he was paid 38s. "for going to Hartford for a minister." Jonathan Edwards was at that time Tutor in Yale College, living at New Haven. If application was made to him, illness soon rendered it impossible for him to entertain a proposition. In the fall of 1725, he was severely ill, and did not fully recover till about the middle of the following year. Soon after, Dea. Clark went again on the same errand, and was paid 4s. "for going twice to Hadley."

**Rev. Israel Chauncey Engaged Temporarily.** An engagement was made with Mr. Israel Chauncey<sup>1</sup> of Hadley, and he was employed during the latter part of that year, and till August, 1726. Mr. Chauncey was paid £13 for assisting Mr. Stoddard one quarter, which ended in February 1725. From this it appears that about three months elapsed before an assistant was procured. The town took no action relative to the employment of Mr. Chauncey. He was hired by the committee evidently without thought of a permanent engagement. It is possible that the community already had Mr. Edwards in view as a suitable person for colleague pastor, and while awaiting his decision, delayed as it may have been by illness, Mr. Chauncey was employed temporarily. It may be believed that the venerable pastor himself suggested the name of his grandson for the position. At all events Mr. Edwards came to Northampton early in August, 1726, though he did not resign his tutorship till September, after he had received a call from this church and town. The last payment to Mr. Chauncey was made on the 3<sup>d</sup> of August, and the first to Mr. Edwards on the 29<sup>th</sup> of the same month. He then received £5 "for his travel and one months assistance to Mr. Stoddard in the ministry."

<sup>1</sup> Israel Chauncey was the son of Rev. Isaac Chauncey, second minister at Hadley. He was graduated at Harvard College in 1724, and taught school at Hadley, during a portion of that year. After his services in this town, he preached at Housatonna, but becoming delirious he returned to his father at Hadley. On account of his infirmity he was confined in a small house near the parsonage. This building caught fire in the night, and he was burned to death. He was accustomed to cry fire during the night, and consequently no notice was taken of his cries at this time. He had been invited to settle at Norwalk and Glastonbury, Ct., but declined.

Mr. Edwards Commences Preaching in Northampton.

Mr. Edwards preached here about a month before an invitation was extended to him to settle. A longer probation was not needed. He was by no means a stranger to this community, and the proposition to become colleague pastor with his grandfather, was quite satisfactory to himself and his friends. Previous to his appointment as tutor, he had been selected to preach to a small Presbyterian church in New York City, and had occupied the pulpit there for nearly nine months. Proposals had subsequently been made to him from other congregations, all of which he declined.<sup>1</sup>

Propositions for the Settlement of Mr. Edwards.

Formal action was first taken and an invitation extended to Mr. Edwards during the last days of the month of August, but there is no record of any town meeting at which any such vote was passed. A favorable response was received, and before November the way was paved for the ensuing action on the part of the town:—

"At a Legall Town Meetting In Northampton, November :21<sup>st</sup> :1726 The town taking Into Consideration : a vote Passed by the town Ag<sup>st</sup> :— 29<sup>th</sup> Last past For the Invitation of the Reverend M<sup>r</sup> Jonathan Edwards to assist our Reverend Pastor : M<sup>r</sup> Stoddard In the work of the Ministry. In order to a Settlement : and from what Experience we Hane Had of Him by His preaching And conversation as also from His character from other Places.

"The Qnestion was put : whether it Was the Mind of the Town that the Committee Should Invite the Rev<sup>d</sup> M<sup>r</sup> Jonathan Edwards to Settle amongst Them In the work of the Ministry And In Convenient time to take office Amongst them : And it Passed In the affirmative by a very Great Majority.

"Attest Ebenezer Pumroy Moderator.

"Then the Matter Being Considered that a Suitable Settlement and Support Should be offered to M<sup>r</sup> Edwards for his Encouragement to take s<sup>d</sup> office and Trust upon Him : Then the Town Proceeded to Make the following votes:

"Viz. 1<sup>st</sup> : The town voted to Gine to M<sup>r</sup> Edwards (Provided He take office among vs) ten Acres of Land Against Slow Bridge Next by John Alexanders Land : to be Laid out by the Direction of the Committee as shall best Sute And A Comodate Him for a Pasture.

1 In 1722, Mr. Edwards received an invitation from the church in Bolton, Ct. The terms and conditions on which the settlement was arranged were definitely fixed, and in November of that year he signified his acceptance of them over his own signature. Just at this time he was elected Tutor in Yale College, which he accepted, and the church in Bolton waited in vain two years for him and then settled some one else.—*New Englander*, vol. 42, p. 620 (Sept. 1864).

“2: : The Town Voted to Giue him forty Acres of Land Up Munhan River aboue Pumrys Meadow : So as Not to Enterfere upon Either division. But to be Laid out In Common Land: by the direction of the Committee as aforesd.

3: : The Town voted to Giue M' Edwards three Hundred pounds toward Or for a Settlementt : to purchass Him a Homestead, or building: or both as Their shall be Ocation.

4: : The town voted that if the aforesd Sum of three Hundred pounds be Not Sufficient to Commodate M' Edwards with a Suitable Habitation: that they would doe And Giue afterwards that which Should be Suitable And Convenient To A Commodate Him.

5: : The Town voted that one Hundred pounds of the Enterest Money In The trustees Hands of the towns Proportion of the fifty thousand pounds Loan Should be Implied for the vse aforesd In Part toward M' Edwards Settlementt.<sup>1</sup>

“6: : The town voted to Giue M' Edwards as His Salary one Hundred pounds A year: but if the value of the Money Should Rise then they would not be obliged to Giue So Much: but Not to deminish So Much of it but that He Should by the Sallary Haue an Honourable And Suitable Maintainance according to the dignity of His office.

“7: : The town voted that if Either by the deficiency or Lessening the value of Bills or Money that Passeth Now or by the Encrease of M' Edwardses Family He Should Stand In Need of a Larger Salary In order to his Suitable And Honourable Maintainance: that they would add to it So as to Make His Support Suitable And well adapted to that Honourable office.

“The abouesd votes being Separately putt to vote They were all voted the day first abouesd.

“Test Ebenezer Pumroy Moderator.”

Sale of Land to raise  
Money to carry out  
the Preceding  
votes.

In order to meet the obligations incurred by the above votes the town decided to sell “Some Land to pay Part or all the two Hundred pounds Remaining to pay towards Mr. Edwards Settlement.” A committee composed of “Co<sup>11</sup> John Stoddard, Lieut. Joseph Hawley and Capt. Ebenezer Pumroy” was appointed to dispose of the land. Subsequently they reported the sale of “the Wholle of the Common Land on the Hill Called the Round Hill,” to John Stoddard in “Consideration of fourty pounds Paid or Secured to be paid to the Town;” \* \* “there being in the whole about twelve or thirteen acres.” This purchase gave to the Stoddards in connection with the home-stead of Rev. Solomon, the control of the large part of this

<sup>1</sup> See vol. 1, p. 364.

charming eminence, including its summit and rear. This is the first reference to this locality by name upon the records. At this time it was covered with forest trees, and its future possibilities as the "Paradise of America" had not then entered the imagination of any person. Another lot near "Baker's Meadow," containing six acres was also sold to Mr. Stoddard for £10. Dea. John Clark bought "fourty acres," \* \* "Lying In a Place Called Pancake Hill Plain," for "Seventy-Eight pounds, fifteen Shilling." Here again comes in a nomenclature not heretofore in use, but which has been retained to the present day. Josiah Parsons bought "fourty acres" \* \* "at a place Called Slow Hill," for which he paid "one Hundred and twenty pounds." Though the orthography has been slightly changed, "Slough Hill" is by no means forgotten. On a plan of the "Inner Commons," prepared in 1754, by Nathaniel Dwight, these two lots, lying just above "Elwell's Island," between Pine and Slough Brooks, are designated as "land sold by the town to settle a former minister." To Nathaniel Curtice was sold about an acre of land adjoining his homestead, near Baker's Marsh, for which he paid £3. The entire amount received from these sales was £251.15.

Ordination and In-  
stallation of Jon-  
athan Edwards.

On the records of the First Church, written by Rev. Mr. Stoddard, whose hand was then tremulous with age, is the following entry, and that is the only contemporaneous allusion thereon to the settlement of Mr. Edwards over the church:—

"22 feb 1726.

"Mr. Jonathan Edwards was ordained A pastour of the Church of Northampton." \*

It was however on the 15<sup>th</sup> of February, and not on the 22<sup>nd</sup> as noted by Mr. Stoddard, that Rev. Jonathan Edwards

<sup>1</sup> Pancake Hill or plain is a slight rise of ground in the vicinity of the State Lunatic Hospital. It undoubtedly derived its euphonious title as did Round Hill, from its shape, which is broad and somewhat flat, about two hundred feet above the mean sea level, sixty feet less than its more ambitious rival. For many years criminal executions took place in this vicinity, and it was at one time called "Gallows Hill or Gallows Plain."

<sup>2</sup> In Dwight's Life of Edwards, page 107, the ordination is said to have occurred on the 15<sup>th</sup> of February, and in accordance with the date of the letter missive to Rev. Mr. Williams, given above, Mr. Stoddard must have been in error. The entry may have been made some time after the event, and his mind, uncertain like his hand, failed in point of memory.

was ordained to the work of the gospel ministry, and installed as colleague pastor with his grandfather, over the church in Northampton. The sermon on that occasion was preached by Rev. William Williams<sup>1</sup> of Hatfield, from 11 Cor. 4:7. No other record of the exercises on that occasion has been found, and there is nothing but the following letter to show who of the neighboring clergy were invited to be present. This letter not only indicates the then prevailing laconic style of such missives, but it also establishes the date of the ordination. "This day three weeks" from the 25<sup>th</sup> of January, would be the 15<sup>th</sup> and not the 22<sup>nd</sup> of February:—

"January 25, 1727.

"Rev. Sir. Our church do desire your presence and attendance to ordain Mr. Jonathan Edwards, this day three weeks.

Your Servant,

Solomon Stoddard.

To Rev. John Williams, Pastor at Deerfield."

He enters upon his  
Ministry under  
the most favora-  
ble Auspices.

Mr. Edwards was in the twenty-fourth year of his age, well known to the people personally, and came with the best of recommendations, the indorsement of his revered grandfather. Whatever may have been the controversies, contentions and divisions existing in the community, there was practical unanimity in the choice of the colleague pastor. The sums voted for his settlement as well as the amount named for his salary, were generous, and the votes adopted from time to time were highly honorable to both pastor and people.

Homestead Pur-  
chased for the  
new Pastor.

One of the first subjects that engaged the attention of the assistant minister was that of procuring a dwelling-place. Within a month after his ordination, "the Reverend Mr. Edwards being about to purchase a Homestead" the town voted to give him eighty pounds, "and that to be in full for His Settlement," although £300 had already been appropriated for that purpose. The place selected by him was situated on King Street, at the corner of what has since been named

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Williams married for his second wife, Christian, daughter of Rev. Solomon Stoddard, Aug. 9<sup>th</sup>, 1699.

in his honor, Edwards Street,<sup>1</sup> and extended to the south line of the estate owned by the heirs of the late J. D. Whitney. It was purchased of Jonathan Sheldon of Suffield, in May, 1727. Originally it embraced a portion of two home lots, granted when the town was first settled, to Isaae Sheldon and Thomas Woodford; but one half of the Woodford lot came by will into possession of the Sheldons. At the time of the sale the property was described as a "Mansion house, barn and home lot, in Northampton, where s'd Edwards now resides," containing three acres of land. The price paid for it by Ebenezer Pumroy, Town Treasurer, was £330.

“Waiting on Mr. Edwards.” Among the courtesies extended to the new pastor was one for which there seems now to be no adequate explanation, and which

is not known to have prevailed elsewhere. Whenever Mr. Edwards went on a journey he was accompanied by some member of his congregation, whose expenses were paid by the town. This custom prevailed only in the time of Mr. Edwards, and was confined to the first half dozen years of his residence here. From 1728 to 1733, there are entries on the Treasurer’s books of sums paid to different individuals for this purpose. The first account of this nature is that of Joseph Miller, in 1728, who was paid 48s. for “waiting on Mr. Edwards to New Haven, Horse & 17 days.” The next year Sergt. Samuel Clapp for “waiting on Mr. Edwards to Boston” was allowed £3. In 1729, Dea. John Clark and Phinehas King were each paid 48s. “for waiting on Mr. Edwards to New Haven. Whether they both went at the same time is not stated, but as both accounts appear, without date, in the same warrant, it may be inferred that he had two waiters on that trip. The last payments of this nature appear in 1734, when Dea. Allen was allowed £4.4 “for his son’s waiting on Mr. Edwards to Boston.” On this occasion Mr. Edwards was absent two weeks, and Rev. Mr. Barber supplied the pulpit. At another time previous to this, Benjamin Sheldon went with the minister to New Haven, and received £2.10. As these

1. When the railroad grade crossings were abolished, in 1896 and 1897, the street was changed to its present position.

accounts form a part of the annual budget of town expenses, and are without date, it is impossible to obtain a clue to the reason of these journeys. Yet as they were only to Boston and New Haven, it may be conjectured that they were made for the purpose of attending commencement exercises at Harvard and Yale colleges.

Duties of those who  
Waited on Mr. Ed-  
wards. What may have been the duties of these persons is nowhere stated. Probably they went as companions or protectors, rather than in the capacity of servants, though they may have combined the duties of both. During the times of Indian disturbances, it was not deemed safe to travel long distances alone, and out of that consideration probably grew the custom, though at this time peace prevailed. In a few years, as soon as affairs became permanently settled, the practice was discontinued. It is possible, however, that these men had other duties to perform. In those days everybody traveled on horseback, and undoubtedly one service rendered was the care of the horses. Clergymen then, more than at the present day, were the guests of their brother ministers, and whatever assistance could be rendered by these attendants, was grateful alike to host and guest. From the payments allowed, the legitimate conclusion may be reached that these waiters or companions made themselves comfortable at the taverns. These journeys were slow and tedious compared with the rapid and luxurious modes of travel that now prevail. Seventeen days were consumed in the visit to New Haven and return. But a small portion of this time, however, could have been spent upon the road. The journey to Hartford was usually made in one day, and another day would have been ample in which to reach New Haven. Of the seventeen days to New Haven, two weeks at least, might have been passed in that city. This journey was undoubtedly made in the year 1727, as the account was allowed on the 3<sup>d</sup> of January 1727, and may have been on the occasion of the marriage of Mr. Edwards, which occurred in July of that year. The expenses for the attendant and horse on this occasion were 48s. equal to \$8, or about 47 cents per day. The minister paid his own expenses, except it may have been the keeping of his horse.

About forty-five miles were considered a fair day's travel when on a journey of two or three days, though on occasion persons covered fifty or even sixty miles in a day. Roads were poor and uneven, settlements widely scattered, and the route in whatever direction, tiresome and lonely. There is little wonder that travelers went in company if possible, or that the minister found great convenience in having an attendant. The journey to Boston was the most expensive of them all. In 1733, the cost to the town of providing an attendant to that city was sixteen dollars.<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Edwards' Salary  
Increased from  
year to year. 1729  
to 1745.

After the death of Mr. Stoddard, when the entire burden of the parish fell upon the shoulders of the young pastor, the town doubled his salary. According to the vote, £100 was granted "for His Support besides his Stated Salary." The next year, but £40 was added, but in 1732, the stipend was placed at £200. This was in accordance with the vote at his settlement, which obligated the town to give him an adequate support, whatever might be the fluctuations in the value of money. During the next five years the salary remained at these figures. In 1738 he was paid £250, in 1739 but £220, and in 1740 it was increased to £280, with fire-wood in addition.<sup>2</sup> The next year twenty pounds were added, and he was to have the use of one half of the

1 The journey from Northampton to Boston required usually a little more than two days, during the first half of the eighteenth century. But a few hours, however, of the third day were necessary. If an early start were made but two days were consumed. On the return it was customary to leave Boston late in the afternoon, travel ten or fifteen miles and rest over night, reaching home on the third day. People generally were careful to go on these journeys in company, both for sociability and safety. Hartford was easily reached in one day. Horse hire seems to have been charged at the rate of one and one half pence per mile, though the established price to Boston—one hundred miles—was for many years twelve shillings, but in 1738, had advanced to eighteen shillings; to Hartford the charge was five shillings, and these were probably the prices in Mr. Edwards' time. Mr. Robert Breck, a merchant of Northampton, expended in 1774, £2.19.9 in the round trip to Boston for business purposes, including horse hire, which was two pence per mile. The first Joseph Hawley, in 1680, charged twelve shillings "for horse to the bay." Samuel Clapp's allowance for attending Mr. Edwards to Boston—£3—was about the same—a trifle more—as the expense of Mr. Breck.

2 Enormous quantities of wood seem to have been needed to meet the necessities of the case. Until a permanent basis for the salary had been decided upon, wood was furnished in addition to the figures quoted above. The first account was in 1740-1, when he had 73 loads; 85 loads were required in 1741-2; 78 in 1742-3; 96 loads in 1743-4; 64 loads in 1744-5; 80 loads in 1746-7; and 80 loads in 1747-8. The price paid varied from 10s. and 14s. to 25s. and 30s. in 1747-8.

sequestered land, and his fire-wood. Within the next two years, his compensation was increased to £50, and for three years more it remained at £350. In 1745, owing to the continued depreciation of the value of money, Mr. Edwards desired to have a fixed and definite salary, renewing his request from year to year, till a basis for a permanent compensation was adopted, the controversy regarding which will be noted in its proper sequence. While this discussion was in progress, a liberal salary was voted each year.

## CHAPTER V.

### REV. SOLOMON STODDARD.

Death and Funeral  
of Mr. Stoddard.

REV. Solomon Stoddard died on the 11<sup>th</sup> of February, 1726, at the age of 86, two years after the settlement of his grandson as colleague pastor. It was a day of genuine sadness and grief when the last rites of sepulture were rendered. The meeting-house was filled with reverent mourners, and with swelling hearts and tear-stained faces the great congregation listened to the last tributes paid to one whom they loved as a parent and revered as a teacher. The funeral sermon was preached by Rev. William Williams of Hatfield, son-in-law to Mr. Stoddard. In silence the long procession wended its way to the cemetery, and when the last ceremony ended, there was sorrow and lamentation everywhere. This universal sentiment of distress was recognized throughout the province, and words of tender sympathy towards his people, as well as of sincere respect to his memory, were uttered from many pulpits throughout the Commonwealth.

At the following March meeting, a committee was chosen to obtain and have printed a copy of the funeral sermon of Mr. Williams, and of that preached by Rev. Mr. Edwards, on the Sabbath after Mr. Stoddard's death. The two sermons were bound together, but no copies of the pamphlet have been handed down, though extracts from the sermon of Mr. Williams still exist.

Parentage, Birth  
and Early Life.

Mr. Stoddard was the son of Anthony Stoddard of Boston, a man prominent in the early history of the colony, and of Mary, daughter of Emmanuel Downing of Salem. He was born

October 4<sup>th</sup>, 1643. At the age of nineteen, having pursued his preparatory studies under the famous Master Corlet, at Cambridge, he was graduated at Harvard<sup>1</sup>College, and the same year was elected "Fellow of the House." In 1667, he was chosen Librarian of the college, being the first incumbent of that office, and held the position seven years. Impaired health, induced by too close mental application, caused him to accept the offer of Chaplain to Barbadoes under Governor Searle, where he remained two years preaching to dissenters. He returned to Boston a short time previous to the death of Rev. Eleazar Mather. Accepting the invitation to settle in Northampton, he became a permanent resident of the place in 1670. Thenceforth his life became part and parcel of that of the people to whom he ministered.

**His Position and Influence in the Community.** Much of his biography, embraced in the historical details of his time, has already been spread upon these pages. During sixty years of active service, he left an ineffaceable impress upon the ecclesiastical, moral and business life of the town. Established as pastor here within eighteen years of its first settlement, and but ten years after the formation of the church, he grew up with the community, molded and shaped the religious education of two generations, and died revered, honored and sincerely mourned. A discussion of the position of the church at the time of his ordination, and its action soon after, may be found elsewhere in these volumes.<sup>1</sup> That which has been termed "Mr. Stoddard's system," more particularly as relating to baptisms, but which was in reality the outcome of the Synod of 1662, having been adopted by the church previous to his arrival, was put into working order within two months of his settlement. Before the close of the following January, more than one hundred persons had taken the covenant, and a large number of their children had been baptized. Within the first six months of his pastorate, fifty children had received this rite, and during the next four years one hundred more were baptized. This half-way opening of the church doors was soon followed by a still further widening

<sup>1</sup> Vol. 1, pp. 212, 214.

of them ; the unregenerate were admitted as communicants, and the record of baptisms ceased. This occurred in 1677, and the practice was not revived till five years after the death of Mr. Stoddard.

**Religious Awakenings.**

His labors were very successful and many were added to the church. Five times within the term of his ministrations, was there a liberal outpouring of the spirit. Revivals of religion occurred in 1679, 1683, 1712, and 1718. The most remarkable of these "harvests," as he called them, were the second, third, and fourth, though many were admitted at other times.<sup>1</sup> During the next nine years, there was a time of stupidity and immorality among the young, and contentions between the "Court and Country Party," which the influence of the aged pastor was powerless to assuage. This was undoubtedly the time alluded to by Mr. Edwards, in the passage heretofore quoted. The whole number of members admitted during the fifty-seven years that Mr. Stoddard occupied the pulpit here, was six hundred thirty.

**His Influence.**

Solomon Stoddard was a man of great learning and undoubted piety, and he also possessed business talents of no mean order ; consequently he soon commanded the respect, confidence, and esteem of his people. Not only did he win the love and good-will of his townsmen, but his talents soon gave him the position of leader among the churches in Western Massachusetts, and he "possessed, probably, more influence than any other Clergyman in the province, during a period of thirty years."<sup>2</sup>

**The Distinguishing Peculiarity of his Pastorate.**

A characteristic feature in the pastorate of Mr. Stoddard was the peculiar doctrine which he advocated concerning the admission of adults to the Table of the Lord. Though he was not the originator of the practice, yet he defended the prin-

<sup>1</sup> "And he was favour'd with a more than ordinary Presence of God in his Work, and many Seals of his Ministry: in the Course of which there were three remarkable Seasons, in which the Spirit of God so mov'd upon the Hearts of his People, that it became almost the general cry of the place, What must I do to be saved?"—Boston Weekly News Letter, Feb. 20, 1729. Obituary probably written by Rev. Jonathan Edwards.

<sup>2</sup> Dwight's Travels, vol. 1, p. 221.

ciple with so much vigor and ability, that his name soon became identified with it, and "Stoddardeanism" gained a strong foothold throughout the Province. While an ecclesiastical controversy does not properly come within the scope of this work, an outline of the position assumed by him is perhaps needed in order to form a correct estimate of the character of Northampton's second minister.

**Stoddardeanism Defined.** The sentiments as well as the practice of Mr. Stoddard, as understood in his time, are thus succinctly summarized in an anonymous volume entitled "The Life and Character of the late reverend Mr. Jonathan Edwards, President of the college at New Jersey," published in 1765:—<sup>1</sup>

"Mr. Stoddard, Mr. Edwards's grand-father and predecessor, in the work of the ministry, was of the opinion, that unconverted persons, consider'd as such, had a right in the sight of God, to the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper; that therefore it was their duty to come to that ordinance, though they knew they had no true goodness or gospel holiness. He maintain'd that visible christianity does not consist in a profession or appearance of that wherein true holiness or real christianity consists: that therefore, the profession which persons make in order to be received as visible members of Christ's Church, ought not to be such as to express or imply a real compliance with, or consent to the terms of the covenant of grace, or a hearty embracing the gospel. So that they who really reject Jesus Christ, and dislike the gospel way of salvation in their hearts, and know that this is true of themselves, may make the profession without lying and hypocrisy. Accordingly, he endeavoured to form a short profession for persons to make, in order to be admitted into the church, and come to the sacrament, answerable to this principle. And it took place and was practised upon in Northampton; and persons were admitted into the church, and to the sacrament, not under the notion of their being true saints, or that they had any real goodness."

**His Practice.** This principle, which was the legitimate outgrowth of the "half-way covenant," was at all points antagonistic to the position assumed by the Puritan churches of New England, and caused considerable commotion among the divines of that day. In the first place it may be well to consider what his practice really was. Did he enroll as church members in full communion, those whom he admitted under the half-way cov-

<sup>1</sup> This book was very probably prepared by Rev. Dr. Samuel Hopkins, fourth minister in Hadley, settled in 1754. He was a nephew of Rev. Jonathan Edwards.

enant, though they gave no evidence of regeneration? The general belief, supported by the combined testimony of all who have written upon the subject, is that such was his practice. Yet he "preached earnestly and powerfully upon the necessity of regeneration and a holy life in order to salvation."<sup>1</sup> It should be borne in mind that the half-way covenant was adopted for the purpose of admitting persons far enough into the church to allow the baptism of their children, with the hope that when once entered and brought under religious influences, they would grow in grace, and come within the fold. It was simply in furtherance of this purpose, that the church in Northampton put its candidates "into a state of education," requiring them "publicly to take hold of the covenant of the Lord as a grace bestowing covenant."

**Mr. Stoddard's Pe-  
culiar System a  
Means of Relig-  
ious Education.**

Mr. Stoddard's idea seems to have been but another step in this system of religious culture. He claimed that "the Lord's Supper is instituted to be a means of regeneration," and so to be employed as an incentive towards the adoption of a religious life. The church doors were not even partially opened to any who were not willing to publicly acknowledge their belief in the tenets of salvation, by "owning the covenant," and "subjecting themselves to the teachings & government of Jesus Christ in this church & engaging according to their place and power to promote the welfare of it." By this means they formed a connection with the church sufficient to admit themselves and their children to the rite of baptism. To emphasize and accelerate this process of education was the design and purport of "Stoddardianism." Mr. Stoddard complained of having been misunderstood and misrepresented. He did not believe nor did he argue that the rite in itself had any saving efficacy.<sup>2</sup> Admission to the Lord's Table was not in his view the only qualification for salvation. But whatever may have been the opinion of the pastor, the church had

<sup>1</sup> Rev. J. P. Thompson, Bib. Sacra, vol. 18, p. 819.

<sup>2</sup> "As Mr. Stoddard explained his view it was not that non-believers of whatever grade should use the Lord's Supper as a saving ordinance, but that those whom he regarded as nominally in church connection by baptism, though timid and unsatisfied as to their spiritual state should use this ordinance as a means of grace."—Bib. Sac., vol. 18, p. 819.

prescribed the method of admitting persons to full membership, and the records contain no intimation that it had ever been changed. Neither is there anything to be found in them authorizing the statement that Mr. Stoddard adopted a form of confession in accordance with his own peculiar views.

The Reforming Synod of 1679, declared that persons must make profession of faith and repentance in order to gain full admission into the church, and Mr. Stoddard admits that he voted in its favor. Though the doctrine advocated by him was only partially discussed in that assembly, the inference is undoubted that notwithstanding the admission to partake of the holy rite of communion, which was then practiced in other churches if not in Northampton, candidates must also make a profession of faith and repentance. Mr. Stoddard was not so inconsistent as to preach one doctrine and practice another.

**The Scheme Promulgated.** No reliable data are at hand sufficient to determine when this method was introduced here. There is a probability, however, that it was in practice in Northampton as early as 1677, within five years of the settlement of the second minister. In that year, Increase Mather, in an election sermon, denounced the prevalence of "Stoddardianism" among the clergy.<sup>1</sup> Two years later Mr. Stoddard seems to have upheld this theory at the session of the Reforming Synod, as far as he was permitted. It was not, however, till the opening of the eighteenth century that he alluded to the subject in the pulpit. The public discussion of the question between Increase and Cotton Mather on one side, and Mr. Stoddard on the other, commenced in the year 1700, though the sermon in which the latter fully explained his views was not delivered till 1704, nor published till three years later. Books, pamphlets, sermons followed each other in quick succession for eight or nine years. In 1709, Mr. Stoddard published the final vindication of his system in a sermon entitled, "An Appeal to the Learned, Being a Vindication of the Right of Visible Saints to the Lord's Supper, Though they be destitute of a Saving Work of

<sup>1</sup> Walker's *Creeds and Platforms of Congregationalism*, p. 220.

God's Spirit in their Hearts ; against the exceptions of Increase Mather." Here the matter rested till twenty years after the death of Mr. Stoddard. The discussion was revived by Jonathan Edwards in 1749, and was continued through the century.

*Its Popularity.*

The doctrine advocated by Mr. Stoddard was popular during his lifetime, and nearly all the churches in the Hampshire Association, which embraced the old County of Hampshire and three towns in Connecticut, practiced the system. At the time of the dismissal of Mr. Edwards, not more than three of the twenty-five settled pastors within the limits of the Association were decidedly anti-Stoddardean.<sup>1</sup>

*Tradition Concerning His own Conversion.*

In connection with this belief, and so curiously explanatory of it in part that one might wish it were unimpeachable, comes the tradition concerning the conversion of Mr. Stoddard himself. Nothing appears to establish the reliability of the story, yet the possibility of its truth wonderfully illuminates the position of the Northampton pastor. It would, of course, have more value and force, had Mr. Stoddard been the originator of the practice he so strenuously upheld.

This tradition is related by Rev. Dr. Lathrop, who settled at West Springfield soon after Mr. Edwards was dismissed, when the recollection of that bitter struggle was fresh in mind. His statement is that, when Mr. Stoddard was installed over the church at Northampton, he had not been converted. His wife, widow of his predecessor, Rev. Eleazar Mather, becoming convinced of this fact, arranged a series of weekly meetings with other Christian ladies of the congregation to pray that the pastor might experience a change of heart. "At length Mr. Stoddard was led to notice that on a certain day of each week, in the afternoon, his wife was wont to go out as to some appointment." His curiosity becoming excited, he asked her "what it was that called her away with such an unvarying regularity each week. She told him frankly. \* \* \* This set Mr. Stoddard upon a course of most serious and earnest thinking,"

<sup>1</sup> "Stoddardeanism," *New Englander*, 1846, vol. 4, p. 230.

and some time afterwards, while administering the Lord's Supper, he suddenly had such "a new and wonderful revelation of the gospel scheme," that he was scarcely able to complete the service.<sup>1</sup>

Proposes to Establish a National Church.

About this time he advocated the establishment of a "National Church." He contended that individual churches should be accountable to some controlling authority, else "every particular Congregation is absolute and independant, and not responsible to any higher Power." The proposition, however, did not meet with general acceptance, and no attempt was made to carry out the suggestion.<sup>2</sup>

Takes Part in the Reforming Synod.

In the fall of 1679, a Synod of the churches, called the "Reforming Synod," was convened at Boston by order of the General Court.<sup>3</sup> Mr. Stoddard was a member of it and took a prominent part in its deliberations. No published report of the proceedings of this body was ever made; and the Journal of Peter Thacher<sup>4</sup> seems to be the only record of its transactions at present available. Its results were printed by order of the General Court, but not its proceedings. An episode in the debate in which Mr. Stoddard prominently figured is thus related by Mr. Thacher:—

"After Lecture y<sup>e</sup> sins of oppression was in debate & soe m<sup>r</sup> Whellock declares y<sup>e</sup> yer was a cry of injustice in y<sup>e</sup> magistrates & ministers were not rated [taxed] w<sup>r</sup>. Occasioned a very warme discourse. M<sup>r</sup> stodder charged y<sup>e</sup> Deputy [Whellock] with saying what was not true & y<sup>e</sup> Deputy Govern<sup>r</sup> told him he deserved to be laid by y<sup>e</sup> heals &c., after we brokeup y<sup>e</sup> Deputy asked forgivenesse of him & told him hee freely forgave him, but m<sup>r</sup> Stodder was high.

"19 Sept. '79. Y<sup>e</sup> Deputy owned his being in to great a heat & desired y<sup>e</sup> Lord to forgive &c: & m<sup>r</sup> Stodder did something tho' very little by a Deputy."

1 New Englander, 1884, vol. 43, pp. 624, 625.

2 Dexter's Congregationalism, p. 510.

3 Its duty was "the reuissall of the platforme of discipline agreed vpon by the churches, 1647, and what else may appearre necessary for the preventing schismes, heresies, prophaness, & the establishment of the churches in one faith & order of the goespell."—Records of Massachusetts, vol. 8, p. 218.

4 The entire Journal is published in Walker's Creeds and Platforms of Congregationalism, pp. 417-418.

## The System Discussed.

Mr. Stoddard seems to have been greatly exercised by this affair, and was not easily appeased. As was the custom in the plain-spoken debates of that time, there was undoubtedly an interchange of sharp words, all the more bitter because of the earnestness of the disputants. On the same day the "Half way Covenant" was partially discussed. Thacher thus refers to it under the above date:—

"Ys day y<sup>e</sup> discusseyed y<sup>e</sup> remedyes and debated at y<sup>e</sup> end of each Paragraph: y<sup>w</sup> was much debate about Persons being admitted to full communion & M<sup>r</sup> Stoddard y<sup>e</sup> minister offered to dispute against it & brought one argument. M<sup>r</sup> Mather was respondent M<sup>r</sup> Oaks Modrat<sup>r</sup>, but after some time y<sup>e</sup> rest of his argumts were deferred & at present it was eased."

## Mr. Stoddard's Version of the Debate.

The opposition of Mr. Stoddard was to the report of the committee, and not to the proposition to allow unregenerate persons to come to the communion table. His own version of this affair is annexed:—

"The words of the Synod are these—It is requisite that Persons be not admitted unto Communion in the Lord's Supper without making a Personal & Public Profession of their Faith and Repentance. I shall give the world an Account how the matter was acted. Some of the Elders in the Synod had drawn up a Conclusion, That persons should make a Relation of the work of God's Spirit upon their hearts, in order to coming into full Communion. Some others of the Elders objected against it, and after some discourse it was agreed to have a dispute on that question, Whether those Professors of Religion as are of good Conversation, are not to be admitted to full Communion, provided they are able to Examine themselves, and discern the Lord's body. Mr. [Increase] Mather, held the negative; I labored to make good the Affirmative; the result was That they blotted out that clause of Making a Relation of the work of God's Spirit, and put in the room of it, The Making a Profession of their Faith and Repentance; and so I Voted with the Rest, and am of the same judgment still."<sup>1</sup>

According to Mr. Thacher, the discussion was evidently cut short. The Synod was unwilling to enter upon an interminable debate upon a question that had not been propounded for its deliberation.

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Stoddard's Appeal to the Learned.

**Published Sermons.** Many sermons were published by Mr. Stoddard, several of which have since been reprinted. The list of his printed discourses numbers twenty-two. In 1703 he preached the "Annual Election Sermon" before the Legislature.

**Personal Appearance.** Very little is known concerning his personal appearance, and no portrait of him has been handed down. "His Stature was something taller than the common Size, his countenance comely, his Presence venerable; his whole Look and Behaviour such as gave those who convers'd with him, occasion to say of him, as the Woman of the Prophet, I perceive that this is a holy Man of God."<sup>1</sup> "His conversation was grave but delightful and very profitable, accompanied by a very sweet affability and a freedom from moroseness, often pleasantness, but not lightness or vanity."<sup>2</sup> Imagine a tall, spare man, of sober and solemn demeanor, stern in aspect, clad in the regulation ministerial costume of the day, sedate in manner, alert and business-like in action; yet with a courtesy and affability of bearing that speedily won the respect and veneration of all with whom he came in contact.

**He Preached without Notes, but Carefully Prepared his Sermons.** He not only preached without notes himself, but argued strongly against their use by others. In a sermon published in 1724, entitled, "The Defects of Preachers reproved," he denounces the custom of reading sermons. The practice he says, "may be tolerable when men's memories become imperfect by age, but ordinarily it is not to be allowed." "Till his 86<sup>th</sup> year (in which he died) he was a constant Preacher one Part of the Lord's days and at a Monthly Lecture, without the use of Notes at all."<sup>3</sup> Apparently his discourses were all carefully prepared, but were not usually completely written out. One hundred fifty of his sermons are contained in a small 12<sup>mo</sup> MS. volume, five and one half by three and one half inches in size, on a page and a half of which is written the notes of an entire sermon. The whole contains one hundred thirty-

<sup>1</sup> Boston Weekly News Letter, Feb. 20, 1729.

<sup>2</sup> Rev. Mr. Williams' Funeral Sermon.

<sup>3</sup> Boston Weekly News Letter, Feb. 20, 1729.

one lines and averages about sixteen words to a line. It would occupy about five pages in type such as these pages are printed upon. This little leaf, written more than two hundred years ago in characters so minute that they cannot be deciphered, though the ink has not faded, nor the paper been defaced by much handling, represents but a minute portion of the labor and thought of a man whose "Light and influence went out thro' the whole Country, and \* \* \* gaue a Name and Reputation to the Town."<sup>1</sup>

**His Preaching Pow-  
erful and Con-  
vincing.** His sermons were argumentative, full of thought, and his manner plain and convincing. "He was well skill'd in the learned Languages; well vers'd in the religious Controversies that relate either to Points of Doctrine or Church Government; and was himself a ready & smart Disputant."<sup>2</sup> His disputation with the Mathers gave him a reputation equal to that of any clergyman of his time. Throughout life he was a close student and acquired a fund of general knowledge, as well as a copious "measure of all useful learning, especially in Divinity."<sup>3</sup> He denounced with vigor whatever he thought to be sinful or frivolous in the social life of that day. Judge Sewell records that, in a sermon delivered at Boston, at Commencement time, in 1707, he "Spake plainly in Several Articles against Superstition. Spake against excess in comencem't entertainments. Gov' called at night with M' Stoddard, and told me I should cause them to conclude."<sup>4</sup> This last remark may be construed to mean that the Governor thought that Judge Sewell, by the authority of his office, had great power of reform in these particulars.

**Pastor.**

"As a pastor he was diligent, laborious, constant; wise, faithful, compassionate."<sup>5</sup>

In spiritual matters he ruled the town with a firmness and authority that was seldom disputed. In fact, so complete was his control ecclesiastically, that his opponents in derision, named him "Pope."

<sup>1</sup> Boston Weekly News Letter, Feb. 20, 1722.

<sup>2</sup> Boston Weekly News Letter.

<sup>3</sup> Rev. Mr. Williams' Funeral Sermon.

<sup>4</sup> Massachusetts Historical Collections, series 5, vol. 6, p. 191.

<sup>5</sup> Boston News Letter.

Repeated Visits to Boston.

Mr. Stoddard made for many years an annual visit to Boston, where his father lived and where his brothers, who were honored and respected citizens, resided. But there is no evidence that he was ever allowed any one "to wait on him," as was the case with his colleague and successor. There are indications, though no positive proof, that many of these journeys were made in the company of some of the neighboring clergy. Aside from the attractions of home and kindred, it is certain that Harvard College Commencement was the controlling motive of these visits, and probably nearly all of them were arranged so as to embrace that honored anniversary of his Alma Mater.<sup>1</sup> On many of these occasions, indeed on nearly all of them of which there is any record, he preached one or more sermons either on Sunday or Lecture day.

Judge Sewell's Diary. Strong mutual friendship existed between the Northampton pastor and Judge Samuel Sewell, whose guest he was on many of these occasions. Many notices of these visits appear in Judge Sewell's Journal. From 1685 to 1719, thirteen of them are recorded. Many allusions are made in the Journal to the sermons and lectures of Mr. Stoddard, and in every instance with evident marks of hearty approbation. The Judge was in the habit of sending some little remembrance to his friends in the country though he may not always have made it a matter of record. In 1707, he writes: "I gave Mr. Stoddard, for Madame Stoddard, two half pounds of chockolat, instead of commencement cake and a Thesis." The following year Mr. Stoddard was again present, and on commencement day he "craved a blessing in the Hall, & Mr. Williams of Hatfield, returned thanks." Eleven years afterwards, he records: "I send to Mr. Stoddard of Northampton, 2 or 3 p<sup>d</sup> of Reasons [raisins] and 1 p<sup>d</sup> of Almond in a paper bag by Dea. Sheldon."

In 1716, Judge Sewell journeyed into the Connecticut valley, and of course paid a visit to his friends in North-

1. "He us'd for many years together to make his Annual Visits to Boston, at the time of the Commencement; and the day after to preach the Public Lecture to a numerous audience, expecting and glad to hear him."—Boston Weekly News Letter.

ampton. He writes: "Tuesday went to Northampton, Frary going to Westfield, Piloted us. Staid 2 or 3 hours with Mr. Stoddard, dined with him and Madam Stoddard, who is lame of Sciatica, and yet spins at the Linen Wheel. Mr. Stoddard brought me going to Pascomack."

The friendship existing between these men was still further exemplified on the occasion of the death of Judge Sewell's wife, which occurred in 1717. Under date of Dec. 9<sup>th</sup>, the following entry may be found: "Am much refreshed with Mr. Stoddard's Letter of condolence, which is excellent. I soked in Tears at reading. \* \* \* I take Mr. Stoddard's letter to be an answer to my Prayer for God's gracious looking upon me."<sup>1</sup>

**Mr. Stoddard a Business Man.** He was not only a minister of the Gospel, but he was a man of good business abilities. Besides preaching two sermons on

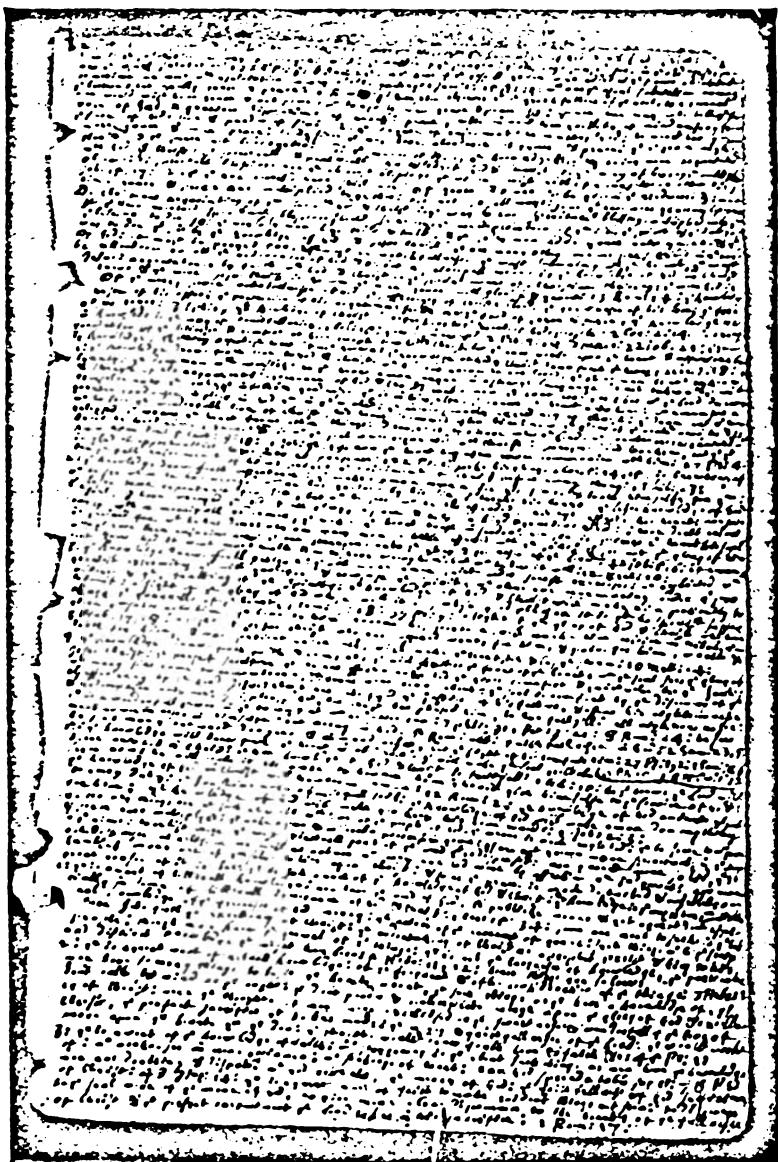
Sunday, delivering the weekly lecture, and attending to his pastoral duties, he found time to cultivate his farm, as indeed all ministers in those days were compelled to do, and gave not a little attention to the every-day affairs of the town, as has been abundantly manifested in the preceding pages of this work. With a keen interest in the welfare of the settlement, he gave much thought to various business projects which resulted in great advantage to the community. It is needless to repeat them. His correspondence with the authorities is invaluable; his suggestions were in the main practical, and in some instances shadowed forth methods that in after years were adopted. His letters are the most reliable, and in several instances the most satisfactory record of the events they relate. Honored and venerated by all, "a wise & judiceous Casuist, whose Advice & Council were much sought & valu'd by the perplex'd & scrupulous,"<sup>2</sup> he was not only regarded as a spiritual guide, but his counsel was also sought in secular affairs. His opinions were quoted in the correspondence of prominent townsmen with the provincial authorities, and his guiding hand has already been noted in many affairs of importance.

<sup>1</sup> Massachusetts Historical Collections, ser. 5, vol. 5, 6, 7.

<sup>2</sup> Boston Weekly News Letter.



FAC-SIMILE OF SOLOMON STODDARD'S SERMON.  
(Exact Size.)











**Indian Tradition.** The respect and deference bestowed upon the clergy by the Puritan settlers, were also extended to them by the Indians, who regarded them with much the same feelings shown to their own medicine-men. The incident related by the Canadian Indians concerning Mr. Stoddard,<sup>1</sup> may have been correct, but in all probability it was but the repetition of the story related by Rev. Hope Atherton, first minister of Hatfield, concerning his experience in the Falls fight. In this case the narration of Mr. Atherton was corroborated by the savages, and may be regarded as truthful.<sup>2</sup> These men were contemporaries, and it is easy to conceive how the same tradition may have been made to do service for both of them.

**Marriage.** On the 18<sup>th</sup> of March, 1670, he married Esther, widow of his predecessor, Rev. Eleazar Mather. They had eleven children, six daughters and five sons. Mrs. Mather had three children by her first husband, the eldest of whom was six years old at the time of her second marriage. They took up their residence at the parsonage given to Mr. Mather by the town, and lived there till about the time Eliakim Mather, the youngest son, came of age, when the Mather homestead was sold to John and Moses Lyman. In 1684, Mr. Stoddard bought the Clesson place, on the eastern slope of Round Hill, and within a few years built a house there.

**Estate.** Mr. Stoddard accumulated a large estate for the times in which he lived. It was inventoried at £1126, exclusive of books and wearing apparel, besides "several hundred pounds" due on bonds lodged in Boston. His real estate comprised one hundred twenty-eight acres, fifty of which was meadow-land; and the rest scattered in different parts of the town. In his library were four hundred sixty-two volumes, four hundred ninety-

<sup>1</sup> The tradition related by the Canada Indians to their English captives in that country was that once when Mr. Stoddard was passing "Deweys Hole," between Northampton and Hatfield, a Frenchman in ambush, leveled his gun at the minister, but his Indian companion advised him not to shoot, as that was the Englishman's God. An experience of a similar nature is said to have occurred while Mr. Stoddard was meditating upon a sermon in an orchard at Deerfield.—Dwight's travels, vol. 1, p. 281.

<sup>2</sup> Vol. 1, p. 284.

one single sermons and pamphlets. By will he left his wife the use of one half the house, one half the meadow land, the income of the money at interest, also "my servant man during the remainder of his service;" £60 were also placed at her disposal, and £12 in meat and meal. The eldest son, Anthony, pastor of the church at Woodbury, Ct., was given £220, with what he had received (his education at Harvard College), and all the books and apparel. To each of his six daughters, all of whom were married, he left the sum of £120, with what he had already given them. Col. John Stoddard had one half the real estate, and all the homestead after the death of his mother, and if he should live four years in Northampton, all the land wherever situated. Mrs. Stoddard died in 1736, at the advanced age of ninety-two years.

## CHAPTER VI.

### NEW MEETING-HOUSE.

**A New Meeting-House under Discussion.** MORE than seventy years had passed since the second meeting-house had been erected.

It was becoming old and shaky, and was, moreover, altogether too small to accommodate the large and increasing congregation. Every year it was found necessary to expend considerable money in repairs,<sup>1</sup> but not enough seems to have been done to arrest the hand of decay, and the building was becoming more and more dilapidated. The question of building a new meeting-house was in agitation several years before definite action was taken. It was first brought forward in town-meeting in March, 173<sup>2</sup>. As usual there was a conflict of opinion on the subject. A disagreement concerning the location of the building seems to have been developed before the matter was presented to the town.

**A Decision to Build.** The first vote upon it declared "that When they did Build a Meetting House; it Should be Set on the Meetting Hill; as Near as it Can be Conveniently to the Presentt Meetting House." Undoubtedly this division of sentiment delayed the work, for no more is heard about it till the latter part of 1735. In November of that year, a vote was "passed in the affirmative by a very great majority," to "build a Meeting House, Get the timber, fraim it, Raise and Cover it, by the End of y<sup>e</sup> next Summer." In the same vote it was provided that the house should be "about seventy foot long and about forty-six or forty-eight foot in weadth, with a Steeple or Bell Coney

<sup>1</sup> The boys delighted in making targets both of the meeting-house and school-house, and scarcely a year passed when the town was not called upon to expend, sometimes as much as a pound to replace broken glass in these buildings.

(balcony) at the end." The exact dimensions of the building were left to the judgment of the committee appointed to carry the vote into effect. This body was composed of Col. John Stoddard, Eben' Pumroy, Capt. John Clark, Capt. Preserv<sup>d</sup> Clapp, Ensign Eben' Parsons, Ensign Ebenez' Clark, & Joseph Wright.

**The Probable Reason for Building.**

Probably the determining cause of the above vote was the extraordinary revival of religion that prevailed during the summer of 1735.<sup>1</sup> Under a state of feeling where sixty, eighty and one hundred persons presented themselves for admission to the church at successive communion seasons,<sup>2</sup> the absolute need of larger accommodations for Sunday services, was apparent.

**Committee sent to View Meeting-Houses.**

Before the decisive vote was passed, probably during the two years which elapsed after the first one was adopted, and the final decision to build reached, Joseph Wright and Nathaniel Curtis, undoubtedly under instructions from the selectmen, "viewed" many meeting-houses with reference to procuring a plan for the proposed building. Without doubt they examined some of those more recently erected. It is only known that Curtis went to Lebanon, Ct., and that they were allowed 60s. for expenses and services. Both were master workmen, and were employed in building the new house. With the final vote to build was coupled another authorizing the expenditure of £100 for the purchase of glass and nails.

**Gathering Materials.**

During the succeeding winter and spring materials were gathered for the edifice. Timber was cut on the commons, and men were paid by the load, both for cutting and carting. Some of it was brought from "over Beaver Brook," some from the south side of Manhan River, some from "over Robert's Meadow," and some was obtained at a nearer point. There are accounts for carting eighty loads of timber, "5 loads of sleepers,"

<sup>1</sup> The entire population seemed to be under conviction of sin. "There was scarcely a single person in the town, either old or young, that was left unconcerned about the great things of the eternal world."—Rev. Jonathan Edwards' Narrative of Surprising Conversations, p. 12.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid, pp. 18, 19.

"9 loads of poles," "2 loads of sprouts," &c. In connection with the account for cartage, is another covering about one hundred seventy days' labor. The men were paid according to the season of the year, some 4s. and others 5s. per day. They were undoubtedly employed in felling the timber and preparing it for transportation. Most of the stone used in the foundation was brought from the "mountain," probably from Mt. Tom, and from Rocky Hill. The prices paid for carting were from 7s. to 15s.; generally from 10s. to 12s. These materials were placed in the highway in the vicinity of the old meeting-house, and there the timber was scored, hewed and framed, ready for raising. Stone for door-steps were purchased of Samuel Bartlett of Bolton, and he received £10 for them.

An Attempt to  
Change the Lo-  
cation.

When the frame was nearly ready for raising, an attempt was made to change the location of the house, and place it on the "Sand Hill between Moses Lyman's and Jonathan Wright's."<sup>1</sup> But the proposition was negatived, and a vote passed that the new house should be set "partly on North West Side of the present Meeting House, and partly from thence North Eastwardly, on the Ridge of Land whereon Edward Bakers fence now standeth."<sup>2</sup> As some dissatisfaction was still manifested concerning the position of the new building, the town two weeks afterwards reaffirmed the latter vote, and ordered "that the New meeting House, when framed Shall be Set at y<sup>e</sup> place where it is framing." This building stood in the present highway, and the steeple, at the east end of it, was about on a line with the center doorway of the present church edifice.

1 From existing topography it is impossible to name with certainty this proposed site. In all probability it meant merely another position on Meeting-House Hill, but no sand-hill is now in existence by means of which the place can be identified. Moses Lyman, grandson of John Lyman, owned at this time the northerly half of the Rev. Eleazar Mather property (now comprising the southerly side of Main Street from Pleasant Street to the Hampshire County Bank) and Jonathan Wright, grandson of Samuel Wright Sr., was one of the owners of the lot at the corner of Main and King Streets (First National Bank and Williston homestead), and it was probably at the extreme southeast extremity of Meeting-House Hill, that it was desired to place the new structure, which is the only point that seems to satisfy the above conditions.

2 From the above description it is probable that there was an error in the location of the second meeting-house, and that it may have stood opposite the present entrance to Gothic Street, and not at that of Center Street as heretofore stated. See vol. 1, p. 180.

**The Frame Raised.** During the summer the foundations were laid, Gideon Hale being paid £6.12 for "moulding the underpinning," and the timber was made ready for the frame. Everything was prepared for raising in September, and on Tuesday, the 21<sup>st</sup> day of the month, the work was commenced. It was apparently the intention that the raising should be done by voluntary labor, but after the sills were laid, the town voted to hire men for that purpose, paying them 5s. per day and furnishing liquor. In a week's time the entire frame of the building, with the exception of the spire, was in place. The town treasurer's account shows that seventy-six men were employed in that work, fifty-four of whom labored five days, and the others a shorter time. Forty-nine gallons of rum, and thirty-six pounds of sugar were required to get the timbers into place, and twenty gallons seem to have been consumed while the framing was in progress, making in all sixty-nine gallons of liquor that were required for this part of the work, besides a number of barrels of "cyder," as well as several barrels of beer. Dea. Ebenezer Hunt thus describes in his Journal the work of raising the frame:—

"In November, 1735, we passed a vote to build a new meeting house 70 feet in length, 46 feet in breadth, and proceeded to get the timber the winter following; and in the summer of 1736 we framed it—Mr. Joseph Wright master—and on the 16<sup>th</sup> day of Sept. we laid the sills, it being on Thursday, and appointed to begin to raise on Monday following, but that proved a wet day; so the town met together and agreed to hire 60 men to raise the meeting house and to give them 5s. the day, they keeping themselves excepting drinks, and on Tuesday morning they began to raise, it being the 21<sup>st</sup> day of said Sept. and they raised all the posts in the length of the house, excepting two of a side; and on Wednesday, the 22<sup>nd</sup>, they finished the body of the house, and put up two beams; and on Thursday the 23<sup>rd</sup> we put up all the beams and made some preparations for raising the upper part of the bellfree; and on Friday the 24<sup>th</sup>, we finished the scaffolding and raised one half of the bellfree; and the next day the 25<sup>th</sup> it rained till noon, and in the afternoon they finished the body of the bellfree; and on Monday, the 27<sup>th</sup> of said month, we finished the raising of the house; and we have abundant cause to take notice with thankfulness of the kindness of God to us in protecting and preserving the lives and limbs of all those that were active in the building of the house, for except the Lord build the house, they labor in vain that build it.

"On Thursday, the 21<sup>st</sup> day of July, 1737, the spire of our meeting house was raised with good success, for which we have cause to be

thankful. On Friday, the 5<sup>th</sup> day of May, 1738, we pulled down the old meeting house, without hurt to any man, or to the new house."

**Accidents.**

Notwithstanding the amount of intoxicants consumed, the laborious task of raising the huge frame was accomplished without accident. But during the following year, two persons were injured, while at work on the building. Jonathan Strong was paid £3 for "setting his bone, broken while working at y<sup>e</sup> meeting house," and £3.10 was paid to "y<sup>e</sup> bonesetter for setting Ebenezer Burt's thy."

**The Spire. Pews and Seats.**

At the annual town-meeting in 173<sup>4</sup>, the building committee reported progress and were discharged. A vote to complete the structure during the year immediately followed, and a new committee was chosen to carry on the work. The question of building a spire or steeple had not been previously settled, and the matter was entrusted to the discretion of this committee, with instructions to "advise with some Workmen with Respect to the Height, manner and method of Building the Same." It was also "voted that in the meeting House now a Building, there Shall be Pews made round the meeting House and only Seats on both Sides of the Alley." Accordingly pews were placed along the outer walls on all sides of the building. The "alley,"—"broad alley," as it is elsewhere called—or broad aisle, extended through the middle of the audience room, from the south door (there were doors on three sides of the edifice) to the pulpit. Twenty-five wall pews were built on the ground floor, and these seem to have been all the pews authorized by the above vote. But the earliest seating plan extant, very probably the first one ever made, contains another tier of twelve pews along three sides of the narrow aisle which gave access to the wall pews. These pews were undoubtedly put in when the house was built, and the vote prescribing "only seats on both sides of the alley," was construed to mean that all other parts of the house should be provided with pews. This view is confirmed by the fact that there remains no record of the addition of any pews till 1762, when five were constructed, probably in the gallery. The plan referred to shows a tier of wall pews,

flanked by a narrow passageway, then another tier of pews with a narrow alley, then a row of benches or "seats," then the "broad aisle." In 1766, four "hind seats," two on each side of the broad aisle, were taken out and the "ground made into pews." Twenty years elapsed before the benches were all discarded, and the entire floor occupied with pews.<sup>1</sup> The vote ordering this change was made in 1785.

**Money Borrowed  
to Pay Current  
Expenses. An  
Ungallant Vote.**

When the vote about seats was adopted, an appropriation of £300 was made for the purpose of finishing the edifice. While the work was in progress, £60 were borrowed of three individuals—£20 from each—to pay current expenses. In 1738, an order was made to place benches "before the deacons seat, before the fore seats, and before the pews against the inner corner pews" for the children. At the same time Samuel Phelps and others asked "Liberty to make a pew for their daughters in the new meeting house on the back side of the north gallery and it passed in the negative." An exclusive ownership of sittings was not sufficiently democratic for the times, and the people protested against it, even to the verge of being deemed ungallant. No definite sum is named as the cost of this building, but the treasurer's accounts show an expenditure of more than £3000, for which taxes were laid.

**The Interior of this  
Edifice.**

Access to the house was obtained through three entrances. The principal one was at the south side of the building, facing Main Street, and opening into the broad aisle; there was another through the steeple, and a third at the westerly end of the structure. The pulpit was on the side opposite the main entrance, canopied by a huge sounding-board, which bore the figures, 1735, the date of the first vote to build. The pews were either square or oblong, with high straight backs, and the seats were hinged so that they could be raised, in order to allow more room for the occupants while

<sup>1</sup> At the commencement of the nineteenth century there were forty-nine pews on the ground floor of this meeting-house, and seventeen pews and fourteen long benches in the gallery. At that date the duty of seating the meeting-house devolved upon the selectmen, and the schedule of 1806, signed by the selectmen of that year, contains the names of 1036 persons to whom seats were assigned.

standing during prayer or while singing. In some houses the pew rail was supported by a row of short balusters, which gave an ornamental appearance to these pen like structures. It is not certain that any kind of adornment prevailed here.

**Galleries.**

These were reached by stairways in the corners of the room, on both sides of the main doorway, and the galleries extended along three sides of the building. There was a passageway from the gallery to the steeple, but no stairs in the belfry. On the plan already referred to, five pews only are indicated in the gallery, and those were on the side opposite the pulpit. Women were seated on the left of the pulpit and men on the right.

**Four other Houses  
like this one.**

Four meeting-houses, situated respectively in Boston, Springfield, Hatfield and Longmeadow, resembled this one. They were nearly of the same dimensions, and similar in style of architecture. A picture of either of them would sufficiently well represent the Northampton edifice. The steeple of each was surmounted by a weather-vane, intended to counterfeit chanticleer.<sup>1</sup> All had bells much alike.

**Seating the New  
Meeting-House.**

When the new house of worship was nearly completed, the problem of seating the congregation in it assumed special importance, and in connection therewith arose the question of allowing the sexes to sit together. Public opinion in this respect was growing more liberal, but there was still a strong sentiment in opposition to seating men and women side by side on the Sabbath. During the closing months of the year 1737, a series of votes was passed relative to these matters. The first, in November, provided that males should be at the south end of the new meeting-house, and females at the north; that the men should sit at the right of the pulpit and the women at the left. A proposition to appoint

<sup>1</sup> It is stated that the cocks used for weather-vanes were all imported, and were composed of two thicknesses of copper, which were spread about three inches apart at the center. When the new meeting-house was built in 1812, the fowl weather-vane was omitted.

a seating committee of three persons was negatived, and the former number of five was adopted. This committee was composed of "John Stoddard, Esq, Ebenezer Pumroy, Esq, Timothy Dwight, Esq, Samuel Mather, and Dea. Samuel Allyn." They were instructed to "draw up their Scheam or Platt for Seating of the meeting House and present it to the Town," for approval. On this committee were some of the leading citizens of the town, and yet so important was the matter deemed, that their work was to be supervised by the people. In December the town refused to allow men and their wives to be seated together.

**The Seating Com. Committee Instructed.** At the same meeting it was voted that the committee appointed at the November meeting should be established and continued, and instructions were to be given them "for their direction and conduct in prosecuting the design of seating the meeting house." The meeting then adjourned for four days, during which time the following rules for their guidance were concocted:—

- "1. Voted That in Seating the new meeting House the Committee have Respect principally to men's estate.
- "2. To have Regard to men's Age.
- "3. Voted that Some Regard and Respect to men's usefulness, but in a less Degree."

In these instructions wealth was the first consideration, then age, and lastly intellect, ability, and usefulness in the community. Heretofore age had been deemed of the most importance, and estate of secondary consequence. In several other towns, some of which have already been enumerated, age and usefulness were placed before wealth. At this adjourned meeting a committee, consisting of six persons, was appointed to "estimate the pews and seats." In other words they were to "dignify" the seats, appraise their social value, that the seaters might make no errors in placing their occupants. The plan of mingling the sexes was again brought forward and disposed of in the following manner: "The Question was put whether the Committee be forbidden to Seat men & their wives together, Especially Such as Incline to Sit together; It passed in the Negative." Under this qualified consent the committee

proceeded to seat married people together in the pews, but upon the benches in the center of the house the men were placed on one side of the broad aisle, and their wives on the other. In some cases husbands were seated in a pew and wives on a bench.

**Plans of Sittings.** A plan of the sittings, containing the name of each occupant, in all probability the one adopted in December, 1737, is here reproduced, but it bears no date. The arrangement of pews and seats is identical with that of 1750, which has also been preserved; no change having been made on the ground floor of the building till some years later. On this plan are the names of several persons, known to have died in 1738, while on another plan, also without date, they are omitted. It contains the names of nearly six hundred persons.

**First Occupation of the New Meeting-House.** The new house of worship was occupied early in the year 1738, though it was not wholly completed till the following year.

It was never formally dedicated, for it was not then the custom to set apart the meeting-house for none other than religious services. Meetings for military, civil, political, as well as ecclesiastical purposes, were held within its portals.<sup>1</sup>

**Serious Accident in the old Meeting-House.** Before the new building was ready for occupancy its special need was emphasized in a most striking manner. A serious accident, most remarkable in its consequences, occurred in the old meeting-house.<sup>2</sup> On Sunday, March 13, 1737, during the morning service, the front gallery fell. The building, too small for the large congregation worshipping there, was filled in every part. The first great revival under the pastorate of Jonathan Edwards, during which more than three hundred members were added to the church, had not

<sup>1</sup> "Holiness of places," says Cotton Mather, writing in 1736, "is no more believed in among them [the New England churches] than it was in the days of Clemens Alexandrianus, who says that every place is holy where we receive the knowledge of God."

<sup>2</sup> The above account of this catastrophe is compiled from a letter describing it, written by Rev. Jonathan Edwards, under date of March 19, 1737; from Dea. Ebenezer Hunt's Journal, and from an account published in the Boston Weekly News Letter of March 24, 1737.

wholly ceased, and the attendance on church services was unusually large. Between one hundred fifty and two hundred persons<sup>1</sup> were in the gallery and immediately under it, but no one was killed or seriously injured.

**Fall of the Gallery.** Mr. Edwards was preaching from the text "Behold ye despisers and wonder and perish." He had just "laid down his doctrines," when "with a noise like a clap of thunder," the whole front gallery fell. No lives were lost, nor above "ten persons were so wounded as to make any great matter of it; \* \* and though many were greatly bruised and their flesh torn, yet not one bone was broken or so much as put out of joint among them all." This house, erected in 1661, had been in use seventy-six years, and was falling into decay. The building had begun to spread at the bottom, the sills and walls giving way. Severe frosts during the winter had affected the foundation much more than usual, the underpinning had been considerably disordered, and the "ends of the joists, which bore up the front gallery, were drawn off from the girts on which they rested." The gallery seemed to sink in the middle, and people were thrown in a heap before the front door. "The falling gallery seemed to be broken all to pieces before it got down, so that some who fell with it, as well as those who were under it, were buried in the ruins and were found pressed under heavy loads of timber, and could do nothing to help themselves." "The house was filled with dolorous shrieking; and nothing else was expected than to find many people dead, or dashed to pieces." The congregation was sitting, and the tops of the pews prevented the timbers from coming upon those who were under the gallery. In his letter describing the catastrophe, Mr. Edwards remarks:—"It seems unreasonable to ascribe it [the preservation of the lives and limbs of the people] to any thing else but the care of Providence, in disposing the motions of every piece of timber, and the precise place of safety where every one should sit and fall, when none were in any capacity to care for their own preservation." The following Wednesday was set

<sup>1</sup> Hunt's Journal states that "about 70 persons fell with the gallery and there were nearly as many more under it," while the Boston News Letter reports that there were about "200 in and underneath it."

apart as a day of solemn worship to God, "and to praise his name for so wonderful, and as it were miraculous, a preservation."

**The Old House Torn Down.** An order was adopted in 1738, to pull down the old meeting-house, and dispose of it to the best advantage. On the 5<sup>th</sup> day of May it was demolished. Five pounds and thirteen shillings were expended in removing it, and much of the material was disposed of during the following years. A portion of it was used in the erection of a town house, in 1739, and the pulpit and all the pews belonging to the town, were given to the people of the new settlement over Munhan—Southampton.

**The Young People Behave Badly at Meeting.** In the old meeting-house much disorder prevailed among the young people during religious services, and it was not strange, considering the crowded state of the congregation. In the new one, measures were taken previous to its occupation, to preserve order. In March 1731, the annexed vote on this subject was adopted :—

"The Question Was put whether the Town desired the Several Justices in Northampton (when the Committee of Seaters have finished their Seating) to Exert their Authority to maintain good Order in the House of God in the time of Publick Worship, and it passed in the affirmative."

If the six tithing-men appointed that year were unable to keep the children quiet, and it became necessary to call on the Justices to assist, either the Sunday constables were very inefficient, or the disorder must have assumed very alarming proportions.

**Porches Built and a Tower Clock Obtained.** When the meeting-house was erected, no porches were placed over either of the doors. The first movement in that direction was made in 1764, when one was constructed over the west entrance, and four years later another was placed over the south door. A clock found its way into the steeple in the course of a few years, but there is no record concerning it, and it is uncertain whether the clock was purchased by

the town or presented by individuals. Very probably it may have been paid for by voluntary contributions. Allusion is first made to this timepiece in 1740, when Seth Pomeroy was allowed 20s. "for looking after the clock." Other accounts to different individuals for this purpose, are found in after years. Private parties were permitted in 1784, to put up a dial, at their own expense, at the east side of the meeting-house.

## CHAPTER VII.

### JOSEPH HAWLEY—PHYSICIANS—TOWN HALL—PASCOMMUCK.

*Suicide of Joseph Hawley.* WHILE the subject of building the new meeting-house was in agitation, the community was greatly shocked by the suicide of Joseph Hawley, the second person in town bearing that name. On Sunday morning, June 1, 1735, Lieut. Joseph Hawley cut his throat in his bedchamber, and died soon after. He was a man of more than ordinary ability, greatly respected, and a leading citizen. Many important offices had been conferred upon him, and he transacted much business for the town. In nineteen consecutive years he was fifteen times chosen townsmen, and from 1716 to 1734, was annually elected town clerk. In this capacity he charged the town for making rates, and the ministers—Mr. Stoddard and Mr. Edwards—for recording marriages. These last charges were made in accordance with the law of 1716. He was County Treasurer from 1730 to 1732. Dea. Hunt in his diary calls him Lieut. Hawley, but no evidence of service in the militia appears.

*His Business.* Mr. Hawley was interested in several branches of business, and was successful in them all. He was a merchant, and for many years appears to have been the principal trader in town. He owned an interest in a sawmill, carried on boating on Connecticut River, and managed a large farm. Much was done at that time by the farmers of the Connecticut valley, in the way of fattening cattle for market, and in this Mr. Hawley was engaged to some extent. Drovers<sup>1</sup> were sent from the towns

<sup>1</sup> Samuel Sheldon of Northampton, was one of the drovers and Dr. Thomas Wells of Deerfield, was another. The latter had charge of a drove of cattle from that town to Boston, in 1739. He was absent ten days and received 96s. for his services.

along the river to Boston, and Mr. Hawley apparently acted as agent for the Northampton men. He received pay for the cattle, possibly made the sales in Boston, and paid the proceeds to the owners, when he reached home. Many transactions of this nature are entered upon his account-books.

**Principally a Merchant.** In 1717, he commenced the mercantile business, which slowly increased from year to year. The stock of goods consisted of the usual heterogeneous combination found in an old style country store. Much of his trade was in dry-goods, consisting mainly in trimmings for men's and women's garments. Though he sold many articles for female adornment, bonnets do not appear among them. He disposed of large numbers of silk handkerchiefs, as well as no small allowance of rum. The amount of business transacted by him was never very large, and the charges on his books were not numerous; a single page answering in some instances for the accounts of an entire month. People evidently bought only what they absolutely needed, and that for which they had the money to pay. Bills of credit were the principal circulating medium, though he did considerable trade in the way of barter. Powder and lead were in great demand, as almost everybody, especially those who lived in the outlying districts, did more or less hunting. People cast or run their own bullets and buckshot, as very little game smaller than deer, wolves, or turkeys was considered worth the trouble of killing. Sugar and spices were in constant use, and butter, lard, suet, and sometimes venison, were sold. Everyone, men and women, smoked, and quantities of pipes were disposed of, but very little tobacco was for sale, as nearly everybody raised what he consumed. Mr. Hawley was the first person in town who sold knives and forks.

**His Store on "Pudding Lane."** It is not absolutely certain where he carried on his mercantile business, but in all probability it was either in his own house, or in a small building on his homestead. He lived on "Pudding



id Mr. Hawley apparently  
ipton men. He received pay  
je sales in Boston, and paid  
ien he reached home. Many  
e entered upon his account-

nnenced the mercantile busi-  
jowly increased from year to  
ek of goods consisted of the  
ation found in an old style  
trade was in dry-goods, con-  
; for men's and women's gar-  
my articles for female adorn-  
among them. He disposed of  
kerchiefs, as well as no small  
ount of business transacted by  
and the charges on his books  
le page answering in some in-  
an entire month. People evi-  
hey absolutely needed, and that  
ey to pay. Bills of credit were  
edium, though he did considera-  
ter. Powder and lead were in  
everybody, especially those who  
riets, did more or less hunting.  
run bullets and buckshot, as very  
eer, wolves, or turkeys was con-  
e of killing. Sugar and spices  
butter, lard, suet, and sometimes  
yone, men and women, smoked,  
were disposed of, but very little  
nearly everybody raised what he  
was the first person in town who

absolutely certain where he carried mercantile business, but in all probability was either in his own house, or in homestead. He lived on "Pudding

Mr. Cook is in Edward, Ward and Winnipeg with us	Miss Elsie Cofford is in Winnipeg	Mr. Baldwin Mrs. Clark Walters the boy	for weight Walters b. Providence Sanderson Walters Hans	will wait Stearns Sanderson Hans	The view of El Dorado
					Mr. Daniel the mother of Walters died
				Mr. Daniel the mother of Walters died	Mr. Daniel the mother of Walters died
				Mr. Daniel the mother of Walters died	Mr. Daniel the mother of Walters died

you run

W. Allen /  
John Clark /  
John Coffey /  
James Hart /  
John H. King, Jr.  
W. S. L. King, Jr.

W. Allen /  
John Clark /  
John Coffey /  
James Hart /  
John H. King, Jr.  
W. S. L. King, Jr.

W. Allen /  
John Clark /  
John Coffey /  
James Hart /  
John H. King, Jr.  
W. S. L. King, Jr.

W. Allen /  
John Clark /  
John Coffey /  
James Hart /  
John H. King, Jr.  
W. S. L. King, Jr.

John Mather	John Clark / John Coffey / James Hart / John H. King, Jr. W. S. L. King, Jr.
John Clark / John Coffey / James Hart / John H. King, Jr. W. S. L. King, Jr.	John Clark / John Coffey / James Hart / John H. King, Jr. W. S. L. King, Jr.

John Clark / John Coffey / James Hart / John H. King, Jr. W. S. L. King, Jr.	John Clark / John Coffey / James Hart / John H. King, Jr. W. S. L. King, Jr.
John Clark / John Coffey / James Hart / John H. King, Jr. W. S. L. King, Jr.	John Clark / John Coffey / James Hart / John H. King, Jr. W. S. L. King, Jr.

John Clark / John Coffey / James Hart / John H. King, Jr. W. S. L. King, Jr.	John Clark / John Coffey / James Hart / John H. King, Jr. W. S. L. King, Jr.
John Clark / John Coffey / James Hart / John H. King, Jr. W. S. L. King, Jr.	John Clark / John Coffey / James Hart / John H. King, Jr. W. S. L. King, Jr.

St. John's Hospital, 17th Avenue and 10th Street, New York.

now 100% of the Colloidal "100%"  
now 100% of the Colloidal "100%"  
now 100% of the Colloidal "100%"

Mr. H. and Mrs.  
Josephine  
Hunt Scheuer

William Chapman  
Gandy West  
Edward Purcell  
of Winsor

Wife of George Root	George Root waits faithfully for us in day & of Hannah Root for other Root David Prentiss John Wright Thomas Hilderman John Webster of Webster	The widow of John Hilderman for the wife of George Hilderman for George Hilderman for Webster	The widow of John Hilderman for the wife of George Hilderman for George Hilderman for Webster
Wife of George Root	George Root waits faithfully for us in day & of Hannah Root for other Root David Prentiss John Wright Thomas Hilderman John Webster of Webster	The widow of John Hilderman for the wife of George Hilderman for George Hilderman for Webster	The widow of John Hilderman for the wife of George Hilderman for George Hilderman for Webster

Son of W Rue  
to Treasury, etc  
only, mean of 2m  
Ex 4 men Claude  
et 8 men Charles

Bryngell with son Clark Belch Strong Eliza  
Holbrook Eliza H. St. gei Tim Wright Sime  
(Clark wife Clark)  
Dan Warner Smith wife Mrs. H. Garrison & ad  
wright Eliza Strong Sam Bridgeman Tollett  
wright

5 th Ward Bro - Pinson Root Noah Clark Morris Holden  
5 Jacob Parson S. B. Marshall Josiah Ben C. Van D. Ward Et Al word  
Zebulon Et Al word  
10 Thomas Holden Brown strong Ethanah Bushforth Marshall  
11 Morris Clark Sun School Eldridge Wright ~~Howard~~ ~~Marley~~ Upper Town  
12 Et Al word  
13 Dan North Utley Parsons Thresha Allen & Dan Et Al word  
3 Jacob Parsons Tim X Baker Charles Philpot Dan Linton Clark  
2 Moses Webb Thomas Hobbs Dan F. Marquardt Jonathan W. W.  
2 Dan Webb Wm. F. F. Zebulon Eldridge Et Al word  
8 William Hannum Eliakim King Litch Southwell Et Al word  
12 Et Al word Sam F. Jackson John C. Hannum Abner Et Al word

John L. Mayall

George L. Mayall



March 1787  
Meeting House

Meeting House  
March 1787

1	1
2	2
3	3
4	4
5	5

Meeting House

Story words for Joseph Wong and Penny have been written on the board.

Sam and Park have been written on the board.

On the board, the words for the story have been written.

Lane,"<sup>1</sup> now Hawley Street. He bought the homestead of Thomas Sheldon, on the opposite side of the street from his father's house in 1723, and built a house upon it soon after.

**A Man of Intelligence.** Mr. Hawley was not college educated, but lived the life of a quiet country merchant, respected by all, and honored with many marks of confidence by his fellow-citizens. He was neither a lawyer nor a politician, and did not attain to any judicial or legislative honors, but was often employed by the town in important transactions. That he was a person of some culture, may be inferred from the list of books named in his inventory, and as they are not classed with "goods in the shop," it is presumed that they were not part of his stock in trade. Indeed there would have been little demand for them by the common people of the county or the town. Among them were Virgil in Latin, an English and Latin Dictionary, Cicero's Orations in Latin, a Greek and Latin Grammar and Lexicon, and many books of a religious character, including sixty-nine single sermons. Whether the latter were manuscripts or printed is not stated; if the former they were probably inherited from his father.

**Religious Despondency.** During the religious excitement of 1735, Mr. Hawley was much impressed, and exceedingly concerned about the state of his soul. He finally gave way to a fit of extreme melancholy, and in a moment of temporary insanity, put an end to his life.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Dea. Sheldon was a shoemaker, and employed a number of apprentices. According to tradition his wife was in the habit of making huge puddings, on which to feed them. From that circumstance the sarcastic gossips of that day named the street "Pudding Lane."—Judd MSS.

<sup>2</sup> "In the latter part of May, it began to be very sensible that the spirit of God was gradually withdrawing from us, and after this time Satan seemed to be more let loose, and raged in a dreadful manner. The first instance, wherein it appeared, was a person's putting an end to his own life, by cutting his throat. He was a gentleman of more than common understanding, of strict morals, religious in his behavior, and an useful, honorable person in the town; but was of a family that are exceeding prone to the disease of melancholy, and his mother was killed with it. He had, from the beginning of this extraordinary time, been exceedingly concerned about the state of his soul, and there were some things in his experience, that appeared very hopefully, but he durst entertain no hope concerning his own good estate. Towards the

## Family.

Lieut. Hawley was the son of Joseph Hawley, who was prominent in the early history of the town, and was born August 22<sup>d</sup>, 1682. He married in 1722, Rebekah, daughter of Rev. Solomon Stoddard. They had two children, Joseph and Elisha. The former, Major Joseph Hawley, was one of the most eminent men of his time. Elisha was killed in the expedition against Crown Point, in 1755.

## The Mother of Major Hawley.

Rebekah, wife of Joseph Hawley, was the eleventh child of Rev. Solomon Stoddard. A woman of great energy and decision, of remarkable industry and economy, she exhibited also business talents of a high order. She was a person of great eccentricity, of strong prejudices, and aristocratic tendencies. Her eldest son, Joseph, was but twelve years of age at the time of his father's death, and the care of the two children, as well as the management of the farm and merchandise, devolved upon her. An expert dairy woman, her butter and cheese were in great demand, and probably she made more of the latter product than any other person in town. In proof of her eccentricity it is related that when the suicide of her husband was made known to her she was in the dairy, and refused to go to him till she had finished turning the cheeses.<sup>1</sup> In 1753, when sixty-seven years old, she built an addition to her house, for a cheese room and buttery. A gallon of rum was needed for the refreshment of the raisers. She was much opposed to the marriage of her son Joseph, and after that event, though she lived in the same house with him, she had her own separate apartments, and managed her own household. In the new meeting-house she was seated in the third wall pew to the left of the pulpit, adjoining the pew allotted to the pastor. In the latter part of his time, he grew much discouraged, and melancholy grew a main upon him, till he was wholly overpowered by it, and was in a great measure, past a capacity of receiving advice, or being reasoned with to any purpose. The devil took the advantage, and drove him into despairing thoughts. He was kept awake nights, meditating terror, so that he had scarce any sleep at all, for a long time together. And it was observed at last, that he was scarcely well capable of managing his ordinary business, and was judged delirious by the coroner's inquest."—Rev. Mr. Edwards' *Narrative of Surprising Conversions*, p. 74.

<sup>1</sup> As the catastrophe happened on Sunday morning, too much credence must not be given to this statement.

tor, with Col. John Stoddard and his mother, Madame Stoddard. She died June 2, 1766, at the age of eighty years.

crows. In 1734, crows became such a nuisance that the town set a price upon their heads, voting to pay 12d. apiece for all that should be killed in the ensuing months of April and May. Either the birds multiplied rapidly, or they managed to elude the hunters, for within five years the sum was increased to 18d., and black-birds were added to the list, 2d. each being allowed for their destruction.

Town Map. A survey and map of the town was ordered in 1734, and instructions given to have the bounds of the township confirmed by the General Court. No record or copy of this survey can now be found. At the same time an order was adopted providing that the meadow or common field should be "opened and laid Common" for five weeks, and after that to be cleared of all creatures, and shut up till further notice.

Proposals for a Flock of Sheep. Mt. Tom Fenced for a Pasture.

Frequent allusions to sheep raising have been made in these pages, and, as has previously been shown, much was done by the town to promote that valuable industry. In 1727, a special order was adopted, providing for the clearing of the sheep pasture at the foot of Rocky Hill of brush, for fencing with stone along the highway, and for the leasing of the land. Within eight years a more definite attempt was made to interest the people in this matter. It was voted that if

"A Sufficient Number of persons Would Subscribe and Come under Engagement to have in this Town to the number of five Hundred Sheep by Some time next Spring, and Effect it that then they would fence in Mount Tom, for Sheep to be kept upon, viz: to begin at the Great River at the Most Convenient place at the South End of the s<sup>4</sup> Mountain, and so fence across from s<sup>4</sup> Great River to Broad Brook Somewhere below the mill Called Stebbens Mill, and also do that upon S<sup>4</sup> Brook from the place where S<sup>4</sup> fence Comes down to Munhan River, or to Some field fence So as to make it a Sufficient fence for that vee."

A committee was appointed to obtain subscribers and build the fence. The by-law against dogs over twelve

inches high running at large, was revived. Nothing appears to show whether the terms of the above vote were complied with, but the action of the town indicated that it was confidently expected that the requisite number of subscribers would be obtained.<sup>1</sup>

**Mt. Tom.**

The origin of the name of this mountain is somewhat in doubt. Nothing positive has come to light relative to its christening. Dr. Holland's fanciful and poetical legend respecting the naming of Holyoke and Tom has been questioned, though there can be no doubt that Holyoke perpetuates the memory of the famous captain, who figured so prominently in the early history of the valley. No allusion to the name has been found upon the records of the town till the above order was adopted, though the appellation was bestowed upon the eminence many years before. In fact there is evidence that the name had been applied to the mountain within less than a dozen years after the settlement of the town. The earliest record of it is found upon a deed of land from Capt. Aaron Cook to Joseph Parsons in 1662, in which thirty acres of land "under Mt. Tom," bounded partly by the highway "under Mt. Tom," was transferred. The name may be of Indian origin. In fact the use of it two years before "Mt. Holyoke" was recognized (Holyoke was first named on the Northampton records in 1664) is an indication that the name may have been applied by the Indians, but was not in general use till many years after its neighbor had become a household word. Still there remains the fact that when Holyoke was first mentioned, Tom was designated in the same document as the "greate mountain."

**Efforts to Equalize  
the Currency.**

The issue of paper money in Massachusetts, the causes which led to it, and the various methods adopted to bring it into circulation and sustain its value, have heretofore been sufficiently dwelt upon in this work. Another attempt to stay the downward tendency of bills of credit was made in 1736, but fourteen years elapsed before a specie basis took the

<sup>1</sup> In 1703, there were 657 sheep over one year old, in town; about one half of them were owned by persons living at South Farms,

place of paper money in this Commonwealth. There were old tenor, middle tenor, and new tenor bills, each held at a different valuation. The issue of bills this year was to be equal to coined silver at 6s. 8d. per ounce. It was denominated new tenor, one pound in value of which was to be equal to three pounds of previous issues. Five years afterwards another adjustment was proposed. This emission was of equal value in silver with the former, but one pound of the new equalled four pounds of the old. The name of new tenor was applied to this issue, while that of 1736 was called middle tenor. These enactments, however, did not check lessening values, and in 1747, old tenor bills were quoted at seven and one half for one of silver.

**Surgeons and Physicians.** For more than half a century, no physician resided in Northampton, and for seventy-one years the town had been without

a surgeon. The practice of medicine and surgery seem to have been distinct and separate professions. George Filer, whose career has been already sketched, was the first "chirurgeon" here, he having been licensed to practice in 1665. He remained in Northampton but two years, and there is no evidence that any physician lived in town from that time till about the year 1730. Nine years more elapsed before another surgeon came. Dr. Samuel Mather seems to have been the first resident physician in the place after the removal of Dr. Filer. The first intimation of his presence in Northampton, was the payment to him of £20, in April, 1728, for teaching school. Two years afterwards the town paid him £100 as an inducement for him to settle in Northampton and practice his profession. For a number of years he taught the children and administered to the ills of both young and old; but eventually he abandoned pedagogics, taking high rank in his profession, as well as among the leading citizens of the place.

**Settlement of Dr. Hezekiah Porter.** Dr. Thomas Hastings practiced both "physics and chirurgery" in Hatfield, as early as 1679. His son Thomas, who died in 1728, followed him, and they were the only surgeons in this vicinity for nearly fifty years. During the next eleven

years there was no "bonesetter" in this section of the valley. Some one attended upon those persons who were injured at the raising of the meeting-house, in 1736, but his name and residence are unknown. Three years afterwards an attempt was made by a few towns in Hampshire County to prevail upon a surgeon to settle in one of them. Northampton, Hatfield, Hadley, Sunderland and Deerfield, each agreed to offer a sum of money to induce Dr. Hezekiah Porter of Farmington, Ct., to take up his residence in either of the first three named towns. A conference of committees from the several towns was held with Dr. Porter, and an arrangement made by which he was to receive £200 as a settlement. Hadley voted to give him £62 if he would settle there, and £10 less if he went to either of the other towns. Hatfield offered £42 "if he practices for life" in either of the towns named above. Deerfield decided to give £14, or "what part soever thereof shall be accounted our proportion with y<sup>e</sup> rest of y<sup>e</sup> towns." Northampton concluded that the town "would do something to encourage Dr. Porter settling here or in the neighboring towns, viz.: Hatfield or Hadley." A committee was chosen to confer with the committees of the other towns and with him, in order to ascertain on what terms he would be willing to "settle among them." At a subsequent meeting it was voted to give "our part or proportion of £200, in Bills of Publick Credit, first deducting what Deerfield and Sunderland give, and £10 more than Northampton's proportion In Case he the s<sup>a</sup> Porter Settle in Northampton." The committee was instructed to "take Sufficient Security for his abode and Continuance among us Some years." Dr. Porter came to Northampton, and in 1739, the town paid him £72, in accordance with the above votes.

**School-House Re-  
moved.** An order was adopted in 1738, to remove the school-house "from the place where it now Stands to the Sand Hill, Near to Jonathan Wright's House." This was undoubtedly the school-house erected in 1693, and the removal was from one part of meeting-house hill to another, in order to make room for the Town and County House that was built the following year. This was probably very near the point upon

which it had been proposed to build the new meeting-house.

Fines for Declining the Office of Constable. Joseph Bartlett, rather than serve as constable, after having been chosen to that office, paid a fine of £5. Ensign Sheldon and John Lyman likewise refused to take the oath as fence viewers, and were each fined 20s.

Town Hall and Court-House built by the Town and County. Previous to this date town-meetings as well as religious services had been held in the meeting-house; but soon after the new one was built, a movement was made for the erection of a building to be used exclusively for business purposes. It took definite shape in March, 1731, when the town decided to build a town house the following summer. During all these years the County Courts had convened at the "ordinaries" about town, and it was deemed a very proper time to engage the County in the matter, and by combining the two interests, provide a place of assembly for each. Accordingly the building committee was instructed to apply to the Court of General Sessions of the Peace, to ascertain what action, if any, would be taken concerning the matter. It was also ordered that the materials of the old meeting-house should be used in building the new structure. The matter was laid before the County Court at once, and it decided to unite in erecting the building, on condition that Northampton should pay one half the cost, "for building and finishing the same, besides their proportionable part of the charges of the other half together with the towns of Hadley, Hatfield, Deerfield, Westfield, Sunderland and Northfield, to be proportioned agreeable to their province tax." Deerfield voted not to join with the other towns in the county in paying the expense of this building.

The Building and its Cost. This proposition was acquiesced in by the town, and the work was carried out in 1738 and 1739. An account for labor and materials, in 1738, was considerably reduced by the town before it was approved. The town and county house was built on

meeting-house hill, and it was found necessary to cart away considerable sand before the foundation was laid. Undoubtedly it was placed very nearly on the site of the school-house that had been removed. It faced the stores recently known as "Kirkland block," at one time the residence of Hon. Lewis Strong, now Lambie's block. The door was in the center of the south front; it had four windows, and on each side of the room were seats or benches for spectators, facing inwards. The judges occupied a platform on the side opposite the door.<sup>1</sup> Ebenezer Pomeroy had been High Sheriff, and had charge of the erection of this building. His account shows that the structure cost £203.13, and Northampton, according to agreement, paid one half the amount as well as its taxable proportion of the other half. This was the first town hall, as well as the first court-house, ever built in Northampton. It was occupied jointly by both parties for about twenty-seven years, when it was superseded by another structure built by the county, expressly for a court-house, in 1761.

**Southampton Taxes** Strangers and other persons not interested  
Voted to that Pre- in the meadows, were prohibited from  
einct. turning their cattle into the common field,  
in 1738. The same year the money assessed at the "new place," Southampton, was appropriated "for the ministry or building a new meeting-house, except what was needed for highway purposes." No meeting-house, however, was built there for several years.

**A Plurality Rule in  
Elections Adopted.**

Heretofore all elections for town officers had been decided by a majority vote. In 1738, this method was changed and a plurality deemed sufficient in the election of selectmen. It was decided that those "five men that have more votes than any others," should be declared elected. No explana-

<sup>1</sup> This building was square, a story and a half in height, with what is known as a hip roof, rising from each of the four sides, and coming to a point at the apex. The lumber used in its construction was nearly all brought down the river from Deerfield and Bernardston. After the second court-house was built it remained unoccupied for about three years, when it was sold in 1788—the town and county joining in the transfer—to Robert Breck, for £8.17. He removed it across the road, to the vicinity of the site of the First National Bank, and for a long time it was occupied as a store. Finally it was removed to Market Street, fitted up and used many years for a dwelling, but has since been demolished.

tion is anywhere offered for this vote, and nothing is known concerning the occasion for its adoption. It is quite possible that in the multiplicity of candidates, no one received a majority of all the votes cast, and this was the only way out of the difficulty. Whatever the trouble was, it seems to have been settled in a short time, for there was but one trial of the new plan. The next year the plurality vote was rescinded, the town voting "that no person Should be Selectman but those that had a major part of the votes."

Pascommuck Re-settled.

Pascommuck, after its destruction by the Indians, in 1704, remained for thirteen years without an inhabitant. Only a few of the heirs of former owners came back to the place. Most of them sold out and removed to other towns. The first person to return within its desolate borders was Samuel Janes, whose father, mother, sister, and two brothers, were victims of the massacre. He was married and settled upon the old homestead in 1717. For about three years he lived there without neighbors, but in 1720, John Langton purchased and occupied the homestead of Benoni Jones. Eight years afterwards, Lieut. Elisha Searl, whose adventures while a captive with the Indians in Canada, have already been chronicled in these pages, took possession of the Searl homestead. Benjamin Janes sold his homestead to Jonathan Hunt, and removed to Coventry. No one lived on the place till it was purchased by Philip Clark. Moses Hutchinson left no heirs, and his home lot came into the possession of Ebenezer Ferry.<sup>1</sup>

An Appropriation for Schooling there.

Thirty-five years after its destruction, six families were living on the site of the former settlement, and about as many more resided in the entire Mountain District. It is probable no one lived at that time on the west side of Mt. Tom. This little hamlet was so distant from the center of the town that the children experienced great difficulty in attending school during the winter months. Their case was presented to the town in 1739, and an allowance of "12<sup>c</sup> per diem"

<sup>1</sup> For the names of the settlers at Pascommuck at the time of the Indian raid, see vol. 1, p. 495.

was voted for defraying the charge of schooling during the previous winter. It is probable that the school was kept at one of the farm-houses, as no school-house was built in that vicinity till 1772.

**Southampton made a Precinct.** In September of the same year, the question of setting off the new town, "as a distinct and separate precinct, so that by consent of the General Court they might be under a capacity to carry on the worship of God among themselves," came before the town. It was presented by an article in the warrant, in which the bounds of the proposed district were definitely defined. After suitable consideration, the request was granted, though the consent of the Legislature was not obtained till two years afterwards. In September, 1741, the new precinct was organized under an act of incorporation. During the succeeding ten years Northampton was divided into two precincts or parishes, each under the care of the minister selected by the residents therein. In all other matters the two villages were under the jurisdiction of the old town, and so continued till Southampton assumed municipal responsibilities for itself.

## CHAPTER VIII.

### SCHOOL LANDS—SCHOOLS—MILL CONTROVERSY.

**School Lands Sold.** THE land sequestered for schools in 1670, had been rented to individuals on long time leases. When these contracts expired in 1740, and the four succeeding years, the town voted to sell the land and invest the proceeds at interest. That portion of it lying between Bartlett's mill and Danks' Pond (Easthampton), was sold in 1741. A part of it was bought at private sale, at the appraisal of the committee, and the rest was sold at public auction. One portion, the lower meadow, was purchased by Joseph Wright Jr., for £62.16.8, and the other by Josiah Clark, for £38.13.4. The upper meadow was bought by Roger Clapp for his son Jonathan for £200. Mr. Clapp afterwards desired to be released from his bargain, and in 1742, it was sold to Jonathan Clapp for £187. Within two years the land above the mill was sold to Stephen Wright and Benjamin Lyman.<sup>1</sup> The money received from these sales, amounting to £1923.10, became the principal of a fund, the interest of which was expended yearly in maintaining the schools. It varied in amount with the fluctuations of the currency, and was loaned to individuals on good security. In 1753, it amounted to £2095, old tenor, equal to £297.6.8, in lawful money, the interest of which amounted to £16.15.12.

**The Minister's Woodpile.** Not only was considerable wood required to keep the minister's pot boiling, but occasional town action was equally necessary to keep the woodpile replenished. So great had become the delinquency in this respect that it became necessary, in 1740, to pass a vote limiting the time for bringing the pas-

<sup>1</sup> The lot is still owned by his descendants.

tor's fuel till "next Tuesday," and in case it was not then forthcoming, the whole amount needed, including what had already been furnished, was to be paid for from the town rate. In the face of such a vote it seems improbable that the quantity of wood furnished on the date mentioned would have been very large.

**Lower Grist-Mill  
Grant.**

In 1742, permission was granted to Samuel and Moses Kingsley and Samuel Marshall to set up a Grist-Mill on Mill River, against the rear of their home lots, if they would build it within two years. This location was on or near the site of the present lower mill (Lamb's wire mill), just above the South Street Boulevard Bridge. The Kingsleys lived on the south side of the river and Marshall on the north. As the mill was not completed within the time specified, the town extended the limit and gave permission to raise the dam to the height of seven feet.

**Lawsuit about the  
Mill.**

This led to a contention with the owners of the upper mill (now Maynard's Hoe Shop) in which the town became involved, and which was continued for more than thirty years. The mill was built, and had been in operation some fifteen years, when it was shut down and for some time remained "unimproved," on account of a suit for damages brought by the owners of the upper mill, against the Kingsleys. A committee was appointed by the town to investigate, and on the strength of their report, it was voted to "save the Kingsleys harmless against all actions and demands of the upper mill proprietors, provided they keep their mill in order and do not raise the water to a depth of over seven feet." In 1765, another suit was brought against the owners of the lower mills, on account of alleged damages caused by the flood of the previous year, which had set the water back so as to obstruct the working of the old mill. Arbitration was proposed but the Kingsleys refused to abide by it, claiming indemnity from the town. The case went before the court, and the Kingsleys recovered. In 1766, the town paid the amount awarded by the court and appointed a committee to arrange matters between the contending parties. This committee was instructed to fix an

“abiding monument” designating the height of the dam, and the Kingsleys were permitted to “dig in the river so as to bring the fall in the river below the bridge up to their dam.”

**The Controversy Continued.** For about nineteen years the matter was apparently settled, when the subject was again in agitation. The owners of the upper mill once more brought suit, and by mutual consent the controversy about the height of the dam was referred to arbitrators in 1786. Five years elapsed before the question was again opened, and then the town complained that the lower mill was not kept in proper condition. It had apparently been allowed to run down. In the meantime a change of proprietors had taken place, and in 1791, Daniel Pomeroy and Moses and Enos Kingsley built an entirely new dam, put in a new water-wheel, and new grinding and bolting machinery. When the new dam was completed, the selectmen and the proprietors of the mill placed an iron bar in the rock, thirty-six feet above it, by which to mark the height of the dam. This ended the contest.

**Controversy about the Common Lands Resumed.** Nearly thirty years had passed since the controversy about the common lands had been adjusted. It was seemingly acquiesced in for a time, but broke out again and blazed into fiercer intensity than before. This time it was a question of privilege, causing much bitterness of feeling and keeping the community in a constant turmoil. The dispute assumed such proportions in 1742, that a resort to legal measures became necessary. Once more the question turned upon the right of the general public to cut wood and timber upon pasture and unimproved commons. This right, expressly guaranteed in the division of 1684, seems to have been overlooked or purposely omitted in the readjustment of 1715. The matter came before the town at a meeting held January 11, 1743, when the following action was taken:—

“Whereas there hath been a Controversie long Subsisting between the Town & Proprietors respecting their Rights to the Undivided Lands Near the body of the Town.

"The Town Voted to Choose three wise, Judicious persons to advise between them with respect to their Right to the Lands above s<sup>d</sup> and also to their right of Cutting of wood, Timber, &c. on the Lots laid out.

"And that the assessors in raising a Town Tax for the defraying of the Charges of the Town, Shall make an additional Tax for the defraying the Charges of the Committee, that Shall be Chosen to advise between them & the proprietors in the Controversie respecting the Right of s<sup>d</sup> Lands.

"And the Town made choice of William Pitkin,<sup>1</sup> Joseph Fowler, and John Bulkley, Esq to advise between them & the Proprietors in the controversie afores<sup>d</sup>."

Ebenezer Pomeroy and Col. Timothy Dwight were appointed a committee to "take Speedy & Effectual Care that the Gentlemen before mentioned be here as Soon as may be," & that they also "provide for their Entertainment at the Cost & Charge of the Town." Major Pomeroy and Capt. John Clark were appointed a committee "to provide an Attorney at the Cost & Charge of the Town to manage the Cause on the behalf of the Town & to defend their Right before the Gentlemen Chosen to advise."

Benjamin Alvord was at once dispatched to notify the above named persons of the action of the town, and arrange the preliminaries of the meeting. Undoubtedly the case was duly presented, and although the record remains silent concerning the proceedings or decision of the arbitrators, there is every reason to believe that the annexed vote, passed the following year, was based upon and embodies the result of their deliberations:—

"At a Legal Town Meeting (by adjournment) on Tuesday the twenty Second of Nov. 1743 The Town of Northampton then Voted that a Line be run from the front of the Long Division (at the Bridge by Hulbert's Saw mill) West by the Needle of the Surveying Instrument three Quarters of a mile and from thence a Line be run North Six degrees East to Hatfield bounds, and South Six degrees West to the South Side of the long Division: and that Another Line be Run parallel to the former at a Mile & half distance West from the former; between which two Lines they propose to Cut wood and timber for the Space of ten years Next Coming and they then further Voted to Quit, Release and relinquish to the respective Proprietors of the Long Division their Right & Liberty and pretence of right and liberty to Cut wood and timber in the remaining part of S<sup>d</sup> Division (viz) to the East of the first of s<sup>d</sup> Parallel Lines, and West of the Second, and also their Right and Liberty of Cutting Spruce or White Pine (as 'tis Sometimes Called) between S<sup>d</sup> Parallel Lines, which right they Challenged by a Vote made

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Pitkin, it will be remembered, was one of the persons applied to by the town twenty-seven years before, for advice regarding the legality of a former division of the commona.—See vol. 1, p. 546.

Oct. 10<sup>th</sup> : 1684. They then Voted to Quit, release & relinquish to the Proprietors of the respective Lotts all their Right and Liberty to Cut wood & timber in that Division called the little Division lying between Sandy Hill and Munhan River; and likewise in that Division Called the Mountain Division which right they Challenge by a Vote made Oct. 10<sup>th</sup>, 1684.

“ At the Same time they Voted to Quit, release and relinquish to the Proprietors all the right & liberty the Town have to cut wood or timber in the Land now Called the Inner Commons, and that land lying between the Mountain Division and Munhan river and Connecticut River and also in that Tract of Land lying between the long Division and the Additional Grant made to the Town of Northampton and between the road that goes from Munhan River towards Westfield and at the West bounds of the Town of Northampton which right they Challenge by a Vote of s<sup>d</sup> Town made Oct. 10<sup>th</sup>, 1684.”

**Settled for a Decade and the Expenses thereof.** Who, if any one, was employed by the town as attorney to appear before the arbitrators, is nowhere named, but the sum of £50.2.7 was paid for the expenses of the committee, and probably included the amount paid to the referees. Benjamin Alvord also received £6.6.7 for his services as messenger. This action settled the question for the time being, and was the cause of much rejoicing among the people.<sup>1</sup> But the settlement was limited to ten years, and then the question came up again, as fresh as ever.

**The Dispute again Waxes Hot.** It was brought forward at the annual meeting held March 5, 1754, by an article in the warrant “ relating to the Comon lands not included in the Divisions of Comons made before s<sup>d</sup> year 1700, and antient highways.” The article was not reached till the afternoon session, which opened at two o’clock. An animated discussion arose which was prolonged for several days. It was continued till nightfall of the first day, when the meeting was adjourned till the next morning at nine o’clock. Then the town “ reassumed the dispute,” and from nine to twelve o’clock and from two till sundown, it was continued, when a further adjourn-

<sup>1</sup> In regard to this settlement, Mr. Edwards, writing in 1743, says:—“ And it is a thing greatly to be rejoiced in that the people very lately have come to an agreement and final issue, with respect to their grand controversy, relating to their common lands; which has been, above any other particular thing, a source of mutual prejudices, jealousies, & debates, for fifteen or sixteen years past.”—Tracy’s Great Awakening, p. 200.

ment was had till Monday, the 11<sup>th</sup>. Throughout another day the forensic battle raged before a vote was reached. Then

"the question was put Whether the Town would assert their right to all the lands within the bounds of the Town of Northampton which are not included in those divisions which the Comons were distributed into & which were divided before the year 1700 as well as those lands called Inward Comons as any other, and it passed in the affirmative. Then the Question was put Whether the Town would assert their right to those parts of the antient highways within the bounds of s<sup>d</sup> Town which parts have been of late years discontinued and left out by the reducing and narrowing of s<sup>d</sup> Ways, since the original laying out of the same, and it passed in the affirmative."

A committee was chosen to devise some method of dividing the lands.

*Suits Ordered to  
Recover these  
Lands.*

On the 26<sup>th</sup> of March, the town voted to commence suits to recover all the lands alluded to in the above votes, "Some persons having of late years as the Town apprehends, without right entered into and taken possession of some parts of s<sup>d</sup> land." Joseph Hawley and Ebenezer Hunt were chosen agents to carry out the vote. In May they were ordered to proceed in the matter of the trespassers, in case they should be advised thereto by the "Learned in the Law."

*Action for Trespass  
Against Timothy  
Dwight.*

In August, an attempt was made to revoke the above vote, but without success. Evidently the "Learned in the Law" advised that the town had a good case against the trespassers, and an action was commenced in September to recover from Timothy Dwight a tract of land in the northeast part of the town, between the county road to Hatfield and the Connecticut River. It contained fifty-two and three quarters acres, was fenced and described as a sheep pasture. The decision of the lower court was in favor of the defendant, but the town appealed the case to the Superior Court, which reversed the former verdict, and gave the plaintiffs possession of the land together with costs of court. The next year the town refused to give Dwight a title to the premises, but in 1756, when the case came again before the court, on a plea of ejectment, the parties agreed that the former judgment should be reversed and no costs granted.

This land was undoubtedly one of those tracts which had been sequestered in 169<sup>8</sup> for a sheep pasture, and had been appropriated by Mr. Dwight.

A Final Adjustment  
of the Common  
Land Controversy. In 1756, another and successful attempt was made to dispose of the vexed question concerning the rights of the public in the common lands. The previous arrangement had been limited to ten years, and when that time expired, the problem still remained in part unsettled. A committee was chosen to:

"concert some Terms of Settlement and accommodation of the long disputes and controversies between the Town of Northampton and those who claim the undivided lands of the town commonly called the Inward Commons, as Proprietors or Tenants in common respecting of right & Title to s<sup>4</sup> commons, then proceeded to choose M<sup>r</sup> Joseph Hawley, M<sup>r</sup> Noah Clark, Dea. Eben Hunt, Lt. Gideon Lyman, Ena Josiah Pomeroy, Col. Tim. Dwight, Capt. Noah Wright, Lt. Caleb Strong, Dea. Supply Kingsley," as the committee.

On the 26<sup>th</sup> of March this committee made their report. They proposed that within the compass of two parallel lines, two miles apart, running north and south across the first division, the first or most easterly one, three quarters of a mile west of Hulbert's Sawmill, and the other two miles west of it, for the space of ten years, all or any of the inhabitants of Northampton, should have the right to cut and carry away wood and timber of all sorts except white pine. The town was to release and quitclaim all title to lands in the inner commons and other parts of the town, excepting lands appropriated for highways. After considerable debate and one or two adjournments, the town adopted substantially the report of the committee, and also quitclaimed its right and title to lands in the several divisions, except such as were reserved for highway purposes, after ten years had expired. This decision seems to have put an end forever to this much debated question, and no further allusion to it is to be found upon the records.

Land Granted to  
Southampton. Five hundred acres of land were granted to the new Precinct in 1743; three hundred acres of which were to enable the inhabitants to settle a minister and two hundred in "lieu" of

their proportion of lands sequestered for the ministry by the first Precinct. This land was situated on the "back side of White Loaf Hills," an elevation four hundred eighty feet in altitude in the extreme southeastern section of the town.

**New Schools Established.**

During the same year, the question of providing an assistant schoolmaster or making provision for schooling children in the "remote parts of the Town," "Considering that the Children Are Very Numerous," was acted upon. In accordance therewith, schools were established on the "Plain," above the cemetery, and on South Street. These schools were to be in session four months each, as a winter term, and the teachers were allowed £15 each. The next year £130 were raised for school purposes, to which was added the income of the money due the town for the school land lately sold. Of this amount £30 were to be used in the remote parts of the town, and the remainder for the support of the Grammar School. During the succeeding year £30, in bills of credit, old tenor, were appropriated to be "improved" in hiring English Schoolmasters in the "extreme parts of the town." From this time onward these schools were continued, and as the town increased in population others were added. Within five years schools had been established at Pascommuck, Bartlett's Mills, and in the second Precinct.

**Dogs Prohibited from running at Large.**

The impossibility of successfully maintaining intact flocks of sheep, in the face of a constantly increasing colony of dogs, impressed itself upon the community from time to time, and in 1744 the canine nuisance became so intolerable that drastic measures were prescribed for its abatement. No dog was allowed to go at large "out of the Custody, keeping or Sight of his master or owner, or the keeper, anywhere within the Limits of the s<sup>t</sup> Town," under a penalty of 20s. A committee of ten persons, called "informers of the breach of the Law," was chosen, and steps were taken to confer with Hatfield and Hadley for the enactment of a similar by-law "for the encouragement of keeping sheep."

**Infringements upon the Highways again Dealt with.** Notwithstanding the efforts to prevent them, encroachments upon the highways could not be entirely prevented, and in 1744 another attempt was made to bring them to an end. The roads were reported to be in many places narrow and encumbered with buildings and fences. In several instances the town had granted abutters certain rights in the highways. Encouraged apparently by this liberality, others seem to have appropriated without authority similar privileges. An order was adopted to search out and report all such offenders, but the result was not made known.

**An Unfriendly Vote.** The unfortunate controversy with Rev. Mr. Edwards, which resulted in his dismissal, originated in events which occurred during this year, and the following vote, of slight importance in itself, seems to indicate that an unfriendliness towards him prevailed to some extent early in 1744. At a town-meeting held on the 5<sup>th</sup> of March, "The question was put whether the Town will pay the Charge of bringing Mr. Edwards, his daughter from Brookfield, & it passed in the negative." This is all that is known concerning this vote; there is no explanation of it either upon the records or in contemporaneous documents. Why the town should have been requested to pay this expense, or why there should have been any occasion for it, is nowhere shown. There may of course, have been reasons for such a decision other than dissatisfaction with the pastor, and it is hardly conceivable that so much feeling should have been manifested at this early stage of the affair. But in view of the fact that considerable money had been paid in former years to persons for "waiting on Mr. Edwards" when he traveled, it seems somewhat inconsistent, to say the least, that this slight demand should have been denied.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> In May, 1743, Mr. Edwards went to Boston, to attend a convention of the clergy. He went on horseback, and his eldest daughter, Sarah, on a pillion behind him. Whether through illness, or some other mishap, she was left behind at Brookfield, on their return, so that extra transportation was required, has not been ascertained, but it may be surmised that something of the kind occurred, which gave rise to this appeal.

**A Workhouse in  
Agitation.**

Forty years before this date an Almshouse had been provided, but for many years it had ceased to exist. Paupers were cared for in the families of their relatives, or others, who were paid for the service. In 1745, a movement was made to determine the expediency of "building a proper and Convenient Work House, to Set Idle and poor people to Work." John Stoddard, Ebenezer Pomeroy, and Timothy Dwight were appointed to consider the matter and report. Probably the people were not quite ready for such an experiment. The committee made no report that is now extant, and the subject was not again brought before the town.

**Unruly Youth to  
be Inspected.**

Great annoyance was experienced by the good people of Northampton on account of the unruly and unlawful proceedings of the youth of the town. Damage was constantly perpetrated upon the school buildings and the meeting-house; the school wood was burned at unseemly hours, and misdemeanors seemed to multiply. Undoubtedly the young men would gather at the school-house evenings to cultivate sociability at the expense of the town woodpile. Disorder in the meeting-house, on Sunday, seemed impossible of prevention, and it became so troublesome in 1745, as to call forth the following vote:—

"The Town being Sensible of the Irreverent and Disorderly behaviour of many of the young people and Children In the House of God in the time of publick Worship, and at the Same meeting made Choice of Ena. John Clapp, Gideon Henderson, Caleb Strong, and Elisha Pomeroy, to Inspect the behaviour of the young people and Children In time of publick Worship and to prosecute them for their Irreverent and disorderly behaviour, and voted at the Same time the Inspectors have power to order such disorderly persons to Sit in Such places in the meeting House in the time of publick Worship as they Shall think proper."

Tithing-men apparently had little authority over the naughty boys and girls in the congregation. This vote seems to have inaugurated a new class of Sunday officers, which in a few years became dignified by the name of "Sabbath Wardens," and who were provided with a badge of office similar to that carried by tithing-men.

Certain pews in the gallery were set apart for the youth,

and behind the high enclosure much mischief was carried on during Sunday services. One method of diversion was to cut and hack the woodwork with penknives, and many a hole was made, through which the youngsters peered or held communication with their fellows.

Death-rate for Three Years. From 1745 to 1748, much sickness prevailed throughout the town, and many deaths occurred. The family of Samuel Clarke was sorely afflicted. In 1745, four children from twenty-five to twenty-nine years of age, died within four months. By his will, made in March of that year, he distributed a large estate to four sons and seven daughters. Within a twelvemonth only two sons and five daughters were living, and one of the latter died in 1747. Samuel Clarke died at the age of fifty-seven years. He was a great grandson of William Clarke Sr. He was twice married and had fourteen children, of whom only six were living in 1748. A stone was placed at his grave, on which were chiseled the following lines:—

“Awful is the command but just,  
That bids these five lie slumbering in the dust,  
Father and four children, all in their bloom  
Within four months were seated in the tomb.  
Each died in hope, each here in silence lies,  
Till the last trump shall bid them rise.”

In 1745, there were thirty-nine deaths registered; in 1746, thirty-two; in 1747, twenty-seven; and in 1748, forty-three. The entire population of the town at that time, was about one thousand, probably a little less.

## CHAPTER IX.

### KING GEORGE'S FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR.

Indian Trade so  
llicted. FOR nearly twenty years, the peace arranged with the eastern Indians in 1726, remained unbroken. During its continuance constant efforts were made to conciliate the natives and open trade with them. Many Indians resided in the towns, between whom and the inhabitants, the most amicable relations existed. A truck-house had been established at Fort Dummer, or rather that fortification had been used as a trading station ; several houses for the Indians had been provided by the government, and considerable trade was carried on with the different tribes. Capt. Joseph Kellogg, who had been in command there for some years, was appointed Truck-master. Meanwhile the English had been pushing out into the wilderness, wherever an opportunity offered. Settlements had been established to the northward in Vermont and New Hampshire, and were climbing the mountain ranges of Western Massachusetts. Hampshire County then included the entire section of the Province westward from the county of Worcester, and embraced within its limits all the territory now comprising the four counties of Hampshire, Franklin, Hampden, and Berkshire.

War Declared. Though England and Spain had been in open conflict for years, no material effect had been produced upon the amicable relations of the colonies. It was not till 1744, when continental complications brought on a rupture between France and England, that the American continent felt the shock. War was declared by France in March, and was speedily followed by a counter proclamation of hostilities on the part of Great Britain.

This was the fifth war in which the colony had been engaged, and the third in which the French sought the aid of their Indian allies. Louis XV. was King of France and George II. King of England.

**Capture of Canso.** While the condition of affairs was known in Canada in April, intelligence of the declaration of war was not received in Boston till a month later. Canada, anticipating hostilities, was prompt to take advantage of the first intimation that peace no longer existed, and a body of troops dispatched from Louisburg captured Canso, before tidings that hostilities had commenced reached Boston. Annapolis was threatened, but immediate action on the part of Gov. Shirley, saved it from attack.

**War Preparations Commenced in Massachusetts.** Forecasting a "speedy rupture" between France and England, the General Court commenced preparations to meet it in November, 1743. Money was appropriated for the "defence of" certain of the more exposed towns in the eastern section of the Province, though New Salem in Hampshire, as well as other towns in Worcester County, were among them. An act was also passed for the enlistment of ten companies of fifty men each in Maine and Massachusetts, for the defence of the frontiers. These men were to constitute a force of minute men, enlisted for the war, ready to start at the shortest notice. Each man was to provide himself with "a pair of snow-shoes, a pair of moggisons & hatchet," for which he was to receive 10s. Three of these companies were assigned to Hampshire County. In January following, Col. John Stoddard, Eleazar Porter, and Israel Williams, were designated by the Governor to suggest the names of fit persons for their officers. For the company from this section these men were proposed:—Seth Pomeroy, Captain; Supply Kingsley, Lieutenant; and John Clap, Ensign, all of Northampton. No muster-roll of this company has been discovered, and it is not probable that any military organization thus officered was ever formed. They were termed "snow shoe men," but it is doubtful if they ever entered the service in that capacity.

Capt. Pomeroy, however, commanded a company the next year, but its field of operations was remote from Massachusetts.

**A Commission on De-  
fences Appointed.**

When war became a certainty, additional methods of defence were provided by the authorities, designed more especially to command the customary lines of Indian travel across the frontiers, from the northward. It was decided to establish a series of forts, about five and a half miles distant from each other, westward to the boundaries of New York. A commission consisting of Col. Stoddard, Col. Partridge, and John Leonard, was appointed to carry these orders into effect. Col. Stoddard was the working man of the commission, and under his supervision, the fortifications were designed, located and built.

**Fortifications Con-  
structed.**

Fort Dummer, erected in 1724, by Lieut. Timothy Dwight of Northampton, having been thoroughly repaired after its destruction by fire,<sup>1</sup> was now more formidable than ever. In order to carry out the intentions of this commission it was necessary first to establish a military line on which to erect the blockhouses. Early in July, Lieut. Timothy Dwight, now Col. Dwight, was instructed to survey a line in accordance with general orders, "from Colrain to the Dutch settlements." This was promptly done, and on the 24<sup>th</sup> of the month, orders were issued to Capt. William Williams of Hatfield, for the erection of a fort in the town of Heath, which was named Fort Shirley, in honor of the Governor of the Province. Another fort was built in the town of Rowe, and named Fort Pelham, but it was not completed

1 On the 15<sup>th</sup> of January, 1738, 9 o'clock at night, fire broke out in the room adjoining the magazine at Fort Dummer, and Capt. Kellogg, fearing the fire would soon reach the powder, ordered all the people immediately to leave the fort (after trying in vain to put out the fire), before his orders could be executed the powder blew up and scattered the fire all over the fort, and in a short time it was all consumed, with the stores of war, goods for the Indian trade, and all that belonged to the officers and soldiers, except the clothes they had on. Loss from £6,000 to £7,000.—Boston Evening Post, 1738.

The fort was probably rebuilt by Capt. Kellogg the ensuing year. It was commanded by Capt. Josiah Willard in 1740, who complained that it was in a "defenceless condition." He says that the garrison will put things in a posture for defence and erect two bastions if government will allow him a carpenter and provide nails, iron and boards. These bastions were built in 1741, and a line of pickets twenty feet high, set around the fort.

till the following spring. During that summer a third fortification was erected in the town of Adams, beyond Hoosack mountain, and named Fort Massachusetts. This finished the line of defenses ordered and paid for by the Province. Other means of safety were adopted, and houses were fortified and mounts built in Vernon, Bernardston, Colrain, Charlemont and Charlestown. West of the mountain similar works were constructed at Pittsfield, Stockbridge, and Sheffield. These were built, some at private cost, and others by the towns in which they were situated. Generally the town fortifications were used as places of refuge for the inhabitants in times of sudden assault. In cases of imminent danger they were garrisoned by the Province troops or volunteers paid by the government.

**Commanding Officers in Hampshire County.** Col. John Stoddard succeeded to the command in this county, on the death of Col.

Samuel Partridge, which occurred in 1740.

He also had charge of the frontier defenses. Capt. Ephraim Williams of Hatfield, was entrusted with the oversight of the western line of fortifications, with headquarters at Fort Massachusetts, and Major Israel Williams of Hatfield, was appointed commissary of the Western Department.

**Soldiers and Dogs were Enlisted, but no Fighting Occurred.**

Five hundred soldiers were ordered to be raised in 1744, two hundred of whom were to be sent to the western frontiers. Constant scouting was carried on from the forts, under the supervision of Capt. Williams. Dogs were pressed into the service, and accompanied many of the scouting parties, but evidently they did not accomplish all that was anticipated. Abundant signs of the enemy were discovered, but no collision occurred, and no assault was made by the Indians in this section. It is not known that any Northampton men were engaged in this campaign. Undoubtedly some of them enlisted, and were employed in the duties already named, but no company from this town appears among the muster-rolls. During the year both sides were engaged in preparations for the conflict. The burden of building the fortifications and scouting fell upon

the militia from the northern section of the county, as very few troops, if any, were sent from the east. A company of soldiers from a Worcester regiment was sent to Northampton, and ordered to do duty on the frontiers in the summer. The French, in the meantime, were organizing their Indian allies, in readiness to take the field the following year.

**The Town Adopts a New Method of Defence.** While the battle was afar the people of Northampton remained inactive. Ordinary precautions were undoubtedly taken, but no systematic defensive measures were entered upon till the latter part of the year 1745. The system of fortifications adopted in former years was no longer tenable, even if in existence. A new method better adapted to existing conditions of warfare, had been devised. It was not till December that the matter was brought before the town for action, though it must have formed a topic for general discussion throughout the year. It was then decided by a "great majority that something should be done to fortify themselves against the enemy," and a vote was passed to make "mounts and fortifications." The whole matter was put into the "custody" of a committee who were instructed to report on "Wednesday next." Accordingly on the 25<sup>th</sup> of December, the committee offered their suggestions. They concluded "that for the present 'tis not best to do any more than to make mounts and flankers according to the Inclinations of those that are to be defended by them," and that it was not expedient to do anything "by way of publick Tax or Expense." They also proposed that the town should be "divided into proper Squadrons & that Each Squadron fort Such Houses and in Such manner as they think best for themselves." Fifteen squadrons were proposed by the committee, and the limits of each district defined. This action of the town seems to have been unsatisfactory, and it was never carried out. Probably the most unpopular feature of the proposition, was that which had reference to the manner of paying the expense. As these squadrons evidently formed the groundwork of the plan of fortifications adopted the next year, they are copied in full:—

"The squadrons the committee propose should be as followeth, viz: That the people on the South Side of Mill River be divided into 3 Squadrons." This occupied the entire length of South Street.

"And the People Up the plain be divided into two Squadrons, taking in Ensign Gideon Lyman." This one included the upper part of Bridge and North Streets.

"Another Squadron to be from Dea. Pomeroy's & John Briggs at the East End of the Wid' Abigail Parsons & the Wid' of Eben' Alvord at the other End." This was probably the lower part of Bridge and the upper part of Hawley Streets.

"Another to be from Noah Strong's taking all that Street." This included the lower portion of Hawley Street.

"And the other from the medlow Gate up to Benjamin Bartlet's." This was the lower end of Pleasant Street.

"Another to be from Judd's & Henderson's on both Sides of the Street to Capt Moses Lyman's, taking in Moses Wright's family and Caleb Strong's." This covered the rest of Pleasant Street to Main.

"Another from Edward Baker's & Sanl Alvord's to Elisha Pomeroy's & m' Jeriah Strong's, taking in Serg' Waitstill Strong & Serg' Hunt'a." This included Meeting House Hill, Main Street and South Street to the river.

"Another Squadron to be from Israel Rusts, to Samuel Marshalls and to Ens. Josiah Clark's & his Brother Increase and down to Maj' Pomeroy'a." In this was embraced the western half of Meeting House Hill, Main to West, and Elm Streets to the Episcopal Church.

"& another from the Wid' Sarah Clarks & Lt. Hunt's Up to Eben' Clark, Jr. and Moses Clark'a." This comprised the remainder of Elm Street.

"& Another from John Alvord's down to the Wid' Millers and up to Mark Warners on both Sides of the way." This one extended along Prospect Street and included "Black Pole."

"Another from Hope Roots on both Sides of the way down to Samuel Allens taking in L'. Benj' Sheldons and Eben' Kentfield." In this was included the upper portion of King Street.

"Another Squadron to be from Serg' Joseph Allen's to Lt. John Miller's taking the back Street from John Strong's & Sam' Clessons down to Ithamar Clarka." In this was included the lower section of King Street, extending to Market.

"Josiah Parsons hath determined to be by himSelf as we Are Informed." He lived on Market Street, his lot extending to the cemetery.

Mounts Ordered to  
be Built.

In the following May an order was adopted to build "mounts or places to watch and ward" in different parts of the town. They were constructed of hewn timber, were about "8 foot Square," & a floor to Stand Upon about Six or Seven foot from the ground, were covered overhead with boards so as

to "Secure the watch and Ward from Rain," and to be "Speedily Effected at the Cost and Charge of the town."

"The Town then voted to make Some mounts and adjoining to the Houses they are made at and So to be made in the body of the Town and to be places Convenient to fight in; and the Houses where the mounts are made at, to be places of Refuge for the Women & Children to Resort to in Case of an Alarm."

A committee was appointed to determine the respective places where these mounts should be built, and what houses should be fortified in the several squadrons of the town. In September still further action was taken and "flankers and fortifications were ordered to be made with boards or piquets."<sup>1</sup>

Remote Places  
Fortified.

This work was entered upon at once, and before winter set in the town must have presented somewhat the appearance of a military camp, with mounts and picketed houses in every direction. As nearly as can be ascertained at least thirteen of these structures were erected. The vote in May directed that mounts should be built in the "remote parts of the town." One of them was to be placed near Eliakim Clark's house, on the south side of Mill River. There is no record of any fortification at Clark's house, and this one was undoubtedly constructed at the house of Roger Clapp, afterwards known as the Warham Clapp property. The lot is now owned by C. N. Clark, Esq. Another was to be built "in the street near Moses Clark's house." He lived on Elm Street, in the section since known as "New Boston." From accounts rendered it is shown to have been built "at the end of the town by Mr. Hunt's" and must have been near the homesteads of the late Luther Bodman and S. E. Bridgman, then owned by Joseph Hunt. A third was to be placed "in the street near Mark Warner's house," at "Black Pole," near the upper end of Prospect Street, and in the vicinity of the present "Poor House," a short distance west of that building on the opposite side of the street. Still another was placed "in the Street between Hope Root's House and Eben' Miller's house." This was

<sup>1</sup> The pickets were to be six inches in diameter, nine and one half feet long, sharpened at the upper end, set eighteen inches in the ground, and fastened by a rib extending across about midway, pinned to each picket.

on King Street, a short distance south of the old Catholic Church. The above list comprises all that were built in what was designated as the "remote parts of the town."

**Mounts Erected near  
the Center.**

Another committee was chosen at the same time to "build some mounts in the body of the town." They had complete control of the work, both as regards location and erection, but seem to have followed in regard to position, the suggestions of the first committee, and placed them within the limits assigned to the proposed squadrons. Under their direction mounts were established at the following places: at Mr. Stoddard's house on Prospect Street, now H. R. Hinckley's; two near Joseph Bartlett's house, in the vicinity of the residence of the late Wm. R. Clapp, on Pleasant Street; another at Capt. Preserved Clapp's on Pleasant Street, near the junction of River Street; one at Rev. Jonathan Edwards' homestead on King Street, now the property of Chas. E. Stevens; another at the house of Lieut. Parsons, on Bridge Street, near the homestead of John W. Hubbard; one at Capt. Joseph Wright's, on Bridge Street, on the homestead of the late J. S. Lathrop. Similar structures were also built at Ebenezer Wright's, on Bridge Street, in the vicinity of the house of the late James Wright, and at John Miller's on King Street, not far from the house of the late Geo. L. Loomis, but for some reason the town refused to pay for them, probably because they were built without the sanction of the committee. To build the fortifications in the outer districts, committees were appointed consisting of persons living in that immediate vicinity. In the body of the town the work was done by the general committee, or by persons appointed by them. The old fort at Pascommuck, which had already sustained one Indian attack, was put in complete repair.

**Cost of these Mounts.  
No Rum used in  
their Construction.**

These forts or mounts, fourteen in number, twelve of which were paid for out of the town treasury, comprise all the work accomplished in that line during the war. They cost about £360, which includes charges for wood consumed by the soldiers who kept the "court of guard," and the pay of the

committee men. All the items which entered into the expense of constructing these forts are enumerated in the original bills, and they are still on file, but curiously enough, rum is nowhere mentioned. When a meeting-house, a school-house, or a bridge was built, rum was an important factor, and was treated as an ordinary expense. But here was work extending through the summer, and into the winter, and no stimulant seems to have been provided by the town. If any was used the workmen furnished it themselves. After peace was declared the forts were demolished, and the materials sold for £63. They were the last defensive structures ever built or needed in the town.

Casualties of the Year. During the year 1745, the Indians committed no depredation within this county. No

attack was made upon any town in it, and no citizen of Northampton was killed or wounded by them. Indians were constantly lurking in the woods along the frontiers, as well as near the upper settlements, and gave ample employment to the troops stationed at the block-houses. The entire list of casualties for the year was confined within the limits of what now comprises the State of Vermont. Their first appearance was at Putney, in June, when William Phipps, who was hoeing corn, was captured by a couple of them. When they reached the woods Phipps knocked one of them down with a hoe, and seizing his gun, shot the other. Coming upon three more of the enemy soon after, he was killed and scalped. Within a few days, Josiah Fisher was killed at Keene. On October 11<sup>th</sup>, Nehemiah How was taken at Great Meadow, where he resided, fourteen miles above Fort Dummer. About three miles above this point, David Rugg was shot and killed while in a canoe with Robert Baker, coming down the river, but Baker escaped to the bank. The Indians with How, crossed the lake to Crown Point. He saw Amrusus, the husband of Eunice Williams. The French lieutenant at the fort was named Ballock; he had been a prisoner at Boston, and had visited Northampton and vicinity. How reached Quebec, October 29<sup>th</sup>, eighteen days after his capture, and was imprisoned with other captives. He died

in Canada within two years. A vigorous pursuit of this band of marauders by soldiers from Fort Dummer and volunteers from Deerfield and Northampton, failed of success. Numerous alarms kept the soldiers on the alert, and the campaign, though devoid of actual fighting, was by no means a holiday excursion.

## CHAPTER X.

### KING GEORGE'S FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR.

#### *Louisburg and its Fortress.*

By far the most brilliant feat of the war was accomplished during its second year. Louisburg, the strongest fortress on the continent, was captured after a siege of forty-seven days, by a handful of raw recruits, without discipline, poorly equipped, and commanded by a merchant of Kittery. Twenty-five years had been consumed, and thirty million Livres expended by the French government in strengthening the place, after the system of Vauban. The city occupied a tongue of land standing out between the harbor and the sea. For a distance of twelve hundred yards on the landward side, across the neck, extended these formidable fortifications. The rampart of earth, thirty feet high, faced with solid masonry, was sixty feet wide and from thirty to thirty-six feet deep. Embrasures were provided for one hundred forty-eight cannon, but only a part of them were mounted when the siege commenced. On the shore, about a mile above the city, facing the entrance to the harbor, was the Royal or "Grand Battery," defended by many heavy guns.

#### *Gov. Shirley's Prop. osition.*

Encouraged by reports representing the garrison as small, insufficiently supplied with food, and on the verge of mutiny, Gov. Shirley conceived the idea that this stronghold might be surprised and captured by a moderately sized army. In January he laid the proposition before the General Court, with a request that the matter should not be made public. But the undertaking was deemed altogether too formidable, and could not be entertained. When the design accident-

ally became known, however, it met with such great favor among the people, that the Governor, sustained by a number of petitions from some of the sea-coast towns, again brought the subject before the Legislature, and after considerable debate, the expedition was sanctioned by a majority of one vote.

**The Expedition  
Organized.**

William Pepperell, of Kittery, Me., a trader, who had received scarcely any military training whatever, was chosen commander-in-chief, with Roger Wolcott of Connecticut, as second in command. An attempt was made to interest all the colonies in the enterprise, but with scant success. New England furnished all the troops; New York voted £3,000, and Gov. Clinton sent in addition a quantity of provisions raised by private subscription, and loaned ten eighteen-pound guns; New Jersey contributed £2,000, but declined to send any men; and Pennsylvania voted £4,000 to purchase stores. Massachusetts provided much the largest contingent, sending three thousand two hundred fifty men, while Connecticut was represented by five hundred sixteen, and New Hampshire by three hundred four. So tardy was Rhode Island that her soldiers arrived too late to participate in the siege.

**It Proved Quite  
Popular.**

Throughout Massachusetts this expedition was so well received, that more men enlisted than were required, and several companies were refused. The capture of Louisburg has been so many times and so minutely described, that there is little occasion to recall its incidents, except so far as to chronicle to some extent, the part taken in it by citizens of Northampton and vicinity. Fortunately there exists for this purpose a mine of valuable information in the Journal and Letters of Gen. Seth Pomeroy; the former will be given in full, and the latter drawn upon to elucidate the narrative.

**And was soon Ready  
to Sail.**

Great care was exercised to keep the enemy in ignorance of the projected movement, and in the official correspondence of the time it is only vaguely alluded to as "the expedi-

tion." Enlistments were speedily effected, and the army was gathered and embarked in less than two months. Several companies were raised in Hampshire County, two sailing with the first fleet, and another going later when reinforcements were forwarded. In February, Seth Pomeroy of Northampton (then Major), as Col. Stoddard says, was "beating up for men in the upper part of the county," and in a short time he had enlisted a company of fifty men, though Stoddard says that he was "provoked (when we mustered) to see how few appeared after so much pretension to List." In this company were fifteen men from Northampton, nine from Hatfield, six from Deerfield, three from Hadley, two from Northfield, and twelve whose residence cannot now be determined. To make up the number named above, three names are wanting; undoubtedly they failed to pass muster.

**Hampshire County Officers.** The 4<sup>th</sup> Massachusetts Regiment, to which the Hampshire Company enlisted in this section was attached, was commanded by Col. Samuel Willard; Seth Pomeroy held the office of Major as well as that of Captain of the 3<sup>d</sup> company; Thomas Chandler was Lieut.-Colonel and Captain of the 2<sup>d</sup> company. Gen. Joseph Dwight of Brookfield was appointed Brigadier-General and had command of the 9<sup>th</sup> Regiment. He was Colonel of a train of artillery, of which Joseph Hawley<sup>1</sup> of Northampton was Chaplain.<sup>2</sup> Another company enlisted from the frontier garrisons by Capt. William Williams, which was sent to reinforce the army, but did not arrive till the city had surrendered, contained the names of a number of Northampton men on its muster-roll.

**An Anti-Catholic Crusade.** Believed by the people to be mainly anti-Catholic in its design, the expedition was regarded as under the especial protection of Providence. Hence in every hamlet and town prayers were constantly offered in its behalf. Northampton was not behindhand in this pious fervor, nor were her soldiers

<sup>1</sup> Perry's Williamstown, p. 94.

<sup>2</sup> Mr. Hawley's commission as Chaplain is dated March 22, 1744.

left in ignorance of the fact. Mary Pomeroy in a letter to her husband, dated May 27<sup>th</sup>, says :

"The whole town is much moved with concern for the expedition, how Providence will order the affair, for which religious meetings every week in town are maintained." Under date of June 11<sup>th</sup>, Ebenezer Pomeroy, father of Major Seth, writes :— "I would inform you and your soldiers that God in his Providence has stirred up a remarkable spirit of prayer in this city, for victory in this grand expedition and I hear also throughout the land, for in this town the parents and some other relatives of those gone in the expedition, have constantly set apart some time every week to pray to God for success in this grand affair and we have good reason to believe that it hath not been in vain ; for God hath in a very remarkable manner smiled upon the fleet and army."

**Major Pomeroy's Company.** The company of Major Pomeroy was

crowded into the small fishing vessels, ninety of which were required to transport the troops. On the 24<sup>th</sup> of March, the fleet set sail from Nantasket roads and soon encountered a severe storm, with the usual consequences to landsmen. But though they weathered the storm in safety, the fleet was scattered. After buffeting the waves for nearly two weeks, narrowly escaping shipwreck, the little vessels containing the Hampshire soldiers entered the harbor of Canseau, about fifty miles from Louisburg, where they found a number of transports belonging to the expedition, at anchor. Here in a few days the entire fleet was concentrated, and here it was compelled to remain till the last of April, waiting for the ice to break up in the harbor of Louisburg.

**The Voyage of the Hampshire Company.**

Concerning the voyage of Major Pomeroy and his company, the commander in his first home letter, dated April 6<sup>th</sup>, gives the annexed account, by which it will be seen that the major, whatever may have been the case with the soldiers, had a very severe attack of seasickness :—

"Yesterday arrived safe at camp, which was the 14<sup>th</sup> day since we embarked and 13 of the days sea sick in the highest degree, 24 hours often without one mouthful of meat. \* \* \* All strong drink, the smell of which was more than I could bear, was an abomination to me, and if any body ever died with sea sickness I believe I should if it had continued a little while longer. We are now in a good harbour and I

feel much better. How long we shall stay here I cannot tell. Our fleet are not all arrived yet, but counted yesterday 68 sail of vessels at anchor in this harbour."

The soldiers did not wholly escape the malady which prostrated their superior officer, but he was in no condition to aid or sympathize with them while on ship-board ; however, when once in camp and restored to health, he looked to their wants.

"My company," he writes, "are all in health with good appetites and our Provisions are good and very plenty and their daily allowance is sufficient for each, so nobody can complain." Again on the 19<sup>th</sup>, he alludes to the general health of the army. He says: "It is very remarkable in the army that they have their health in so great a degree, considering the great difficulty of lodging on board vessels and no fires to dry their wet clothes. In my company not a man ill above 2 or 3 days at a time except sea sickness."

*The Fleet sets Sail for Louisburg.* On the 29<sup>th</sup> of April, the fleet sailed from Canseau harbor and the next morning, "sun 1 hour high," came in sight of the city of

Louisburg. A landing was immediately effected upon the Island of Cape Breton without the loss of a man. The ground upon which they were compelled to camp was low and marshy, the only water they had to drink was discolored and stagnant, the troops were without tents, living in "turf and bough houses, officers and soldiers together ;" their provisions were chiefly "pork and bread without sauce, except a small matter of beans and peas." Major Pomeroy had no tent till the 7<sup>th</sup> of June. Sickness soon broke out, many of the men suffered from dysentery and fever.

*Capture of the "Grand Battery."* The next day after landing, a demonstration was made against the "Grand Battery," situated about two miles up the harbor, by Col. Vaughn with a detachment of four hundred men; but the only result was the burning of several warehouses, filled with stores. On the 2<sup>d</sup> of May, the Battery was captured, the French having deserted it in a panic, leaving behind them only a quantity of spiked cannon. Major Pomeroy with a squad of twenty men, smiths like himself, was detailed to make the guns serviceable again.

In a letter to his wife he alludes to this incident in the following modest manner : —

" Gen. Pepperell gave me the charge and oversight of above twenty Smiths in boring them out. Cannon balls and bombs hundreds of them were fired at us from the city and the Island fort, great numbers of them struck the Fort, some in the parade among the people, but none of them hurt, and as soon as we could get the canon clear we gave them fire for fire and bombarded them on the west side."

Letter from the Be-  
sieging Army.

The following letter from Major Pomeroy to his wife, never before published, shows the progress of the siege and the faith of the writer in the ultimate success of the undertaking : —

" Cape breton, May y<sup>e</sup> 17, 1745.

" My Dear Wife

" Every opportunity I would Improve to write. But now in short : Our army for a week Past have Ben Sickly But now Something Better not one Died with Seckness. I have not ben Sick But under go y<sup>e</sup> hard ships of a Campaign But y<sup>e</sup> I am willing for with an expectation y<sup>e</sup> we Shall Succeed at Last: y<sup>e</sup> Remarkable Providences y<sup>e</sup> has Past before my Eys in favour of us gives me Reason to hope for Further Success: y<sup>e</sup> City of Louisburg is an exceeding Strong well Fortified Place (y<sup>e</sup> grand Battle we have got) & have closely shut it up & Laid close Sige'd to it: near a hundred we have taken of y<sup>e</sup> there [besides<sup>1</sup>] Cows Sheep goats & Some household stuff we have taken: an [d we] have had above a thousand Cannon bawls & hundreds of Cr [thrown] about us yet not But about 12 killed By y<sup>e</sup>; But 12 or 18 more after they was taken Prisoners ware Barbarously Put to Death. My Soldiers have Some of y<sup>e</sup> ben Ill But now growing Better: All alive no Fatal accident happened to any of y<sup>e</sup>. Vastly more Difficult than ever we thoat of y<sup>e</sup> takeing of Louisburg is; But I hope we shall have y<sup>e</sup> City in time God only knows when; my Duty to my Father & Mother. Love to Brothers and Sisters; Love un Speakable to my Dear wife & Loving & Dutifull children & hope if it be y<sup>e</sup> will of God to see your Pleasant Faces again.

SETH POMEROY."

John Hooker  
Wounded.

Concerning the special duties which fell to the company of which Pomeroy was Captain, no mention has been made. Doubtless they assisted in dragging the cannon on sledges across the morass, helped to mount and serve the guns, and convey provisions and ammunition from the fleet to the camp. They suffered the privations and dangers of that arduous

<sup>1</sup> At this point the letter is torn, and the missing words, as far as the sense seems to indicate, are supplied in brackets.

campaign, but fortunately escaped serious results. In a letter dated June 10<sup>th</sup>, he thus alludes to the condition of the army in general, and of his own company in particular :

"In the army are a great many sick, but very few are dangerously sick. My own company are all alive, not one dangerously sick, nor but one wounded, that is John Hooker<sup>1</sup> who is much burnt by powder, but is in a hopeful way of getting well. The dangers that I and my company have been exposed to have been as great as any company in the army. What we have lost in the Army I fear is near 200, but I hope that many of them are in the city that were taken at the [Island] Battery. What we have taken, and killed of the French since we first came to camp, I think by the best account I have had is about 1000 persons." Five days later, and two days before the surrender, Pomeroy writes :— "Myself and my soldiers are all alive and well. None of them have yet been wounded, though more exposed than any part of the army."

**Capitulation of the City.** On the 15<sup>th</sup> of June, preparations were made for an assault upon the city as soon as the

wind would permit the squadron to sail into the harbor, but on that day a flag of truce was received from the enemy asking terms of surrender, and the city capitulated on the 17<sup>th</sup>. Twenty-five men from Col. Willard's regiment, under Lieut. David King, were detailed to serve on board a man-of-war during the attack ; only one, however, was from Major Pomeroy's company. His name was Darbe Crowly, but his residence is unknown. Lieut. David King was a native of Northampton, but had removed to Housatonnuck. He was Lieutenant under Capt. Thomas Chandler, in the 9th Massachusetts Regiment, commanded by Brigadier-General Dwight.

**The Northampton Men Return Home.** After the surrender of the city, the Northampton soldiers remained in camp most of the time, Col. Willard's regiment having been ordered to guard the stores. Major Pomeroy's Journal indicates that they were not detailed for duty within

<sup>1</sup> He was the son of John Hooker of Springfield, born in 1722. In 1754, he resided at Fall Town (Bernardston), and in October of that year petitioned the legislature for an allowance. He says that he was a soldier at Cape Breton, under Capt. Ebenezer Alexander, and was badly hurt by the blowing up of a barrel of powder, was taken to Boston and put under the care of a physician, from October to January 27, 1743-4, and then returned to his friends. He asked pay for his time, and £3 was granted him. Lieut. Ebenezer Alexander was from Northfield, and succeeded Major Pomeroy as Captain of his company.

the city : though about ten days before they left for home, they went into Louisburg and occupied the houses of the inhabitants. Most of the company sailed for Boston on the 10<sup>th</sup> and 11<sup>th</sup> of July.

**Illness of Major Pomeroy.** No letters of Major Pomeroy from the 10<sup>th</sup> of June to the 30<sup>th</sup> of July have come under notice. On the 27<sup>th</sup> of June, he was taken violently ill with fever, and did not leave his room till the 6<sup>th</sup> of July. He attributed his sickness to the damp and rainy weather which kept his tent and every thing within it constantly wet. The day before his seizure, he went into the city and lodged with Chaplain [Joseph] Hawley, and here he remained for ten days. It is not probable that he was able to attend to any of his military duties after this time. In about a week he sailed for Boston. Sixteen days elapsed before he reached that city, and business detained him so that he did not leave Boston till the 6<sup>th</sup> of August. In two days he reached his "own pleasant home in the middle of Northampton," where he arrived at five o'clock, on the afternoon of the 8<sup>th</sup>, having been absent four months and twenty-four days. In the last letter to his wife, dated Boston, July 30<sup>th</sup>, he writes : —

"I was this day informed that you have heard that I was very sick and doubted whether living. Very sick I have been the reason why I did not send you word was that you could do me no good and do yourself much hurt with concern for me, and I hoped you would not hear of it. My dear with ink and pen I shall not pretend to give any account of what has passed before my eyes in a variety of remarkable Providences in favour of our great design that we have been upon, and to me especially, for the time would fail to do it, but hope God willing, to be at Northampton, in the happy enjoyment of my dear wife to love and speak forth the praises of God together in a short time."

**Soldiers from Northampton.** Pomeroy says repeatedly that his company was more exposed than any others in the army, yet none of them were killed, wounded or died. They returned to their homes, wearied and worn with the hardships of the campaign, but buoyant and rejoicing in the glorious victory they had helped to win. In this expedition, as far as can be ascertained, there seems to have been engaged not less than thirty-eight men

from Northampton, but it is impossible to identify them all. The names of those who enlisted in Major Pomeroy's company will be found in the muster-roll as given in his Journal. Of the nineteen men from this town, whom Pomeroy says came with the reinforcements in Col. Williams' Regiment, only six are positively known, viz.: — William Clark, Nathaniel Wright, Elkanah Burt, Stephen Clark, Simeon Pomeroy, and Timothy Baker. Seven others, Josiah Wright, Joseph Cook, Elias Lyman, Daniel Warner, Benjamin Parsons, Medad Lyman, and Benjamin Sheldon, whose names are given in Col. Williams' muster-roll, were probably from this town. Major Pomeroy also mentions a Captain from Northampton in a Worcester County Regiment as among the reinforcements, but his name is unknown.<sup>1</sup> While no one from Northampton was killed or wounded, two of Pomeroy's company died in the service — Stephen Clark and Timothy Baker. Stephen, son of John Clark (second of the name), was in the fourth generation from William, the first settler, and was but eighteen years of age. Timothy Baker was the son of John Baker, and about twenty-five years old. In 1747, Elisha Strong petitioned the General Court for "further allowance by reason of his Services and sufferings at the siege of Louisburg."<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> John Baker is named as Captain, in the reinforcements under Col. Williams and he may have been the man.

<sup>2</sup> The wages of the troops engaged in this expedition were: Major £8.10 per month; First Lieut. 60s.; Second Lieut. 40s.; First Sergt. and Clerk 22s.; other Sergeants and Corporals 25s.; Privates received 21s. for four weeks, or 6s. 3d. per week.

## CHAPTER XI.

### SETH POMEROY'S JOURNAL.

Northampton, March, 14, 1744-5.

On Thursday set out from Northampton upon my journey to Boston upon the designed expedition against Cape Breton. Came to Boston Saturday, one of the clock, tarried there till next week. On Saturday after at sunset sailed down to King's Road and came to an anchor till Sabbath day at three of the clock in the afternoon, and sailed off with about sixty sail of vessels, and the same night sun about an hour high. Taken very sick all that night, next day all day and the night following, and Tuesday all day, and at night came to anchor at the mouth of Sheep's Gut river. Wednesday morning eat about one quarter of a biscuit with butter and something revived, and about noon went on shore, roasted meat and drank good running water, felt much revived. This was the 27<sup>th</sup> day. It was a cloudy day dark and misty, the night following very rainy with cold north wind till about noon and then cleared up with a cold northwest wind which was the 28<sup>th</sup> day of March. We tarried there all that day in the mouth of Sheep's Gut River at an anchor. Friday morning set sail which was the 29<sup>th</sup> day, about ten of the clock, with a fair wind till the next day about noon and then came up a terrible north east storm, all that day and night, till about break of day, a Sabbath day morning and then a calm all that day, which was the 31<sup>st</sup>, we lay rolling in the seas, with our sails furled, with prodigious waves. Monday another terrible storm which was the 1<sup>st</sup> day of April. This day's storm scattered our fleet. The storm towards night abated and then we were left alone, but about eight of the clock of the night we set sail and in the morning,

the 2<sup>d</sup> of April we had a fair wind, all this time from Friday till this day which was Tuesday, nothing to eat or drink that I had any appetite to. All that I took to eat or drink I vomited up again, sick day and night, so bad that I have not words to set it forth, nor can I give any body an idea of it, that hath not felt the same or something like it, and so shall say no more here.

Tuesday night about sunset, passed by Cape Sable, the 2<sup>nd</sup> day of April. The next day and night following sailed with a good gale of wind till Friday about 4 of the clock in the afternoon and then came to Canso Harbour. There were then at anchor 68 sail of vessels and several more that were not yet in. Saturday which was the 6<sup>th</sup> of April, which was a very rainy day and dark. The next day was the Sabbath and Mr. Moody in the afternoon preached a sermon upon Canso Island from Psalm 110, ver. 3. "Thy people shall be willing in the day of thy power," to a very great company of people. Doct. was that Christ the great Captain of our Salvation, sends forth his servants to enlist volunteers in his service. Monday at evening, which was the 8<sup>th</sup> of April, came in seven more, Thursday came in nine more.

I embarked at Boston on board the Hannah and Mary, Capt. David Carmida, commander, tarried with him till Friday, the 12<sup>th</sup> April, and then shipped on board Capt. Joseph Smith's schooner Sally, in Canso Harbour. That day in the afternoon was a storm of snow and wind cold and severe as almost any in winter, lasted till about midnight. Saturday were thunder storms, rain and very dark, and the night following Sabbath day morning, was the 14<sup>th</sup>, very dark and foggy, some rain and in the evening following cleared up with a fair N. N. W. wind. That day we came into Canso Harbour, was brought in, taken by Capt. Fletcher, a French sloop, loaded with rum, wine brandy and indigo, without the loss of a man; about the same time was taken by Capt. Dunahue, and brought into Canso, three Indians of the Cape Sables, and a Sabbath day, the 14<sup>th</sup> of April, brought in eight more. Monday morning, fair weather and orders given out to sail, but wind not suiting, did not sail that day. Tuesday was a fair pleasant morning, but the wind contrary, but soon overcast with clouds and fog that day and night following.

Wednesday the forenoon fair, in the afternoon rain, brought in a brig taken off Carborough bay by Capt. Snelling, loaded with rum, molasses, coffee and chocolate, who had a few days before taken a fishing schooner belonging to Cape Ann (April the 17<sup>th</sup>) the men on board the brig who belonged to the schooner informed us that the ice at Cape Breton was so driven up that a vessel could not get into the harbour, so we were obliged to stay in Canso till that was removed.

April, the 18<sup>th</sup> 1745. Thursday: This day was a rainy day, and about 3 of the clock in the afternoon, the great guns began to fire off Canso Harbour, 3 or 4 leagues (many of the vessels were discovered by the people here from the tops of the masts and the high hill at Canso) continued without much intermission till ten of the clock in the evening. About six of the clock Capt. Dunahue and Capt. Swan brought in a fine brig that they had taken that afternoon. Before this prize came in Rouse Sanders and the Piscataqua Sloop, well manned went out in pursuit; the cannon a firing all this while. Dunahue and Swan manned off before it was dark and out again.

Friday, the 19<sup>th</sup>. The cannon fired at a great rate till about two of the clock. Capt. Beckett went out for a discovery but found nothing but a body of ice. Saturday, the 20<sup>th</sup>. This was a fair and pleasant day, and the companies on shore began to exercise. Sanders returned from chase after ship and although she was chased by Snelling, Ting, Rowse Smithers, which were 16, 18 and 20 guns and several more smaller ones and some hundreds of cannon fired at her, yet she got away from them all. The chase continued upwards of 30 hours. She was about a 30 gun ship and a smart ship.

Sabbath day, 21<sup>st</sup> was a very rainy day. Capt. Furnal the Piscataque sloop had returned from her chase after the ship, turned and went to the harbour at Louisburg, and found it full of ice. At his return to Canso met with a schooner that the French a few days before had taken and he retook her and brought her in. This was the sixth vessel that had been taken and brought into this harbour since we came into it. This day four of Col. Willards men being on shore getting wood one of the men was shot at by a

Frenchman and it grazed one finger and went through his coat sleeve. The four men being unarmed and on shore getting wood were surprised by two Frenchmen and one Indian appearing in arms. The four Englishmen yielded themselves up prisoners and went off, as they were with their enemies and traveled as they judged about ten miles; as they traveled they agreed when an opportunity presented to fall upon them and the word was given, and three of the English fell upon them, each of them a man and the other to their guns, and made themselves masters of them, and brought them back again. A little before they came to the place where they were taken, the Indian turned about and ran away, one of the Englishmen shot after him and it is thought he is dead, for the canoe they came in and a bottle of rum in it. our people found the next day, but the Indian had not been there.

Monday, 22<sup>nd</sup> was a fair day, cold and windy. This day came in a 40 gun ship, Capt. Duval, commander, who brought news of Capt. Warren and three other men of war, and one of our transports that was given up for lost came in, well.

Tuesday, April 23. This day was taken a small sloop at St. Peters, and four or five houses burnt, one Frenchman killed, three Englishmen wounded. Came into the mouth of Canso Harbour, Commodore Warren with a 60 gun ship, one 50 guns and 2 40 guns. This was a fair day.

Wednesday, the 24<sup>th</sup>. This was a fair day, nine sail of vessels from Connecticut with their forces came in, in high spirits and good health.

Thursday, the 25<sup>th</sup>. This was a very windy day, wind at South and showers. I visited the Connecticut gentlemen and dined with Governor Wilcot. The wind in the night at W. S. W.

Friday, the 26<sup>th</sup>. This morning cloudy, very strong wind at W. S. W. the wind ceased and it was a very rainy day and night. Following that day we had news that Commodore Warren had taken three vessels which came out of Saint Peters.

Saturday, the 27<sup>th</sup>. This was foggy, some clouds and dark, but before noon it cleared up, wind at S. S. E. We are informed that the harbour at Louisburg is clear of ice. We wait only a fair wind to sail.

Sabbath day, the 28<sup>th</sup>, was a foggy day, no rain, warm weather for Canso. Preaching upon the burying Island in the forenoon by Mr. Crocker and in the afternoon by Mr. Newman. At sunset orders were given to sail, but the wind died away and we were obliged to stay for a fair wind.

Monday, the 29<sup>th</sup>. About 7 of the clock we sailed out of Canso Harbour for Cape Breton with a fair wind; the wind ceased so we laid to at night.

Tuesday, the 30<sup>th</sup>. This was a fair pleasant morning. Came in fair sight, sun 1 hour high, of Louisburgh. There appeared a great number of French marching up the sea side towards Cabaraugh Bay to prevent our people landing but as quick as possible our boats were on shore. Some few of the English ran to meet the French and came in shot of them, there was a short but sharp engagement. Two of the French were killed on the spot, one taken and more wounded and the English had not one killed, one or two slightly wounded. The French got off as fast as they could, the English following them. But the woods being very thick, they soon got out of sight, but there was soon a great number of the English gathered together, and they followed them up in the woods, and got round them so that they were not able many of them to get into the town. In the afternoon three more of them were taken and at night two more were killed near the town. We landed safe although we were in great danger. Encamped that night on Cape Breton.

Wednesday, May 1<sup>st</sup>. Several more French were taken, the French burned many of their own houses and sank their vessels many of them. In the North East Harbour our people burnt many of their houses, took two Frenchmen. The French at the Royal Battre were frightened away. Our people got possession of the Royal Battre, but the touchholes of their cannon were stopped up before they went off.

Thursday, the 2<sup>nd</sup>. Several of the French horses, cows, calves, goats, such of them as would do for meat were killed, and some of their men and two women taken. The touch hole of one of their guns at Royal Battre was drilled out and fired at the town, above 100 guns from the town fired at the Royal Battre, and many bombs. No man hurt.

Friday, the 3<sup>rd</sup>. This day three of our guns at the Royal Battre fit for firing, and fired twenty shots with 42 pounders. Received many from them shot and bombs, but nobody hurt.

Saturday, the 4<sup>th</sup>. Fired 94 of our guns from the Royal Battre, upon the town, and a 13 inch bomb, placed at a part of the town about  $\frac{1}{4}$  of a mile, fired 4 directly into the town. Several more taken of the French.

Sabbath day, the 5<sup>th</sup> of May. This day I was ordered and had a commission from the General to oversee twenty odd smiths in clearing the cannon touch holes that the French had stopped up. This day a 42 pounder of the Royal Battre was split. Capt. Roads much burnt, but has since recovered. There I staid till Thursday, hundreds of cannon and a great number of bombs fired balls through the fort and in the walls, but nobody much hurt. We fired many hundreds of guns at them. In this time many prisoners taken, some killed, several attacks were designed against the island battre prove unsuccessful.

Thursday, the 9<sup>th</sup>. This day were three men wounded and one both of his legs shot off, who died in a short time.

Friday, the 10<sup>th</sup>. Twenty odd men who were up in the woods were shot upon by a greater number of French and Indians; killed four of the men, 3 or 4 got away—13 of our men gave themselves up prisoners—but the merciless, barbarous creatures tormented them to death after they had given them quarters.

Saturday, the 11<sup>th</sup>. I visited Rector Williams at his camp and Col. Burr and dined with them.

Sabbath day, the 12<sup>th</sup>. This day in the afternoon heard Rector Williams preach from these words:—“Ho every one that thirsteth come and take of the waters of life freely.”

Monday, the 13<sup>th</sup>. This day there was a man killed at the Battre from a shot from the town and one wounded at the Greenhill, by one of our guns breaking; the man's leg broke all to pieces. The Doctor cut it off at the knee.

Tuesday, the 14<sup>th</sup>. This was a rainy day and it rained for the first time we came upon this land. At night it cleared up. We laid still all that day.

Wednesday, the 13<sup>th</sup>. A fair day. 2 fascion batteries

preparing at the west and south west part of the city in order to beat down the walls and gates. The cannon were drawing from the Grand Battre to place in them; some already placed in the south west part to play well upon the town, also a large mortar with some cow horns. Some hundreds of cannon fired from the town in order to prevent our people proceeding in their work, but no man was hurt.

I would make remarks upon our campaign. The people many of them are ill, the reasons I think are plain: 1<sup>st</sup> the ground here is cold and wet, the water much of it is in low marshy ground of a reddish color and stagnated. The people have no beds to lay on, nor tents to keep off the fogs and dew.

2<sup>nd</sup> Our provisions are chiefly pork and bread without sauce, except a small matter of beans and peas, which sets the people into fluxes, and many of the people are unacquainted with lying in the woods and keep no fires, get great cold. The places are not convenient for sick people, and very uncomfortable for them to be taken to, so that their illness must of necessity increase upon them; so I learn by this campaign how to do better in another if it should ever be in my time.

Thursday, the 16<sup>th</sup>. One man killed by a bomb (this was a fair day) belonging to Piscataque at Portsmouth in New Hampshire.

Friday, the 17<sup>th</sup>. A fair day. A number of French from town, near the Light House engaged a company of our men who were upon that land about 40 of ours beat off about 100 of them. One French man was wounded and taken, and how many killed we do not know. One of our men was wounded at night. We drew two large cannon from the Grand Battre and two more that were partly drawn before and their carriages, and placed them within 40 or 50 rods of the town. A gun split at the Grand Battre and wounded 2 men; the third that has split there.

Saturday, the 18<sup>th</sup>. This was a fair day in the morning. The French engaged our people with small arms from the walls, and our people attacked them, many hundreds of guns were fired to and from one and another. Several of them we killed without doubt. Two of ours were killed by noon, two or three more in the afternoon. Capt. Parce was killed by a cannon ball.

Sabbath day, 19<sup>th</sup>. Cloudy this day, wind N. E. Early in the morning the guns, cannon and small arms began to fire. One of our gunners was killed. Many hundred, small and great were fired. About two of the clock, they began an engagement by sea, with our ships of war. Broad sides were fired both sides. What the issue is we do not yet know, so leave it. This day a sorrowful accident happened. A barrel of powder caught fire, killed two and burnt three more very much; another accident happened, a great gun split and killed two men and wounded several more.

Monday, May 20<sup>th</sup>, 1745. This is my birthday and I have arrived to the full age of Thirty nine years and have seen and been the subject of many remarkable deliverances. But since I have been engaged in this expedition, daily something remarkable and some days extraordinary, providences in favor of the army or my own preservation. A record of which I hope and desire never to forget, but to keep a record of it upon my mind and to give the Preserver of men who orders all things by a wise providence the praise of it. Saturday last Capt. Flacher's men being on shore at Caborough bay to get water, all up in a heap, were shot upon by a number of Indians 7 killed and three more taken. One man died Monday by sickness.

Tuesday, 21<sup>st</sup>. Something foggy with a south wind. One man died by sickness, 3 days together foggy and dark, 1 died by sickness this day.

Wednesday, 22<sup>d</sup>. This is a fair day and pleasant. Last sabbath day night Commodore Warren after a sharp engagement with a 70 gun ship from France, the Mermaid a 40 gunship with him, for two hours, yard arm and yard arm, took her with only the loss of 4 men, but the French lost 30 and many more wounded. The ship this day was brought in and lay in fair sight of the town, for the French to look up. She is a vast rich prize.

Thursday, the 23<sup>rd</sup>. This is a fair day, pleasant morning: many attempts we have had for taking the Island Battre, which all prove abortive. This night Col. Noble was the overseer of the attack. The soldiers sailed all around the Island, but no Col. Noble to be found. For want of an officer the soldiers returned. Capt. Hale at the Grand

Batre last week was wounded by the splitting of a cannon, and died this week. This day one of Commodore Warren's men that was wounded some time past, died.

Friday, 24<sup>th</sup>. Cloudy the forenoon but the afternoon fair with N. E. wind. Died Major Nuten of Colchester.

Saturday the 25<sup>th</sup>. By a scout of men up in the woods, they discovered six Frenchmen and killed one of them and took 3 more. It was a very dry time with a N. W. wind. The woods burnt furiously and the fire came near our camp. With much labor it was stopped so that there was not that I know of any damage done by it to any of our camps.

Sabbath day, May the 26<sup>th</sup>, 1745. This was a fair day. A Company of volunteers enlisted for another attack on the Island Battre, although there had been 4 or 5 attempts for it before, and all proved unsuccessful, and Providence seemed not to favor it; yet some people were engaged to try once more and this night put it in practice. But now Providence seemed to frown remarkably on the affair. Our people were discovered by those at the Island Battre before they got on shore, and the French being prepared with their cannon pointed down to strike the boats just before they came on shore, loaded with chain and partridge shot, and a great number of men with small arms, as soon as our people came in sight, with all the fury and resolution possible they fired upon them, and cut off whole boat loads of them, but in spite of all their fire 4 or 5 boat loads got on the Island and engaged them for near an hour, by firing great numbers of small arms upon them. Not more than 3 or 4 rods apart and by the light of their fire saw well to shoot and doubtless killed many of them. Other boats, great numbers of them behind, not having a pilot were not able to get on shore, and trying for a long time and in the very heat of the fire, they found they were not able to land, returned, those of them that were able returned as fast as they could to land again. Those that had got on the Island as many of them as could get boats, made the best of their way off, but many left behind, that there were no boats for, so were obliged to fall into the hand of their enemies. Many were taken, many killed

and drowned and wounded. The number yet I do not know. It is since thought 150 in all.

Monday, the 27<sup>th</sup>. This was a dark and cloudy day with some rain. About ten captives brought in that were taken up in the woods north of the Grand Battre. A scout of our regiment went out Sunday last to see what discovery they could make, with a design to return the next day, but came not till Thursday. A man was wounded at the west gate with a small arm and at night one with a bomb.

Tuesday, 28<sup>th</sup>. Col. Noble being out with a company of about 400 men met with a number of French, engaged them, killed a number of them not certain but it is thought many, and took one. Lost of ours six, wounded 18. The one that was taken came out of the town about a fortnight past and gives account that provisions are very scarce, meat nor bread have they little or anything to eat.

Wednesday, the 29<sup>th</sup>. This was a pleasant fair day. Since last Friday to this day, I have been kept in by a Quincycal humor that was upon me, but I have now in some measure got well of it, and this day walked out.

Thursday, the 30<sup>th</sup>. This was a fair pleasant day. Our scout that went out last Sunday came in this day, but had found nothing. A scout from above the Grand Battre brought in ten captives of the company that Col. Noble with 400 men engaged with last Tuesday. It is said by these captives that they had killed and wounded about 40 men and the rest of the number in the whole was about 150 French and Indians, and the remainder scattered about in small companies, without any meat and little or no bread.

Friday, the 31<sup>st</sup>. This was a foggy morning and dark day in the forenoon but afterwards pleasant and warm.

Saturday, June 1, 1745. Cloudy, foggy and some rain. As soon as it was light hundreds of small arms were fired by our people at the West gate, and from the French at our people, but nobody was wounded. Capt. Melvin with a company went out to scout.

Sabbath day, June 2, 1745. A foggy, dark morning. Last night received a letter from my wife and with great satisfaction. I then and this morning read it and am much rejoiced to hear of the welfare of my family, and ex-

perienced that good news from a far country is like cold water to a thirsty soul. At night went up to the West gate. At the fassion battery. Lodged at Capt. Omsted's. About sunset a man was shot in the head by a piece of bomb shell. I hope not mortally. A piece of the same bomb shell struck within a few feet of me, and soon after a bomb fell within about a rod of me, and a great number of people also were within a few rods of it, but no man was hurt.

Monday, the 3<sup>d</sup>. A cloudy morning, but soon cleared off. In the morning Lt. Grant picked a mess of herb, boiled them at Capt. Omsteds eat them with a good appetite, they being the first greens that I have tasted of this spring. A sloop was taken bound to Louisburg, from Canada, loaded with provisions. The people in it ran it ashore, jumped off the bowsprit, left the sloop and ran into the woods.

Tuesday, June 4<sup>th</sup>. A fair pleasant day. There were brought in 18 or 20 captives, men, women and children. In the afternoon went to the West gate to command the guard there. Staid in the trench all night. The French shot 4 or 5 cannon and once charged the pieces with langrange, some within a very little matter of my head and other people, but none hurt. Shot 3 bombs around and among us, but nobody was hurt. About twelve of the night a Frenchman came out of the city, choosing to be with the English, who informed us of the state of the circumstances of the city. The number of the people in all about 3000 that were killed by us and forty wounded, provisions scarce, meat none, dried fish enough, 116 of our people taken, some of them wounded.

Wednesday, the 5<sup>th</sup>. A fair day. Staid this day at the West gate, having the care of the guard. At night returned to my camp. A ship was taken this day. It is said to be a 34 gunship.

Thursday, the 6<sup>th</sup>. A fair day. I had this day the charge of removing the Hospital with our Regiment. The sick we first took out and then took down the house and carried it to our new camp, which was about half a mile, and set it up again, put the sick in at night. This day one of the men that was moved, that belonged to Capt. Baker, died, and in the night, Clary, that was burnt with powder

some time past, also died. A French boy came out of the city, who had deserted and we cannot get anything out of him. He will not talk and seems to be an idiot and half fool.

Friday, the 7<sup>th</sup>. A fair day. This day we removed our tents. This is the third time we have moved, we not being in proper form for a campaign, and now we have placed ourselves more compact together. Today I got myself a tent to dwell in, and this was the first night that I have lodged in one since we encamped. Our lodging before was turf and bough houses, officers and soldiers together. Now I lodge in one by myself.

Saturday, the 8th. A stormy day. This day the Captain of the vigilance sent a letter to the Governor in the city by a flag of truce, to inform him that he was used very well and advised him (that is the Governor) to give up the city. The letter being read and they came to understand the vigilance was taken, it put them into a great consternation, for they much depended upon it. When the soldiers came to hear of it they determined not to fight, except they were forced, and one of them was coming to bring some letters from the prisoners, was found out and they directly hanged him. This we understood by two men that came out the night following. This day a man riding along about half a mile from the city, his horse was shot dead by a cannon ball, the man not hurt. Nathaniel Chamberlain, some time last week received a blow on his cheek with a crow bar and since at turns, has bled very much, but today more, and he was brought very low. The next day was the Sabbath, 9<sup>th</sup>, and he bled more. I got all the skilfull Doctors that were in the army, but at turns bled, and to such a degree that he has become very weak, and about 3 of the clock in the afternoon had such a fainting fit, that we thought he was dying, but he came too and revived somewhat and the bleeding stopped, so that there seemed to be more hopes of him, but in the night he bled more. A fair pleasant day, heard preaching both fore and afternoon by Mr. Balek. Between meetings worked at the trench, and so after meeting at night in the trench, in order to have our camp all fortified, that we might be safe from the enemy that we hear are up in the woods. The two

men who came out of the city gave an account that many would get out if they had an opportunity, and they themselves were well pleased with the exchange. There was seen off at some distance a chace of our men of war, who were after as it is thought a French man of war, and followed by about 6 of ours and followed till they got out of sight. So nothing further about it this day.

Monday, June 10<sup>th</sup>. A fair day. The ship that was followed yesterday, this day we are informed that it is a fifty gun ship that has this day joined Commodore Warren and gives an account of two more that parted with him a short time ago in a fog : which were designed for this place, and we daily expect here. A man was this day killed from the Island Battre, at the Light house Battre, shot through with a cannon ball. At day they began to fire from the Light house Battre at the Island Battre with a gun from the city and from the Island. The French fired greatly, only two men wounded and those but slightly. This was a fair pleasant day ; the regiment were mustered in order to have our arms reviewed.

Tuesday, the 11<sup>th</sup>. This being our King's ascension day, it was observed by the army here, at our camp at Cape Breton. Orders were given at all our batteries to fire smartly at the city. The General with some of the council, waited upon Commodore Warren, on board his ship ; the remainder of the council and some other of the officers dined at the Generals, and a very fine entertainment, with everything that was convenient and refreshing. At 12 of the clock, the regiment being in arms, gave three cheers, with the drums after. At our entertainment at the General's we had music : — a violin, flute, and vocal music, and staid all the afternoon. At night the General with his attendants came on shore, and was welcomed by the gentlemen who were there.

Wednesday, the 12<sup>th</sup>. This is a fair day. Orders were given in our regiment for cutting 250 faggots to fill up the trench with ; in the afternoon also orders for a great quantity of stores for the ships. The French, last night and this day, fired a vast many bombs and cannon and small arms also, but no man killed, and wounded three, but I hope not mortal. This day joined with the Commodore,

two ships that were before expected, a 60 gun ship and one 40.

Thursday, the 13<sup>th</sup>. A fair pleasant day. Twenty-five men from our regiment are to go on board the men-of-war, under the command of Col. Moore, chief commander of the detachment and Lt. David King over the twenty-five men, that were raised in our regiment, one was out of my company, Darbo Crowley. The nights here are very cold, a frost some nights and ice of considerable thickness.

Friday, June 14<sup>th</sup>, 1745. A fair day, in the afternoon some foggy. The twenty-five men commanded by Lt. David King went on board this day in order for an attack upon the town with Commodore Warren as soon as the wind and weather suits. Orders are to attack the city on the land at the same time. It is said the French fired about fifty bombs this night at our people in the trench, but nobody was hurt.

Saturday, the 15<sup>th</sup>. A fair pleasant day. Commodore Warren came on shore. Our regiment with other regiments in the camp mustered in a regimental order. Com. Warren made a fine speech to the army and marched through together with the General and some other gentlemen, and agreed with the General and publicly with the whole army, that as soon as the wind and weather should favor, he with all his ships, should go into the harbour, engage the Island Battre and the city. We upon the land, with all our forces at the same time should engage them with all our artillery and escalading ladders. After this, just before sunset, the French sent out a flag of truce. The terms that were agreed upon by the council was that they should deliver themselves up prisoners of war, and the time allowed them for consideration was till next day at nine of the clock in the morning, so were dismissed for that time.

Sabbath day, 16<sup>th</sup>. Misty morning and all waiting for an answer from the city. The time before appointed for the French to give an answer was 9 of the clock. They came and it was agreed they deliver themselves up prisoners of war, with the liberty that they should have their own money with their moveable estate and deliver a hostage as a pledge of truthfulness, and next morning for the

army to enter the city. This night, I with Maj. Cat, Capt. King and Lt. Miller went the grand rounds and this was the warmest night that has been since that we came upon this Island. Returned to my tent just at break of day.

Monday, June 17<sup>th</sup>. Mustered our regiment this day, the General, Major General, and some other gentlemen, with the General's regiment to guard them, the remainder of our regiments staid within our own wall at the camp. The night following, a very rainy night.

Tuesday, the 18<sup>th</sup>. A dark, misty and some rain this day. A man belonging to Capt. Golden died this day. A ship taken at the mouth of the harbour, loaded with wine and brandy. I staid this day in our camp and the night following rained hard, but I lay dry in my tent and slept well.

Wednesday, the 19<sup>th</sup>. A foggy, misty, rainy day. Part of the army staid at the camp, and part of the army in the city, and part at the camp to guard the stores.

Thursday, the 20<sup>th</sup>. Rain and dark this day and very uncomfortable at our camp by reason of the wet, but no getting the stores away by reason of the surf, that there was in the sea.

Friday, the 21<sup>st</sup>. It still continued foul weather. This is the fourth day since it began, and it is very remarkable that 47 days we have been on this Island and in all that time not so much foul weather by one half as there has been now in one week, which I look upon as smile of Providence upon the army, for if there had been foul weather, as commonly there used to be here at this time in the year, it would have rendered it exceedingly difficult, if not wholly frustrated the design, scattered our fleet and sickened our army. As we have had a remarkable smile of Providence upon us ever since we set out upon this expedition, so at last it was very remarkable that the enemy should give it up in that very time which they did. If they had not we must have made a bold attempt by escalading the walls that it seems would have been fatal; either the loss of a great many men or it may be we should never have taken the city. But so it was ordered by Divine Providence, and it is evident that God has both begun and finished this great work, even the reduction of Louisburg, and given into the hands of the English and Glory be to the great name of

Jehovah for it. This day I went from our camp to the city and lodged there this night in a French house with Lt. Lyman and was kindly entertained by them.

Saturday, the 22<sup>nd</sup>. Staid in the city this day till near night and then came back to our camp. Still foggy weather and this day no rain. Our sick men were carried into the city, viz.: Peter Montague, Josiah Nash and Selah Wright, upon men's shoulders.

Sabbath day, 23<sup>rd</sup>. This is a foggy day still staid in our camp; heard Mr. Moody preach in the forenoon and Mr. Landon in the afternoon and at night made a prayer to our regiment.

Monday, 24<sup>th</sup>. Staid at our camp and had the command of several regiments there, who staid to guard stores and no man to pass without a written order. Many scores I wrote. This was a misty, foggy day. Capt. Rowe after he had beat about many days in the fog, could not find his way in. This day got in who had been to for mortars.

Tuesday, the 25<sup>th</sup>. A cloudy, dark foggy day, some rain. Staid this day at my tent, no business to do and but poor entertainment, my things being up in the city; not much comfortable to eat or drink, and not very well in health.

Wednesday, 26<sup>th</sup>. A fair pleasant day. Went this day from the camp up to the city, not very well in health, by reason of my lying 8 or 9 nights together in my tent, when many of the nights it rained hard, and if otherwise very misty and foggy; so that it kept the inside of my tent continually wet, and in my bed. Lodged this night with Mr. Hawley and Dr. Pincum.

Thursday, the 27<sup>th</sup>. This day it rained. I was taken very ill with a flux and about 2 of the clock in the afternoon cold, agueish, soon after with a terrible headache and fever. I laid myself down upon Mr. Hawley's bed all that afternoon and night and was very sick all night and slept but little.

Friday, the 28<sup>th</sup>. This morning I was very sick with fever and flux. Dr. Pynchon bled me and the fever abated. I had my own bed brought into the chamber and got into it and lodged with more comfort, being alone.

Saturday, 29<sup>th</sup>. Still continued sick, but growing better;

took physic of Rhubarb. All our people moved up from the camp to some of the houses without the walls of the city.

Sabbath day, 30<sup>th</sup>. This day a fair pleasant day, but I confined myself to my chamber so heard no preaching being sick on the bed.

Monday, July 1. Many of the French people have gone on board today. I am still confined to my chamber; sick, fever and flux still continued hard upon me. This a fair day. Our people are moving into the city.

Tuesday, July 2<sup>nd</sup>. A fair and pleasant day. The French moving out and going on board. Our people going in and taking possession of their houses. This day Major General Walcott and a number of Connecticut forces of about 70 or 80 embarked for home. Lt. Taylor of Norwich also went. I still continued in my chamber, but growing somewhat better. Eat a small matter of mutton.

Wednesday, the 3<sup>rd</sup>. This was a showery day with some thunder. Capt. Edman's came in this day with a company from New England, in the county of Worcester, and bring the good news of a thousand or more men coming for our relief; and one of captains is from Northampton and some of the company from the county of Hampshire. This day the Launceston, man-of-war, set sail with about 700 of the French inhabitants of Louisburg, for France. I still continued in my chamber, but growing better. Eat some fresh mutton for dinner with a good appetite.

Thursday, 4<sup>th</sup>. Sailed this day for France, six sail of vessels with the French inhabitants of Louisburg. It was a fair pleasant day. I still continued in my chamber. Eat some fresh beef for dinner, but a small piece, but eat it with a good appetite.

Friday, the 5<sup>th</sup>. This morning came in Col. Choat into Louisburg with two companies. He informs that 4 vessels with transports set sail with him that are hourly expected. Capt. Sanders set sail for Boston this morning. Morning cloudy but no rain.

Saturday, the 6<sup>th</sup>. This a fair pleasant day. I was so recovered of my sickness that in the afternoon I walked out of my chamber and about the city. Came in this day Capt. Snelling, with men from New England, Col. William

Williams, Mr. Williams of Longmeadow and nineteen persons from Northampton, whose names I do not now know. Received 5 letters from my friends in New England which gave me much satisfaction, for they all speak of good news.

Sabbath day, the 7<sup>th</sup>. This a fair pleasant day. I went on board Capt. Snellings vessel to see Mr. Williams and Col. Williams and our Northampton people, for I heard Mr. Williams was to preach there, but he was gone it was said to the Grand Battre. I went there, they were not there and then to the Island Battery, and they were not there. I then returned to the city and heard Mr. Moody preach there in the forenoon and Mr. Rector Williams in the afternoon and some of our Northampton new comers were there.

Monday, the 8<sup>th</sup>. This is a fair day and warm for Cape Breton. The French people are getting on board for New England.

Tuesday, 9<sup>th</sup> July. A fair pleasant day. Today seven vessels with French for New England sailed. News came on this day of Capt. Donnahews being killed with eleven men by the Indians up in the gut of Canso, going ashore in a boat, last Saturday was seven nights which was the 29<sup>th</sup> June.

Wednesday, the 10<sup>th</sup>. A fair pleasant day. A number of my soldiers are going on board Capt. Tomson's vessel in order to go to New England. Today a man had his arm shot all to pieces by a soldier firing his gun. The man that was shot belonged to the ships.

Thursday, 11<sup>th</sup>. This is a warm pleasant day, but not hot like New England. Lt. Lyman with 24 of my soldiers sailed about 10 of the clock for New England in Capt. Thompson's Rhode Island ship of about 20 guns, but an uncomfortable place to carry soldiers. An account of the cannon we have fired at the French and bombs: viz: cannon nine thousand and some odd bombs. Six hundred and fifty were killed by them and the small arms. In the city according to the best accounts we have by the people in the city is upwards of 400. The number of the cannon in the city ninety odd; at the Grand Battre 30-42 pounders; 2-18 pounders; at the Island Battery 34; 31 of the 28 pounders and mortars at the Island and 3-18 pounders, 2

brass; in the city 5 brass and one Iron in the city a great number of swivels and other cruel instruments of death. The walls of the city are upon the land side, one about 25 feet high and about 4 rods thick, within the walls are near 100 acres of land; the walls are near two miles around the city.

Friday, July 12<sup>th</sup>. This is a fair pleasant day, warm but not hot. Finished all my business in Louisburg, dined with the General and some other gentlemen. The dinner was very good, cider and wine plenty; first a good plum pudding, boiled pork, beef, herbs, two large fat roast pigs and salmon and boiled butter plenty. After dinner took leave of all the gentlemen and went on board Mr. Bastard's Amplus Engineers sloop, Capt. Donnel, Master. It being calm we lay in the harbour that night.

Saturday, the 13<sup>th</sup>. A strong S. W. wind which was directly against us, so we were not able to sail that night, so we lay in the harbour all day waiting for a wind that suited to sail. It was a fair day.

Sabbath day, the 14<sup>th</sup>. Last night it rained wind S. W.; this morning misty and some rain; preparing to sail, wind N. E., first a small breeze. We sailed by the Island Battery about 7 of the clock with a fresh breeze of wind. About 9 it all died away. We lay rolling in a calm all that day and night till about 11 and 12 o'clock in the night and then a small breeze till 3 or 4 in the morning and then died away to a dead calm. I was sea sick all the first day, nothing to eat or drink, with any appetite or that I could keep down.

Monday, the 15<sup>th</sup>. A dead calm this morning, with some showers as yesterday. Not so sick this morning. Eat a small matter and it kept down. About 9 of the clock this morning we haled a brig that came from Massachusetts and we were informed by her that they had the good news at Boston of the city of Louisburg's being taken. We are informed it was received with the greatest joy. It was early in the morning, the 3<sup>rd</sup> of July, which was commencement day, and the Governor ordered all the bells to be rung and guns to be fired. This day had a quarter of a good fat lamb roasted. I eat of it with some appetite. It being calm I was not so sick. Mild and calm all day and

but very little head way all that day. It was a fair still afternoon.

Tuesday the 16<sup>th</sup>. Some time before day there came up a breeze of wind at South, and in the morning very fresh, but it was against us and it was foggy. The fog cleared off, the wind came up very strong at S. W. It being contrary we turned into Canso Harbor about 4 o'clock in the afternoon; lay there that night. There was a shower of rain that afternoon. In the night it cleared off. Strawberries were now ripe and very plenty at Canso.

Wednesday, 17<sup>th</sup>. This a fair morning, wind N. N. W. a fresh breeze. About half an hour before the sun was up, we set sail out of Canso Harbor. Sailed all day with a small breeze, although some part of the day was contrary winds, we were obliged to tack. We met several vessels coming from Boston, but spoke with none of them. I was not sea sick all day.

Thursday, the 18<sup>th</sup>. This is a fair pleasant morning, but a small breeze of wind, at W. N. W. but in the afternoon came up a violent west wind ahead all the afternoon, and in the night thunder and rain and a violent wind right against us, so that all we got was by tacks, and we beat a great way off into the sea out of our way. Sick all day.

Friday, 19<sup>th</sup>. All this forenoon a strong wind ahead and rain and all the way we made was by tacking, and that is but very slow. Afternoon it cleared off and the sun appeared, but still the wind against us, all day in a rolling sea, but little comfort up or down.

Saturday, the 20<sup>th</sup>. All last night a strong W. S. W. which was right ahead and heavy showers of rain, some thunder. The wind held strong ahead all day against us and a rolling sea, rain and fog. I was not able to sit up this day, nor any appetite to eat and drink.

Sunday, the 21<sup>st</sup>. Last night a steady night's rain, but little wind, but what there was, was against us. This morning very still and a steady rain. Sometime in the forenoon it cleared up, wind but a little, but what there was was W. and by N. so we made but little way that day.

Monday, 22<sup>nd</sup>. A still, fair, pleasant morning; no wind all last night; this morning we lay to a fishing and we caught them plentifully, although the water was about 510

feet deep. I put the line down once myself and drew up two codfish at one time, the first that I ever put a hook for one. It was on the banks of Cape Sable, shore 8 or 10 leagues. We lay all the forenoon in a dead calm, rolling in the sea. The afternoon was even the same although we hoped to the contrary by what appeared in the clouds, but it held all day in a perfect calm. This in the ninth day we have been out, and have had all weathers, but fair winds and none of those.

Tuesday, July 23<sup>rd</sup>. Last night we had a small breeze of wind in our favor. This morning the wind small, but what was, was in our favor. Some clouds, signs of showers; a small gale of wind and showery at night, a calm and held all night.

Wednesday, the 24<sup>th</sup>. This a fair warm and a pleasant morning; no wind, but about ten of the clock the wind breezed up a little. In the afternoon a fresh gale of wind came up and held the most of the night in our favor, but we got along considerably.

Thursday, the 25<sup>th</sup>. This, all day foggy with but a little wind, and what was, was in the South which was partly against us. A whale appeared within about 20 or 30 rods of the vessel. We make but slow headway, many days have been calm and when there was a wind it was against us.

Friday, the 26<sup>th</sup>. Last night we passed by Cape Sable. This morning a breeze of wind from the south, which is now that we have got by the cape, a pretty fair wind for our course. Some showers of rain this morning and the afternoon foggy.

Saturday, 27<sup>th</sup>. Last night a fair night, wind about W., which was for our course. This morning a fair pleasant morning, wind fresh in the W. and held till about 11 of the clock, and the calm for 2 or three hours, turned then in the South and came up a small breeze. It was a fair clear day all day.

Sabbath day, the 28<sup>th</sup>. Last night the wind fresh and fair and this day a clear day and good wind at South. A little before sunset we saw the land at Cape Ann, which was very rejoicing for it was the 15<sup>th</sup> day we had been out and our water was so bad, that I had drank none of for 2 days.

Monday, July 29<sup>th</sup>, 1745. Last night rain and thunder and lightning. We kept off till morning, and then we got in above the Light house, and it was so foggy that we could not find the way up to town and came to an anchor at Nantasket. There were there at anchor 12 ships, 2 men of war and some of the others were mast ships. Towards night it cleared off ; we set sail and came to Boston a little before sunset, well and in good health.

Tuesday, the 30<sup>th</sup>. This a fair day. I had the pleasure of seeing all my soldiers that came away before me, well and those of them that belonged to Hatfield, set out for home ; Roger Miller and Lt. Grant both sick.

Wednesday, July the 31<sup>st</sup>. This day all those that designed to go home on foot set out. I had the night before sent for my horse by Capt. Partridge. This day a making up my muster roll and buying some things for myself.

Thursday, Aug. 1<sup>st</sup>, 1745. Very hot weather and it seized hard upon us that had just come out of a cold country. Sergeant Parsons yesterday was taken sick.

Friday, the 2<sup>nd</sup>. Fair hot weather. Sergt. Parsons still continued sick. Roger Miller very sick and low. Lt. Grant very dangerously sick. Benj. Stebbings of Springfield had been in the expedition, sick here. One man who came in here well and eat a hearty meal of victuals died before next morning.

Saturday, Aug. 3. A very hot day. Grant, Miller, Stebbins and Parsons, very sick. At or some time in the night, Lt. Grant died. Tonight I rode over to Roxbury to Capt. Williams and lodged there that night. Brother Wright, Daniel Strong and Joseph Parsons came with our horses.

Sabbath day, the 4<sup>th</sup>. I rode into Boston this day in the afternoon after meeting, it rained hard, violently till most sunset.

Monday, 5<sup>th</sup>. A fair pleasant day after a great rain. This day Lt. Grant was buried and I was one of the bearers.

Tuesday, 6<sup>th</sup>. Finished my business in Boston this day and just before sunset set out for Northampton.

Wednesday, 7<sup>th</sup>. Lodged at Mr. Williams and kindly entertained. Early in the morning set out and arrived at

night at Capt. Connors, at Brookfield, lodged there upon free cost.

Thursday, 8, 1745. Went this morning over to Brigadier Dwight's, eat breakfast with Madame Dwight, kindly treated, came to Cold Spring. Mr. Dwight's, dined and well treated all upon free cost. Arrived home at Northampton about 5 of the clock. Amen.

March 24<sup>th</sup>, 1745. The fleet at this 24<sup>th</sup> of March sailed from the King's Road upon the expedition against Louisburg.

June 25<sup>th</sup>. I would now make some remarks upon the remarkable Providence in favor of the great design that we were upon and I would consider in a few words the scheme that was laid in Boston that was to hasten away as fast as possible (with but 4 or 5 vessels of force and they but small. We had some hopes of Com. Warren, but that was very uncertain) to Canso, and to wait no longer than to have all the transports come together and to take the first fair wind and to sail to Chabaraugh Bay. Landing in the enemy with our whole army and to take our ladders, axes, crows, graplins, and all other things needful in order to get over the walls in one night, this since we know to be impracticable.

1<sup>st</sup> remark. Although there was about 80 sail of vessels, yet they all arrived safe at Canso, about 3 weeks.

2<sup>nd</sup>. Our lying there so long we thought to be against us, but since see to the contrary, for in this time our cruisers took 7 or 8 vessels from the French. Commodore Warren came with 3 ships besides his own for our help and the Connecticut fleet came all in well; in this time the weather was very bad, cold and wet; several times set to sail in this time but we were Providentially prevented. 29<sup>th</sup> April, the weather and wind this day being right, we sailed early in the morning expecting to land that night and to march with all our utensils for war to attack the city the same night.

3<sup>rd</sup>. Although we had a good wind in the morning, yet it died away and so we were prevented getting to our destined place that day. The next morning, a pleasant fair morning and our Fleet were discovered by the French and a large company of them came out to prevent our landing.

4<sup>th</sup>. This at first looked dark for us but was ordered in mercy for several of them were killed and taken and those that got in gave a great fright to those that were in the city, and at the Grand Battery and we appearing next day with a great company in sight frightened them out of the Grand Battery and we took possession.

5<sup>th</sup>. The taking a large ship loaded from the French that was bound to Louisburg and several more smaller vessels.

6<sup>th</sup>. Thursday, April 9<sup>th</sup>. It was agreed in council to make a bold attempt with our whole army with our ladders to escalade the walls but it was mercifully prevented.

7<sup>th</sup>. Another very remarkable thing, the many thousands of bombs and cannon and an innumerable number of small arms fired at us, yet but about 17 persons killed by them at any or all of our batteries.

8<sup>th</sup>, another. The weather 47 days that we had been engaged in the Island with our enemies not one bad storm and but very little rain or fog, which is common at that time of the year, and especially at this place (viz.: Cape Breton). The French themselves take notice of it and say there had not been for so long a time, and at that time in the year so much good weather since the place was settled, as there hath been this spring, or since we came here and say that God fights for the English.

9<sup>th</sup>. Another thing is having added to Commodore Warren's fleet 5 or 6 ships of war for his assistance in season.

10<sup>th</sup>. Another thing, the commodore being on shore Saturday, he with the advice of his council agreed that the first fair wind that came he would go into the harbor with all his ships and the land forces should make a bold push by land at the same time. Just after this before the commodore had gone on board, the French sent out a flag of truce and terms were agreed upon for them to deliver up the city, had it not been at the very time, the next day must have been the day to have made a bold push at the city; for the wind did well suit for it, and if we had, it must in all human probability proved fatal to our army and destroyed a great part of them, and this must be looked upon as a remarkable Providence at that very time that God should incline them to give up the city, it is evi-

dent and plain that God rules the hearts of men and there hearts at that time he moved them to give up for they might have kept us out and destroyed us if we had gone on in the way we had just before considered upon.

11<sup>th</sup>. Another remarkable thing: the very day, next after we had taken possession rain and foggy dark weather 8 or 9 days together, and there had not been so much rain by half in 47 days as now in 4 days which would doubtless have scattered our fleet and army and given an opportunity to the French vessels to have got into the harbor and would have sickened and discouraged if not broke up our designs, if it had come before. These things considered together with many others that might be mentioned doth plainly show that God has gone out of the way of his common Providence in a remarkable and almost miraculous manner; it is plain to anybody that will consider and think of these things that the Lord of Hosts, the God of armies hath both began, carried on and finished this great work, and delivered this strong city into our hands.

My hearty desire and prayer is that as long as I have a being I may give the great name of God the praise of it, that he has written Salvation for New England.

A List of the names of my soldiers are as follows:

I received ten shillings old tenor.	Enlistment Money.	Subsistence Money.	Advanced Wages.	Bounty Money.	Trust Money.
Gideon Parsons	10	Paid	£5	£4	old tenor
Samuel Gillet	10	"	5	4	
Ebenezer Wait	10	"	5	4	
Aaron Wright	10	"	5	4	
Elisha Pomeroy	10	"	5	4	11. 0.0
Noah Clapp	10	"	5	4	
Reuben Wait	10	"	5	4	
Abner Sheldon	10	"	5	4	
John Alexander	10	"	5	4	1. 4 1.10
Martin Severance	10	"	5	4	
Elish Norton	10	"	5	4	
W <sup>m</sup> Lyman	10	"	5	4	
Selah Wright	10	"	5	4	
Thomas Ferrel	10	"	5	4	
Edmund Taylor	10	"	5	4	8.10.0
Samuel King	10	"	5	4	1.10.0

I received ten shillings  
old tenor.

	Enlistment Money.	Subsistence Money.	Advance Wages.	Bounty Money.	Tent Money.
Samuel Carroll	10	"	£5	£4	2. 0.0
Jonathan Janes	10	"	5	4	
Ezekiel Blunt	10	"	5	4	
John Hooker	10	"	5	4	3
Samuel Stimson	10	"	5	4	1. 2.0
Paid to Archibald Parnel					5.15.0
Archibald Parnel	10	"	5	4	
Reuben Smith	10	"	5	4	0. 4
John Taylor	10	"	5	4	1.10 2
Elisha Burk	10	"	5	4	15. 8
Joel Wait	10	"	5	4	
Noah Morton	10	"	5	4	
John Lancton	10	"	5	4	
Martin Phelps	10	"	5	4	
Josiah Nash	10	"	5	4	3. 0
Shadrach Bedortha	10	"	5	4	
Ebn' Wells	10	"	5	4	
Samuel Chapen	10	"	5	4	
Nathan Warner	10	"	5	4	
Nat' Chamberlain	10	"	5	4	
Joseph Row at Capt. Miller's	10	"	5	4	
John Stratton	10	"	5	4	
Gad Cox	10	"	5	4	
Peter Montague	10	"	5	4	1.15
Oliver Theur	10	"	5	4	14.6
Darbe Crowley	10	"	5	4	1.19
Samuel Edwards	to a shirt				2.10
	10	"	5	4	
Elisha Strong	10	"	5	4	1.12 2
Moses Allis	10	"	5	4	
Nath'l Olds	10	"	5	4	
Josiah Davenson	10	"	5	4	
Medad Parsons	10	"	5	4	
Benj. Southwick	10	"	5	4	1.14 1.10
Oliver Haskins	10	"	5	4	
Noah Allen	10	"	5	4	1.10

## CHAPTER XII.

### KING GEORGE'S FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR.

**Aggressive Policy of the French.** THE year 1746 was full of alarms, skirmishes and ambuscades. The French developed a peculiarly aggressive policy, constantly harassing the frontiers with small bands, cutting off unsupported parties, devastating solitary and detached settlements, capturing, slaying, scalping and destroying. Expedition after expedition was hurled against New England, composed mostly of Indians, but with French soldiers, commanded by French officers. Within nine months from the last of December, 1745, not less than forty-three of these separate detachments, in which about two thousand men were engaged, were dispatched upon errands of blood and destruction.<sup>1</sup> Thirty-seven persons were killed, captured or wounded on the northern frontiers before the summer ended. An attack upon the fortifications at Bernardston was foiled, one man being wounded, while at Colrain one soldier was killed and another made prisoner. The enemy was constantly prowling about Fort Massachusetts; a party of men sent not above sixty rods from the fortification fell into an ambuscade, one was killed, another wounded and a third captured.

**Capture of Fort Massachusetts.** On the 19<sup>th</sup> of August, Fort Massachusetts was invested by a body of nearly eight hundred French and Indians under command of M. Rigaud de Vaudreuil, brother of Gov. Vaudreuil. Sergt., afterwards Lieut.-Colonel, John Hawks, was temporarily in command; Capt. Williams, commander of the post, being absent on duty connected with the projected

<sup>1</sup> *New York Colonial Documents*, vol. X., pp. 34, 35.

invasion of Canada. Sergt. Hawks had but twenty-one men under him, more than half of whom were on the sick list. For twenty-eight hours the little garrison held the fort, despite the efforts of the besiegers. At last, having expended all their ammunition, they surrendered on promise of quarter, and were well treated. One of the garrison was killed and two wounded, while the enemy lost from forty to seventy.<sup>1</sup> No person from Northampton was a member of the garrison. Just before the attack on the fort, thirteen of the garrison commanded by Dr. Thomas Williams, were sent to Deerfield, to procure ammunition and supplies. They passed along the road guarded on each side by the secreted forces of Vaudreuil, unmolested. The enemy were only too glad that the garrison should be weakened, and dared not bring on a conflict prematurely by attacking them.

**The Bars' Fight.** The French commander, leaving a guard of fifty or sixty men, pushed on with his prisoners towards Canada. This detachment, dissatisfied with the result of the foray, and anxious to obtain more prisoners or scalps, determined to raid Deerfield. They reached the village on Sunday and the next morning placed an ambush near a meadow, in which was a quantity of partly cured hay. Near this place, called the Bars, were a couple of houses occupied by families by the name of Amsden and Allen, who were lodging at the fort. Early on Monday morning, unsuspecting of danger, the party, among whom were several children, and two soldiers detailed as a guard, went to their work. Eleazar Hawks, a hunter, stumbled upon the ambuscade and was shot and scalped. All fled at the first alarm, towards a mill, a short distance down the creek. Some of the men endeavored to make a stand and fight off the Indians, but were soon overpowered. One of the lads was seized and scalped; two of the men were shot, while a third escaped to an island in the river and finally reached the opposite bank. Of the eight persons in the party, four—Samuel Allen, Adonijah Gillet, Oliver Amsden, and Simeon Amsden—were killed; two—

<sup>1</sup> For a full description of this fight, see "Hoyt's Indian Wars," Parkman's "Half Century of Conflict," Sheldon's "History of Deerfield," Norton's "Redeemed Captive," Perry's "Williamstown."

John Sadler, and Caleb Allen—escaped: one, Samuel Allen, was captured, and another—Eunice Amsden—thirteen years old, was tomahawked and left for dead. In their haste, the Indians failed to take her scalp, and she lived seventy-two years afterwards.

Immediate pursuit was made by parties from Deerfield; one detachment went up the Deerfield river, and another pushed across to Charlemont, hoping to intercept the enemy, but without success. They escaped, having secured five scalps and one prisoner.

Projected Invasion  
of Canada.

Early in the year great preparations were made for the invasion of Canada. The American colonies agreed to provide eight thousand two hundred men, and England engaged to send eight battalions. Massachusetts voted to raise three thousand five hundred men, and actually enlisted two thousand. A bounty of £30, old tenor, a blanket, and a bed for two, were granted to each soldier. The New England levies were to join the British at Louisburg and sail up the St. Lawrence, while the troops from New York and the other Provinces were to proceed by the way of Lake Champlain. The English forces failed to appear and the enterprise was abandoned. Gov. Shirley, however, proposed to attack Crown Point, and a portion of the Massachusetts militia went to Albany to prepare for the expedition. Before it was fully organized, news was received that a French fleet and an army of four thousand men, commanded by the Duc D'Anville, was on the way to capture Louisburg, burn Boston, and lay waste the New England coast. On the reception of this intelligence, the Massachusetts troops were recalled and ordered to Boston.

Hampshire Troops  
Ordered to Bos-  
ton.

When the alarm caused by the expected appearance of D'Anville's fleet was at its height, Gen. Dwight's Regiment was divided; five companies were sent to Boston, and five were assigned to duty on the western frontiers. Nothing appears to show to which section Major Pomeroy's Company was attached, but from the orders of Col. Stoddard, it seems probable that it remained in this section.

**Major Seth Pomeroy's Company.**Flushed with the honors of Louisburg, Major Pomeroy entered with much zeal upon the projected campaign against Canada. Within ten months after his return from that expedition, he was specially engaged in raising men for this undertaking. The invasion of Canada had always been popular with the people, and in less than sixty days he succeeded in enlisting a company of about one hundred soldiers. The officers were Nathaniel Kellogg and William Lyman, Lieutenants; John Stebbins, Ensign; Ebenezer Kingsley, William Smith, Noah Clap, and Elijah Smith, Sergeants; Samuel Lynde, Hezekiah Smith, John Wait, Richard Wilde, Corporals; David Darby and Noah Pixley, Drummers. These men were in service from June, 1746, to October, 1747. The company was then re-enlisted for sixty-one days more.

**It is Ordered to Pursue the Indians.**

Nothing is known of the rank and file, and very little concerning the services actually performed by this company, but enough remains to prove that they were not idle. While awaiting orders, Major Pomeroy's headquarters were at Northampton. When the Canada expedition was abandoned, the soldiers enlisted from this section were employed upon the western frontiers. A portion of the Hampshire Regiment was detailed in April, under Col. William Williams, to rebuild Fort Massachusetts, and it is possible that a part of the Northampton Company was among those troops. June 23<sup>d</sup>, Brig.-Gen. Joseph Dwight, who had command of the western division of the Massachusetts soldiers, was at Hatfield, and wrote to Major Pomeroy "that about 30 of the enemy had been discovered upon some part of Green River, about 8 miles from Deerfield." He ordered Major Pomeroy to immediately rally every man of his company, able to march and march with them; and to take six days' provisions, adding "for in such a crowd as there will be at Deerfield, your men will be put to difficulty." \* \* \* "Your newtown (Southampton) must be cared for by your own officers, I mean the officers of the town. Men are hourly expected also from Connecticut, who may supply their places. Use Dispatch." But little further information has been

obtained concerning this movement. It is believed that the detachment penetrated into Vermont, but there is no indication that any Indians were discovered.

*And Afterwards sent to Hoosack.* Scarcely had the company returned from this scout, when peremptory orders were received to march to Hoosack. The following letter from Col. Stoddard, found among the Pomeroy papers, undoubtedly contained the orders that sent them to that point. Unfortunately the letter is without date, but it fits into the narrative so completely, that little doubt exists relative to the time of its writing:—

“ You are hereby authorized and directed to take charge of the men now raised for his Majesty's special service and march them to Deerfield, so seasonably that they may have everything in readiness to go from thence early the next morning.

“ If possible you must be at Horsewick [Hoosack] to-morrow in case you hear nothing that renders your going needless. You must march the men with care, silence and watchfulness especially in straight and difficult passages.

“ If you meet with any of the enemy you must behave with gallantry. Don't lose a good opportunity either through rashness or fear. If the enemy are lately drawn off probably they may be overtaken, especially if they have wounded men. Take good care to avoid ambuscades and in general you must exercise prudence upon every new event and do as shall appear needful on all unforeseen occurrences.

I am your Servant,

JOHN STODDART.

“ To Major Seth Pomeroy.

“ If any of the men don't take care to carry a week's provision, let them and not others suffer by their neglect.”

*The Company at Fort Massachu- setta.* Whatever may have been the occasion of the march to Hoosack, and whatever the date of the orders to march thither, certain

it is that Major Pomeroy was at Fort Massachusetts in August of that year. He was not in command of the fort, as Major Ephraim Williams had been assigned to that position in June. In a letter to his wife, dated Fort Massachusetts, August 3<sup>d</sup>, 1747, Major Pomeroy writes:—

“ I have written to Lieut. Kellogg to be ready to come for my relief with twenty-five or thirty men, next Monday morning. If he comes at that time I shan't want any thing sent to me. We live at this Fort well, my dinner yesterday was a biscake, suet whortleberry pudding and a good piece of corned beef, with squashes and turnips, no cider,

but a good appetite. As for news I have not much to say, but last Thursday and Friday nights the Indians were about the Fort. I have an account of the Indians being seen three times since in the day time here, but I am not satisfied with any one of them."

*And afterwards in Boston.* A few months later Major Pomeroy, and apparently his whole company, were in

Boston. He writes from that city to his wife, under date of October 22<sup>d</sup>, but the letter contains no allusion to his military duties. About two weeks after, in another letter from the same place, he announces the "good news" "that the Canada forces are dismissed from the service," and that "Divine Providence permitting I will be at home next week." An allusion to Lieut. Kellogg, who was to return before the Major, indicates that a portion if not the entire company were with him. The transfer of Major Pomeroy's company to Boston at this time, was probably on account of the threatened attack on Boston and the New England coast, by the French fleet, under De la Jonquiere.

*Indian Depredations at Southampton.* Scattering parties of Indians were constantly hovering round the settlements during the year 1746, stealing and destroying property, but no person was slain within the present limits of Northampton. The houses of Aaron and Elisha Clark in Southampton, then the Second Precinct of Northampton, had been abandoned because of the threatened danger. A small body of roving Indians plundered them August 25<sup>th</sup>, tearing the beds in pieces, seizing clothing and provisions, and committing other depredations. Fearing pursuit, the savages fled to Pomeroy's Mountain, and on the west side of it wantonly slaughtered six cattle and one horse, and wounded others. Lieut. Lyman of Northampton was on the ground on the 28<sup>th</sup>, and Lieut. David Moseley with twenty-two men from Westfield, went after the marauders, but without effect. Intent on further mischief, the Indians, about two weeks afterwards, laid an ambuscade near the houses of Ezra Strong and John Wait, designing to get the scalp of the person who came to the pasture after the cows at night. They drove the cows to the farther side of the lot, and while trying to keep them there, were discovered and fled.

**An Attack near Fort Massachusetts.**

Operations were continued with increased vigor throughout the succeeding year.

During the winter, the fort at No. 4 (Charlestown) had been deserted, and several of the settlements in New Hampshire were also abandoned. These towns had been established under the authority of Massachusetts, but when the southern boundary line of New Hampshire was adjusted, they came within the jurisdiction of the latter. After the troops from Massachusetts had been withdrawn, New Hampshire refused to replace them. It was deemed essential, however, that these defences should be maintained, and all were garrisoned. While the repairs upon Fort Massachusetts were in progress, a detachment of one hundred men was sent to Albany for supplies, and the Indians aware of the movement, attempted to cut off the train and surprise the fort. Three hundred men set out to waylay the train, and as many more prepared to attack the fort. The former division struck the trail of the Albany party in its rear, while the advance guard of the English coming upon the other detachment, as it was moving to attack the fort, on the morning of May 25<sup>th</sup>, gave the alarm and the enemy fled without a blow.

**Attack on No. 4 Repulsed.**

Adhering to the policy of the preceding year, the French continued to fit out detachments of savages commissioned to carry forward the bloody work. The fort at Hinsdale, N. H., was surprised and partly burned in March, but the assailants were driven off. A determined attack was made on Fort No. 4 early in April, by a large force of French and Indians under Sieur Baptiste Boucher de Niverville.<sup>1</sup> The fort was garrisoned by forty-nine men commanded by Capt. Phinehas Stevens of Sudbury, an early settler and afterwards a resident of Charlestown. After three days of continuous fighting, during which time the fort was partially burned, de Niverville drew off his forces and disappeared.<sup>2</sup> Among the gallant soldiers, who success-

<sup>1</sup> English historians give the name of this officer as M. Debeline, but no such name is found upon the French records, and in the N. Y. Colonial MSS. he is named as above.

<sup>2</sup> This was one of the most spirited engagements of the war. It is graphically described in Hoyt's Indian Wars, pp. 242, 243; and in Parkman's "Half Century of Conflict," pp. 228-232.

fully repulsed the enemy, were several men from Northampton. Lieut. William Lyman was second in command, Noah Clapp was Sergeant, and John Birge, John Pomeroy, Ithamar Strong, and Zadoc Danks, were privates. They were soldiers who had enlisted for the expedition against Canada. After this defeat the enemy on their homeward march, killed several men in the vicinity of Northfield, and destroyed much abandoned property.<sup>1</sup>

**Soldiers at Fort Massachusetts.**

Lieut. Lyman, after the desperate fight at Charlestown, was put in command of Fort Massachusetts during the autumn and winter following, serving in that capacity from November to January. His company consisted of forty-five men, of whom the following eleven were from Northampton:—Sergt. Elisha Hawley, Ebenezer Clapp, Ebenezer Harvey, Joseph Marchants, John Pomeroy, Elisha Warner, Elisha Baker, Bildad Wright, Silas Clark, Joseph Root, and Nathaniel Edwards. Lieut. Elisha Hawley succeeded Lieut. Lyman and was in command of the fort during February and March. Concerning his appointment, Col. Stoddard writes in March, as follows:—“We could at first get no better officer than a serg-nt, afterwards I gave a Lieut<sup>nt</sup> commission to Mr. Elisha Hawley, who is the only officer there at present.”<sup>2</sup>

**Vaudreuil's Futile Expedition.**

In July, a force of one thousand Indians and two hundred Frenchmen, commanded by Mons. Rigaud de Vaudreuil, was dispatched from Canada to protect Fort St. Frederick (Crown Point). Finding the fort in no danger, he pushed on and made a demonstration against Fort Saratoga, but was driven away, and returned, without attempting further damage, to Fort St. Frederick. A scouting party, led by Lieut. Matthew Clesson, was sent out from Fort Massachusetts to ascertain the whereabouts of the enemy. They were absent twenty-two days and reported that Vaudreuil

<sup>1</sup> “On their return they burnt within 30 or 40 leagues, 5 small forts that were abandoned, 3 meeting-houses, about 100 dwellings mostly of two stories, furnished even to chests of drawers, the decorations of which the Indians carried off; several fine barns, and killed 5 or 600 sheep and hogs, and about 30 horned cattle. This devastation is well worth a few prisoners or scalps.”—N. Y. Colonial MSS., vol. X., p. 97.

<sup>2</sup> Judd MSS.

had retreated. During the same month one man was killed at Bernardston, and another at Colrain. Scouting detachments made up from the upper Hampshire towns and from the garrisons, were continually patrolling the country and the movements of the enemy were closely observed.

**Other Casualties.** Later in the year a soldier was slain near Northfield, a man captured at Hinsdale, and Fort Bridgeman, in Vermont, which had been deserted, was burned. A company of twelve men, descending Connecticut River from Charlestown, was attacked; two were killed one wounded and another made prisoner.

**Elisha Clark Killed in Southampton.** No Indians appeared in this vicinity till late in August, when Elisha Clark, living in the extreme northwestern part of the town of Southampton, was killed by them. While he was threshing grain in his barn, at an early hour in the morning of the 27<sup>th</sup>, sixteen Indians crept stealthily up, shot and scalped him, leaving his body, which had been penetrated by seven bullets, carefully covered with straw. The enemy immediately fled, wantonly destroying as they went such cattle and other stock as came in their way. They encamped the next night near the house formerly owned by Noah Strong in Westhampton, where they left standing sixteen poles, which were supposed to indicate the strength of the party. A company of thirty-six men under Lieut. Eldad Taylor of Westfield, started in pursuit. The men were all from Westfield, with the exception of Haines Kingsley, who was a native of Northampton. These soldiers were paid for thirty-seven days' service, but they did not succeed in overtaking the enemy.

**St. Blein Wounded and Exchanged.** In October, a scouting party of three persons, riding from Fort Dummer to Northfield, fell in with and wounded the commander of a detachment of French and Indians. This party consisted of forty savages, who started from Canada in September. They had just gone forward to slaughter cattle, and their leader remained behind in charge of their packs. The cadet in command of this force was Pierre Raim-

bault St. Blein.<sup>1</sup> The wounded officer fainted after surrendering, and the scouts supposed him to be mortally wounded. Fearing that the Indians, alarmed by the firing, would soon return, they left their prisoner and made quick time to their destination. Starting hurriedly homeward, the savages carried their wounded commander a short distance and then abandoned him. After wandering four days, he approached Northfield and surrendered. He was carried to Boston, where his wound was cured in a short time. The next year, Gov. Shirley, desirous of exchanging prisoners, dispatched Lieut.-Col. Hawks, and a small party to Canada with the prisoner, St. Blein. An arrangement was speedily effected by which two men, Samuel Allen, captured at the "Bars," and Nathaniel Blake, made prisoner at Keene, were exchanged for the French commander, and Hawks returned in May, 1749. Young Allen seems to have been greatly fascinated with Indian life, and it was only by force that he could be brought away from among his newly adopted friends. In November a party of Indians surprised twelve men in the vicinity of No. 4, killed three of them and captured a fourth.

Fort Built in East-hampton.

In April a fort was built at Jonathan Clapp's, in what is now known as East-hampton, for protection against the Indians.

Major Clapp resided near the homestead more recently occupied by the late Ansel Bartlett. This fort cost upwards of one hundred days' labor, including team-work. The price of labor was then 8s. per day old tenor, and the work was chiefly performed by men who lived in that part of the town. Soldiers and citizens labored together in this occupation under the superintendence of Lieut. William Lyman, Major Joseph Hawley, and Sergt. Smith. The following named soldiers were employed in this work, viz.:—Zadoc Danks, Samuel Janes, Ebenezer Clapp, Ebenezer Harvey, Benjamin Eastman, Isaac Goodale, Philip Richardson, Jonathan Stone [Strong], John Warner, John

<sup>1</sup> For a full account of this incident, see Sheldon's History of Deerfield, pp. 554-555. Historians have given the name as Raimbault, Rainbœu, and Simblin, but Mr. Sheldon has found ample evidence that his real name was as given above, Pierre Raimbault St. Blein. Naturally the last name, St. Blein, might have been undoubtedly was pronounced Simblin, while the former, spelled as pronounced, might readily take the variations given.

Birge, Aaron Bartlett, Joseph Marchant, Asahel Judd, Ithamar Strong. Six of these men had seen service at Fort Massachusetts.

**Soldiers Taxes Abated.** In August, 1747, the town voted to release the men who had been in the service the year previous, from their poll-taxes. Under this order the taxes of twenty-six men were abated. Only the names of the following soldiers, seventeen in number, have been preserved:—Orlando Bridgman, Elisha Hawley, Lieut. William Lyman, Caleb Strong, Thomas Starr, Gideon Parsons, Lieut. Samuel Clapp, Samuel Clark, William Wait, Abraham Miller, Samuel Janes, Capt. Roger Clapp, Ens. John Clapp, Edward Coates, Preserved Bartlett, Waitstill Strong, Robert Danks.

**Unsatisfactory Condition of Affairs.** The year 1748, was one of disaster and discouragement. Flying detachments of French and Indians, gathering a scalp here, a prisoner there, and plunder everywhere, buzzed about the settlements, quickly disappearing when a hand was stretched to smite them. The tone of the correspondence of the military officers in command in this section was despondent. People were disheartened and dispirited. Enlistments were tardy, the forts insufficiently manned, and with difficulty provisioned. Discontent existed in some of the upper towns in reference to the amounts allowed for billeting the soldiers, provisions were dear and scarce, the commanding officers did not always act in harmony, and altogether matters on the western frontiers were not in a very promising condition. In some of the more exposed towns it was impossible to sow grain in the spring, for lack of guards to protect the workmen, and provisions had to be brought from Westfield. Constant complaints were made by the officers that the men were insufficiently paid, and that they were unwilling to run the risks of the campaign on such slender compensation. Reinforcements were expected from Connecticut, but only about one half of the number promised ever appeared. Major Williams writes to Gov. Shirley, July 16<sup>th</sup>:—“The business of the soldiery is chiefly to guard provisions to the several garrisons.—Our

case is miserable and the enemy triumph." After the death of Col. Stoddard, officers of the Connecticut troops paid little attention to the orders of the Massachusetts commanders, one of them declaring that he would obey no orders except those from Hartford. Many of the war parties sent out from Canada this year, were of greater strength than before, and they were generally successful. Numbers of persons were killed and many others carried into captivity.

**Death of Col. John Stoddard.**

Another great misfortune befell the Bay Colony, this year, in the death of Col. Stoddard, which occurred on the 19<sup>th</sup> of June. He was in Boston attending a session of the Legislature when taken sick, and he died within a few days. For many years he had been at the head of affairs in this part of the colony, and his loss was severely felt. Major Israel Williams writing to Secretary Willard, under date of June 25<sup>th</sup>, says:—

"We are now like sheep without a shepherd. \* \* \* God has been pleased to take him (who was in a great measure our wisdom and strength, and glory), from us at a time when we could least spare him." Rev. Timothy Woodbridge, in a letter to Capt. Ephraim Williams, dated Hatfield, July 21<sup>st</sup>, 1748, says:—"What a noble example has that great and good man, Col. Stoddard, left every military officer who had the happiness to be acquainted with him; his justice, integrity, and uprightness in his conduct, his virtue and piety, so loved now he is gone, that even his enemies are obliged to join in his praises; and while I mention that great man, whose face we shall see no more, I would drop a tear with you over his grave. I know his death must sensibly touch you. Your friend, a friend of his country, a great benefactor to mankind, is gone. Let his shining example continually live with us."

**His Successor Appointed.**

Col. Eleazar Porter of Hadley was the officer next in rank to Col. Stoddard, and was entitled to the position of commander of the Hampshire forces. He received the appointment, but it was supposed that he would decline the position. Rev. Timothy Woodbridge accurately sized him up when he said that Col. Porter "had no genius for war." He soon resigned and Col. Israel Williams of Hatfield was commissioned. In accepting he modestly bewails his inability to supply the place of the "great and wise Col. Stoddard."

*Col. Dwight's Suggestions.*

Col. Joseph Dwight of Brookfield in a letter to the Secretary suggested that it was "time for the government to exert its power, & if need be raise half the militia of the province. I beg we may have 1000 men to drive the woods & pursue the enemy even to Crown Point; and perhaps it would be best to give £1000 for a scalp. Why should we lie still and do nothing?" He also suggested that volunteers might readily be obtained, and urged the government to do something. His letter was dated July 16<sup>th</sup>. Two days afterwards, acting Gov. Phipps sent him orders to raise a company of volunteers, accompanied by commissions signed in blank for its officers. Acting promptly under this authority, he speedily raised a company, and within a month lead it on a scouting expedition. Col. Dwight held a command in the army designed for the invasion of Canada, which had been disbanded during the previous year, and doubtless found many of his old soldiers ready for further service.

*A Series of Disasters.*

A number of misfortunes followed each other in quick succession in 1748. On the 13<sup>th</sup> of May, Capt. Eleazar Melvin with eighteen men went "out upon a scalping design." They were absent between two and three weeks, saw and fired at some Indians in canoes, killing one and wounding another, near Fort Frederick (Crown Point). A party was sent from the fort in pursuit, but Melvin eluded them. But afterwards, supposing himself safe, vigilance was relaxed, he was surprised, five of his men were killed, and one wounded. Leaving their wounded comrade, Joseph Petty of Northfield, Melvin and the survivors of his party, made the best of their way to Fort Dummer. A detachment sent out in pursuit of the Indians, found and buried Petty's body, but saw no savages.

On the 16<sup>th</sup> of June, a company of fourteen men, en route from Col. Hinsdale's Fort at Ashuelot to Fort Dummer, fell into an ambuscade; four of them were killed, six carried captive to Canada, and four, one of them wounded, escaped.

Ten days later, Capt. Hobbs, commanding forty men, while marching from No. 4, Charlestown, to Fort Shirley

in Heath, was attacked. The fight lasted four hours, when the enemy fled. Three men were killed and four wounded.

On the 19<sup>th</sup> of July, Col. Willard writes from Fort Dummer to Gov. Shirley as follows:—

“ About 17 men going from Northfield to Ashuelot, by way of Fort Dummer (10 of them to supply place of 10 killed and taken June 16), were attacked within half a mile of Fort Dummer, and within a few rods of the spot where the 10 were killed or taken. This was on the 14<sup>th</sup> of July. 4 are found dead and 9 missing. 2 escaped to Col. Hinsdale’s garrison and 2 to Fort Dummer. Number of the enemy 100 or more.”

These men were under command of Sergt. Thomas Taylor, who with nine others was carried to Canada.

In a letter written from Hatfield, July 24, Major Israel Williams states:— “ Before sunrise yesterday, 6 Indians killed Aaron Belding in Northfield Town street and scalped him. The people were generally in bed. They got up and followed after them, but to no purpose.”

Col. Ephraim Williams gives the following account of a fight with the enemy in a letter to Major Israel Williams, dated Fort Massachusetts, August 2<sup>d</sup>, 1748:—

“ Our scout to Scaticook was followed in by the enemy, and they have observed our motions ever since; but the guard I sent to Deerfield to bring stores arrived yesterday, 40 men with Lt. Severance and Hawley —[They] made no discovery from Deerfield here. Today I suspected by motions of dogs &c., an ambush, about 40 rods from the fort, between the fort and where we cross the river to go to Deerfield, ordered men to be ready. They fired at our dog, and next at some men that had gone out unknown to me, who returned the fire. We then made a sally with about 35 men to save those men that were out, engaged the enemy 10 minutes & drove them off the ground, upon which an ambush of 50 men about 10 rods off and partly between us and the fort, rose on our right wing & discharged a volley upon us. We retreated fighting into the fort, which they attacked immediately. I ordered the men to their posts & played with our cannon & small arms for 1 $\frac{1}{4}$  hours by the glass. They then retreated by degrees & so drew off. How many we killed or wounded I know not, but we had some fair shots, and they not over 15 rods off, & some at 7 rods. We had none killed & but 3 wounded, but 2 of them mortally I fear. The men wounded are Lt. Hawley, Samuel Abbot, Ezekiel Wells. Lt. Hawley is shot through the calf of his leg with a buckshot, bone not hurt. Abbot is shot below his navel,<sup>1</sup> and Wells in his hippa. Strange that we should receive at least 200 shot in the open field, retreat 40 rods, and but 2 men wounded (for Abbot was not out).

<sup>1</sup> He lived but a few days.

"Judge the enemy between 200 and 300, chiefly Indians, though I believe there were 30 French among them. Some talked good English. All ours behaved like good soldiers, no man flinched. Blessed be God we have to sing of mercy as well as judgment."<sup>1</sup>

The attacking party consisted of ninety domiciliated Indians and forty-six Canadians, who were commanded by Chevalier Jean Boucher de Niverville, the same officer who so unsuccessfully attacked Fort No. 4 the year previous. In his report he states that most of his men were sick and fought indifferently, "so that there were killed but 5 Englishmen, and only two of his own party were wounded."<sup>2</sup>

**Lieut. Hawley.** Lieut. Elisha Hawley, who was wounded in this fight, was the only Northampton man in the command. He was a brother of Major Joseph Hawley, and had been previously in charge of the post, having been commissioned a Lieutenant by Col. Stoddard, when he wanted some one for that purpose.

**Scout by Col. Dwight.** On the 7<sup>th</sup> of August, presumably when the news of this attack was received, Col. Joseph Dwight and a company of ninety-nine men were sent out upon a scouting expedition, but its destination is not given. An account of this expedition may be found in the following letter from Major Joseph Hawley<sup>3</sup> to his brother Elisha, who had been wounded a few days before at Fort Massachusetts:—

"Deerfield, Aug. 12, 1748.

"Dear Brother—I am now at Deerfield with Col. Dwight of Brookfield, about 10 of the clock, a. m. We came yesterday from Northampton, with 29 good men enlisted voluntarily under s'd Co<sup>1</sup> with a design to endeavor to scour the frontier, viz: Maj. Seth Pomeroy, Capt. Jno. Lyman, Lt. Noah Wright, Ensign Gideon Lyman, Ena. Timothy Dwight, Jos. Hawley Gent. All other private men to the above number, among which is Noah Lyman, there are about 30 come, and coming from all y<sup>r</sup> parts of Hadley, 16 to come this forenoon from Hatfield, a number from Springfield, 44 from Brookfield, Western and Hardwick, who got to Northfield by way of y<sup>r</sup> Eastern front, Monday or Tuesday; 100 more Col. Chandler sent who we suppose reached Northfield yesterday. All of which with some we design to take from these upper

<sup>1</sup> This letter may be found in the above abridged form in the Judd MSS.

<sup>2</sup> New York Historical MSS., vol. X., p. 177.

<sup>3</sup> Hawley MSS. in Bancroft Collection, Lenox Library, N. Y.

Towns will make near 250. The plan of operations is not yet settled, but what seems to be concerting is to send to y<sup>e</sup> fort and No. 4, to warn you forthwith to join on West river to intercept and expect them on their return home, while we scour <sup>e</sup>em from y<sup>e</sup> frontier."

The letter closes with the mention of Elisha's wound, a recommendation from his mother, and an allusion to some "sarve."

This Expedition  
Unnoticed.

Scarce any other allusion has been found to this expedition, more formidable in regard to numbers than any that had been organized in this section during the war. It did not succeed, however, in overtaking the enemy. The men were undoubtedly enlisted by Col. Dwight under the authority issued by Gov. Phipps in July, and the design of "scouring <sup>e</sup>em from the frontier," was in accordance with the recommendation of Col. Dwight to the authorities in his letter of the 16<sup>th</sup>. It was the last effort of the war, as the proclamation for the cessation of hostilities was received before the soldiers returned. The troops were paid for twelve days' service.

Letter from Major  
Israel Williams.

On the 5<sup>th</sup> of August, Major Israel Williams writes to Secretary Willard, enclosing the letter from Capt. Ephraim Williams, reciting the attack upon Fort Massachusetts. He says:—"The enemy are discovered almost daily in all parts of the frontiers. Our enemies are not in a lethargy, though some are ready to think we are so." Again he writes:—"Upwards of 50 persons have been killed or captured on our western frontier the last spring and this summer, most of them soldiers, and several severely wounded."

Most of the River  
Towns Escape.

Little direct suffering from Indian incursions was inflicted upon the lower river towns this year. Occasionally a small scouting party would penetrate the settlements and leave its mark. Within the limits of the present town of Northampton no outrages were committed. In the Precinct of Southampton one casualty occurred, with temporary bad results to the people of that section.

**Noah Pixley Killed at Southampton.** Early in May, Noah Pixley, who lived in Southampton, was killed in the highway, while returning from the pasture to which he had just driven his cows. The Indians fired four or five shots at Pixley, wounding him in the arm. He ran some distance, but was overtaken, tomahawked and scalped, the savages cutting off part of his skull in their haste. In their flight the Indians stopped at the house of Samuel Burt, which had been deserted, but only slight damage was done there. A party of thirteen men under Sergt. Hawks of Deersfield immediately started in pursuit of the marauders, marching as far as the Dutch settlements at Hoosack, designing to intercept them. They were gone four days, but as usual saw no Indians. A company of thirty men, under Major Williams, was stationed at Newhampton and Blandford, from June to October 31<sup>st</sup>. In this company were several Northampton men whose names have been heretofore mentioned.

**Southampton Deserted.**

The inhabitants of Newhampton, as it was frequently called in the military correspondence of that day, were panic-stricken by this disaster, and abandoned the settlement. Most of them came from Northampton, and before the middle of May, the majority of them had returned to their old homes. Rev. Jonathan Judd, the minister, moved all his "household stuff" to Suffield, where he had relatives, on the 14<sup>th</sup> of May, and did not again occupy his house in Southampton till the 23<sup>d</sup> of December. Seven families returned in July, remaining there as a garrison during the summer. Before snow began to fly, nearly all the settlers were back on their homesteads.

**Peace Declared.**

On the 18<sup>th</sup> of October, 1748, peace between England and France was signed at Aix la Chapelle, but the Indians were not immediately quieted, and occasional raids were made by them till the following year, when peace was signed with the eastern tribes, Oct. 17, 1749.

**Louisburg Given Up.** Peace was purchased with Louisburg.

The recession of that fortress and the Island of Cape Breton to France was the price paid for the short cessation of hostilities that followed. That this stronghold, won by the valor of the colonies, should be returned to its former owners, was peculiarly galling to the pride of New England, soothed though it was by the payment of a round sum of money into the treasury of the Province, to cover the expenses of the campaign.

## CHAPTER XIII.

### COL. JOHN STODDARD.

**First Appearance.** JOHN, eighth child and fourth son of Rev. Solomon Stoddard, born February 7<sup>th</sup>, 1681, first comes into this narrative on the morning of February 29<sup>th</sup>, 1701, when the French and Indians carried death and destruction into the little hamlet of Deerfield. From that time onward the history of the times is the biography of the man. The many important affairs, already detailed, in which he was a prominent actor, not only afford an insight into his character, but place him upon the record as one of the foremost men of his generation. Little remains, therefore, but to sketch, in a general way, the most important among the many and diversified duties he was called upon to discharge during a public life covering a period of nearly fifty years.

**Graduation and Early Life.** At the age of nineteen years, in 1701, he was graduated at Harvard College with an average record as a student and without exhibiting in any marked degree the real talent so conspicuous in after years. Neither is there any intimation that he adopted the usual course of country graduates, and became a teacher, or that he entered upon the study of the law. It is to be presumed that he spent the immediate years after graduation at his home in Northampton, entering with earnestness upon the various projects and affairs that engrossed the attention of his fellow townsmen.

**Stirring and Momentous Times.** The years following his graduation were full of momentous events, and he stepped from the exclusiveness of college life into the rapid whirl of active and restless human passion. His

career as a soldier was ushered in by one of the most ferocious and bloody encounters of that cruel and relentless warfare, in which he was subsequently called to bear a conspicuous part. Political and economic questions of vital interest to the colony were constantly claiming attention during his entire collegiate course, and he could not have been indifferent to their significance.

**Military Honors.** When barely twenty-one years of age he enlisted in the train band of Northampton, and was soon after in active service. His ability as a soldier and an officer was speedily recognized, and promotion was not delayed. At every new outbreak of hostilities, when men of military capacity were needed, Col. Stoddard received greater honors. Common soldier in 1704; Captain in 1706; Major in 1712; Colonel in 1721; Commander-in-chief of the Western Department in 1744, he proved himself everywhere the right man in the right place. Gov. Dummer, recognizing his capacity, soon employed him in diplomatic service. In 1713, when he had attained only the rank of Major, he was sent on a difficult and perplexing mission to Canada, for the purpose of negotiating for the release and exchange of the English prisoners then in the hands of the French and Indians.<sup>1</sup> "This delicate and very important commission he executed in such a manner, as to recommend himself highly to the Governour of Canada, and to produce a general satisfaction throughout his own country."<sup>2</sup>

**Selectman.** His abilities were early recognized by his townsmen, and he was honored by them with many offices of trust and importance. At the age of twenty-four, he was first chosen a member of the board of Selectmen, and the record shows the prefix of Mr. to his name, a mark of distinction, seldom in those days accorded to one so young. He was sixteen times re-elected selectman during the remaining thirty-two years of his life. In 1743, he had a superfluity of titles, being named on the record as Hon. John Stoddard Esq. Afterwards he is repeatedly

<sup>1</sup> Vol. 1, p. 524.

<sup>2</sup> Dwight's Travels, vol. 1, p. 221.

called John Stoddard Esq., but that was after he became by common consent "Squire Stoddard" to all the village people.

Representative, and  
other Duties.

In 1716, he was first chosen representative to the General Court. He was seventeen times re-elected to that position, and was serving in it when his death occurred. When a candidate, he suffered defeat on some occasions owing to local feuds. In 1722, he was selectman, representative, and moderator of town-meetings in Northampton, besides being engaged in government work at the extreme western limit of the Province. Often than any of his contemporaries was he chosen moderator of town-meetings, probably being elected to that office whenever present. In twenty-two different years, from 1716 to his death, he was called to preside over the deliberations of the citizens of Northampton in town-meeting assembled.

Town Clerk.

Greatly interested in the third and permanent settlement of Northfield, though never a resident of that place, he was for eight years, from 1715 to 1723, annually chosen its town clerk. In recognition of his services in this capacity he was granted one hundred acres of land in that town, in 1719.

Councillor.

He was a member of "His Majesty's Council for the Province of Massachusetts," in 1724, 1727, and 1728. On account of his peculiar sentiments<sup>1</sup> considerable opposition was developed against him, and he failed of an election on several occasions. Rather than continue the fight, he declined being longer a candidate for that office, contenting himself with a seat in the House of Deputies, when the people saw fit to elect him. In only nine of the twenty years of life that remained to him, did the citizens of Northampton permit him to be absent from that body.

1 "He had been several years member of the council, but being in favor of the prerogative, generally met with great opposition, and having been divers times left out, he at length declined being any longer the subject of contention, and chose a seat in the house, his town thinking it a favor that he would represent them."—Hutchinson, vol. 2, p. 286.

**Engaged in Laying Out New Towns.**

Little public business of importance was transacted, especially in this region, in which he was not called to participate.

The record of his services already presented, exhibits only in part the multifarious labors that fell to his lot. In 1722, when townships were petitioned for on the Housatonnauck, Col. Stoddard and Ebenezer Pomeroy were members of a committee to divide the tracts granted, and lay them out. From this section five towns and parts of three others were established. Again in 1735, in connection with Col. Israel Williams, he bought of the Indians ten miles square of land above Fort Dummer, on Deerfield River. The next year he was engaged with Ebenezer Pomeroy and Thomas Ingersoll in laying out a township (Stockbridge), at Housatonnauck. He had charge of the settlement, and did much towards establishing the celebrated Indian mission there, subsequently presided over by Rev. Jonathan Edwards.

**Employed in Negotiations with the Indians.**

For many years, especially when hostilities with Canada were threatened or in actual progress, negotiations were carried on by the Province with the Five Nations and with the Six Nations, their neutrality or alliance being assiduously sought. In many of these transactions Col. Stoddard was employed, frequently entertaining the Indian ambassadors at his own private expense. The red men were usually ready to parley, never refusing the presents that frequently preceded the overtures, and always followed the treaty. The Five Nations sent delegates to Boston, in 1722, but nothing seems to have been accomplished. The following year the scene of negotiations was changed to Albany, and Col. Stoddard was appointed one of the commissioners to treat with them. Two meetings were held, one in May, 1723, and another the following year. Col. Stoddard set out from Northampton, Sept. 8<sup>th</sup>, 1724, and arrived at Albany on the 11<sup>th</sup>. On his return he reached home Sept. 26<sup>th</sup>. At the conference in May and June, 1723, Mr. Stoddard, who was dissatisfied with the way in which the government treated his accounts, showed righteous indignation, and proposed to throw up the whole matter and return home. His colleague, Ebenezer Pomeroy, "hopes Col. Stoddard

will stay or return again. \* \* \* It is a great pity he should not be at the conference." He was present at the meeting, either returning after his visit home or else reconsidering his intention of leaving.

"He had also an extensive acquaintance with the neighboring colonies and the neighboring nations on the continent. He had far greater knowledge than any other person in the land, of the several nations of Indians in these western parts of America, their tempers, manners, and the proper way of treating them; and was more extensively known by them than any other person in this country."<sup>1</sup>

Consequently he was oftener entrusted by government in the difficult and arduous task of negotiating with the Indian tribes and contiguous colonies.

**He Believes in Treating the Indians Kindly.** While the third French and Indian War, commencing in 1744, was in progress, he

was intrusted with the defense of the frontier, and had much to do with the measures adopted for conciliating the New York tribes. His sentiments regarding the method of treating the Indians are expressed in a letter to Gov. Shirley, dated May 13, 1747. "The Indians," he says, "are of such a humor that if we deal justly and kindly by them, they will put their lives into our hands, but if we deal deceitfully with them, that will soon raise an abhorrence of us."<sup>2</sup>

**A Misunderstanding with Dwight.** Between the soldiers recruited especially for the expedition to Canada and those employed for home defense, there arose some jealousy of feeling, and Col. Stoddard seems to have felt somewhat annoyed at the want of courtesy shown towards him. Many soldiers were recruited in Western Massachusetts for the expedition to Canada in 1746 and 1747. They were under the command of Col. Joseph Dwight of Brookfield, and when the scheme of invasion was abandoned, some of them were employed in guarding the frontiers. The following extract from a letter of Col. Stoddard to Gov. Shirley, dated Northampton, April 22, 1747, shows one occasion of misunderstanding, and Stoddard's complaint about it:—

<sup>1</sup> Funeral Sermon of Prest. Edwards, at the death of Col. Stoddard.

<sup>2</sup> Judd MSS.

"I mentioned to Col. Dwight about taking care of the men at No. 4: he gave a short answer, and I said no more. I supposed Col. Dwight had orders to send a guard to cover the workmen in building the fortifications & supposed he would meet the com', but he has gone to Brookfield. \* \* \* Your excellency will discern what work Col. Dwight and I shall make of doing business together. I have advised him in the best manner I have been able, but he is almost too great to be spoke to, and seems to look on the committee as so many spaniels."<sup>1</sup>

This lack of harmony was all the more galling to the home commander on account of the scarcity of men, and the difficulty of enlisting soldiers for the frontier service. The expedition against Canada was quite popular among the people, and no difficulty seems to have been experienced in obtaining recruits for that purpose. The excitement of a campaign in the enemy's country was much more attractive than the monotonous garrison life of the frontier forts, varied only by an occasional alarm, a dangerous scout, or a march through an ambushed wilderness for supplies. A portion of the Canada contingent had already been employed in rebuilding Fort Massachusetts, and it was but natural that Col. Stoddard should suggest still further methods of making them useful.

A Commissioner from  
Massachusetts.

While commander-in-chief on the western frontiers, he was appointed one of the commissioners to meet with others from New York and Connecticut, in order to concert measures for mutual defense against the common enemy. It was undoubtedly a meeting of this body upon which Col. Dwight so unceremoniously turned his back. In 1745, a conference was held with the Six Nations at Albany by the commissioners from Massachusetts, New York, Connecticut, and Pennsylvania. In this commission Col. Stoddard held an honorable position. Their deliberations extended over a number of weeks.

Judicial Employ-  
ments.

In addition to his many municipal, military, diplomatic, legislative and agrarian duties, he also held important judicial appointments. In 1725, he was made one of the Justices of the Inferior Court of Common Pleas for Hampshire County

<sup>1</sup> Judd MSS.

and afterwards became Chief Justice of the Court. Gov. Belcher, in 1729, added other legal duties, bestowing upon him the office of Judge of Probate for Hampshire County. Both of these offices he held through life. He was the third Judge of the latter court, succeeding Col. Samuel Partridge of Hatfield, who served twenty-six years. In 1736, Gov. Belcher appointed Col. Stoddard one of the Justices of the Superior Court, and the council "advised and consented;" but he never acted in that capacity, probably declining the position.

*Land Grant at Pittsfield.*

The General Court in 1734, granted Col. Stoddard one thousand acres of unappropriated land in Hampshire County. This

was made .

"in consideration of services and sufferings in and for the public: in divers journeys to Canada, Albany and the western parts, upon public affairs, his serving in the war with good success, his transactions with the Canada Indians and his entertaining at his house without any expense to the Province."

This tract, which was four hundred rods square, he selected within what is now the township of Pittsfield, and the grant was confirmed two years afterwards. The same year he petitioned the County Court for permission to lease from the Housatonic Indians a tract of land six miles square, for nine hundred ninety years, proposing to pay them £6 annually. He contended that one thousand acres were not enough to induce people to settle upon and establish a township. The court granted the petition, and the lease was consummated. At his death he owned land at Pontoosuck,<sup>1</sup> now Pittsfield, estimated to be worth £6,000. Grants of land made to him by the town of Northampton, in payment for services in settling boundary lines and other gratuitous labors, have been heretofore noted.

*Little to be found upon the Records Concerning the Motives of Prominent Men.*

A bare catalogue of the offices held by any active citizen is but a meagre statement of his usefulness, and reveals mainly the popular side of his character. Yet it shows the confidence reposed in him by his fellow townsmen and

<sup>1</sup> For further particulars of Col. Stoddard's transactions in real estate at Pontoosuck, see History of Pittsfield, vol. 1, pp. 68-69.

the government by which he was employed, and thus serves to indicate in a most emphatic manner, the true worth of the individual. In most cases it is nearly all that remains to the historian concerning the early settlers of any place. Prominent though they may have been in the councils of the community in which they lived, yet they have seldom left upon record any thing by which to gauge their real character or to show the governing motives of their actions.

Prominent among  
the Leaders in  
Town, County  
and State.

The biography of John Stoddard, Representative to the General Court, Colonel of the Colonial Militia, Commander on the western frontiers, Member of His Majesty's Council, Commissioner to treat with the Indians, Agent to redeem prisoners in Canada, Judge of Probate, Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas, may be found on the records of the town, the county, and in the archives of the State. It has already to some extent been spread upon these pages, and needs no recapitulation. His life was the connecting link between the two series of great leaders who controlled the affairs of Western Massachusetts for nearly a century and three-quarters. His predecessors were John Pynchon of Springfield, and Samuel Partridge of Hatfield; following him came Joseph Hawley and Caleb Strong of Northampton, and these five men were the leaders in the Colony, the Province and the State. From 1650 to 1819, their names are closely interwoven with the local history of the valley, and no narrative of the formative period of the Commonwealth, especially of its western section, is complete without a recital of the part they performed in establishing the institutions that gave prosperity and permanence to the whole country.

**Loyal to the King.** Very little can be gleaned concerning the legislative career of Col. Stoddard. He was a staunch supporter of royalty, and made himself obnoxious by his pronounced opinions in favor of the prerogative. The spirit of liberty that finally threw off the burden of kingly government, implanted when the first emigrants landed on these shores, was already taking strong hold upon the people. Many chafed under the restrictions

of parliament, and the rights claimed by the King. Few denied the authority of the mother country, and still fewer were ready openly to contest it. Yet there was an under-current of opposition to many of the arbitrary enactments of King and Parliament, with an occasional surface manifestation, indicating the tendency of thought and action in the direction that eventually established a nation of freemen. It was the party of freedom springing into existence. In opposition to it, though equally patriotic, was the party of the prerogative, which believed in securing their rights by endurance and good-will, rather than by opposition and defiance. To this latter party Col. Stoddard belonged. His connection with it brought defeat upon him on "divers occasions," both local and legislative, and finally in the next generation, developing into toryism, cost his sons much personal inconvenience. He supported the supreme law of the land as he found it, with all the inflexible will and stubborn persistence, so characteristic of the family to which he belonged. Evidently Col. Stoddard was a strong friend of Gov. Shirley,<sup>1</sup> and no doubt shared his views respecting the authority of the British government.<sup>2</sup>

**Legislative Duties.** Though nothing appears to show positively the position taken by Col. Stoddard upon any of the important questions in agitation while he was a member of the legislature, his opinions and counsel were evidently considered of value upon financial matters, and his name is frequently to be found upon committees having those subjects in charge. In 1736, the currency was in

<sup>1</sup> "To the convention at Albany came William Shirley, already for seven years governor of Massachusetts; an English lawyer, artful, needy, and ambitious; a member of the church of England; indifferent to the laws and the peculiar faith of the people whom he governed, appointed originally to restore or introduce British authority, and more relied upon than any crown officer in America."—Bancroft's History of the United States, vol. 4, p. 26, ed. 1838.

<sup>2</sup> In this connection comes in appropriately the often quoted anecdote related by President Dwight:—"Once when Gov. Shirley had a party dining with him, a servant came into the room and informed the Governor that a Gentleman at the gate wished to speak with him. 'Ask the Gentleman to come in,' said the Governor. 'I did Sir,' said the servant, 'but he said that he could not stay.' The company were not a little surprised, nor less indignant, at behaviour, which they thought so disrespectful to the chief magistrate. 'What is the gentleman's name?' said the Governor. 'I think,' said the servant, 'he told me his name was Stoddard.' 'Is it?' said the Governor. 'Excuse me Gentlemen, if it is Col. Stoddard I must go to him.'"—Dwight's Travels, vol. 1, p. 332.

a bad condition. Gov. Belcher, in his message to the legislature at the November session, stated that bills of credit had "sunk near three parts in four from what they passed at when bills of that sort were first issued." Consequently finance was the most important matter upon which legislation was required. In December, Col. Stoddard, chairman of the committee relating to bills of credit, made a report which was ordered to be printed for the use of the legislature and the people. This report, while it embodied much that was subsequently enacted by the legislature, was not adopted at that session.

**He had Many En-** Col. Stoddard was not without enemies, and  
mies. many a bitter contest he waged with them  
in his native town. An occasional sentence  
in his official correspondence reveals the only glimpse that  
can be obtained of this feature of his life, and these casual  
allusions are always in answer to the suggestions, innuendoes, or inquiries of others, never by way of personal com-  
plaint.<sup>1</sup>

**The Village Mag-** Apparently he was an aristocrat of the arist-  
nate. Apparently he was an aristocrat of the arist-  
ocrats. Allied to the older and wealthier  
families among the settlers, accustomed to  
deference in a community where wealth and ability were  
passports to respect, as well as to the highest seats in the  
meeting-house, possessing magisterial as well as military  
honor, he was in verity the village magnate, the old-time  
English squire of the community. Unquestionably active  
in all matters of importance to the town, fearless and out-  
spoken wherever interested, bringing down upon himself  
the denunciations of his opponents, he yet never descended  
to the petty meanness of the demagogue or village politi-  
cian. Honorable and aboveboard, he stood firmly upon  
the principles of truth, honesty, and fair dealing. At  
times defeated, but more often successful, he never sought

<sup>1</sup> A single illustrative manifestation of vindictiveness, though of little significance to the subject of it, is found in the following extract from the court records of the year 1746. It was when the war was in progress, the grip of the military every-where applied, and much "applejack" in circulation:—John Adams Jr. of Suffield, indicted for profane swearing, was accused of saying: "Col. Stoddard is a cussed lazy devil; he sits there (Northampton), on his cussed —; it was his devilish cussed doing that those forts were built and that them at Fort Massachusetts were taken." He was fined 5s., but appealed.—Judd MSS.

to revenge himself upon his competitors. Though he held high judicial honors, they never effaced his military title, and he was most familiarly known to the end of his life as Col. John Stoddard. A firm friend and welcome counselor of Rev. Jonathan Edwards, it is highly probable that a different result might have been reached in that memorable controversy, had he then been living.<sup>1</sup>

**Testimony of Thomas Hutchinson.** Though his duties were multifarious, and the cares of official life incessant and exacting, his fame as a statesman is eclipsed by that of none of his contemporaries. Thomas Hutchinson, historian of Massachusetts, bears the following testimony to his character:—

“There have been but few men among us who have been more generally esteemed. His enemies would charge him with unconstitutional principles, but at the same time allow he had an upright heart. He shined only in affairs of importance, lesser matters would frequently be carried against his mind by the little acts and crafts of minute politicians, which he disdained to defeat by counter working. He was very early employed in public affairs. In 1713, he went as a commissary to Quebec for the redemption of captives, and the several governors to the time of his death entrusted to his direction the military affairs of the county of Hampshire, which in time of war was peculiarly exposed. Nor was his authority less in civil matters. Both military and civil authority he used with great discretion. In this latter, in one instance, he rather exceeded, extending it to ecclesiastical affairs of the town of Springfield farther than he could well justify. Our best men have sometimes exceeded in their zeal for particular systems, and have endeavored to promote religion by invading natural and civil rights.”<sup>2</sup>

**Case of Rev. Mr. Breck.** The above allusion to intermeddling in ecclesiastical affairs refers to the case of Rev. John Breck of Springfield. In October, 1735, Mr. Breck was charged with heresy, and an attempt was made to prevent his settlement after a council of ministers, convened for that purpose, had assembled. His opponents first applied to the Court of Common Pleas for a warrant to arrest the council, which the Justices refused. But they afterwards issued one for the arrest of Mr. Breck, and he

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Edwards states that he intended to submit to Col. Stoddard a full statement of his peculiar views upon the question which cost him his pastorate, before taking a decided stand upon it, but the occasion for such an exposition did not occur till after the death of Mr. Stoddard.—Dwight's Life of Edwards, p. 314.

<sup>2</sup> Hutchinson's History of Massachusetts, vol. 2, p. 302.

was sent back to Connecticut for trial, where his heretical sentiments had been promulgated. The Justices held that Mr. Breck had violated the law against atheism and blasphemy. The Connecticut courts refused to interfere, and he came back to Springfield and was installed. In 1736, the matter was brought before the Legislature, and the Justices cited to appear. The General Court decided in favor of the legality of the council, and mildly censured the Judges.

*Opinion of Rev. Jonathan Edwards.*

"No man in Massachusetts Bay possessed the same weight of character during the last twenty years of his life;" and it may be said, almost literally, that "after him men spake not again."<sup>1</sup> Rev. Jonathan Edwards preached his funeral sermon, more correctly named funeral eulogy. It characterises him as one of the most remarkable men of his day. Something must be conceded to the relationship existing between the two men (Mr. Edwards' mother being sister to Col. Stoddard), but even then there remains little to discount from the verdict of the eminent divine. Honest and faithful himself, Col. Stoddard abhorred meanness or duplicity in others. President Edwards says of him, "But though he was exalted above others in greatness and abilities of mind, and feared not the faces of men; yet he feared God. In private life he was a most faithful friend, counsellor and assistant."

*Characteristics.*

A person of excellent natural abilities, matured in the stirring and unsettled times that followed the French and Indian War of Queen Anne's reign, he became at once a man of action and resources. Called in early life to important duties, he acquired grave and studious habits, by which he profited in many ways. Thrown much in company of the leading men of the colony, the principles of sound government were deeply impressed upon his mind, and he was steadfast and immovable in his political sentiments when satisfied that right and justice pointed out the way.

<sup>1</sup> *Dwight's Travels*, vol. 1, p. 332.

His Death.

He died in Boston of apoplexy June 15<sup>th</sup>, 1748, while in attendance at a session of the General Court, and was buried in that city. Contact with the world, and familiarity with the best society of the day, cultivated a taste for the better things of every-day life, which wealth enabled him in a great measure to gratify. It is an historical fact, quoted sometimes in derision, that he possessed the first, and for a time, the only gold watch in Northampton. It was valued at £150.

Items from the Inventory of his Estate.

The inventory of his estate reveals the fact that he had many articles of comfort and convenience (in addition to the gold watch), then not to be found among the majority of his townsmen. Apparently his family was among the first in town to make use of tea. The tea-pot, tea-kettle, cups and saucers, inventoried as belonging to his estate, were the first known to have been used in Northampton. Tea was introduced here between 1729 and 1748, but probably very few persons used it before the latter date. Among the noticeable articles enumerated in the inventory, which were not then in general use, were earthen bowls, plates, mugs, and a sugar dish. Crockery was quite rare, and was seldom found among the people till some years later. Col. Stoddard's real estate was valued at £18,238, and his personal property at £17,194, the whole aggregating £35,432, which if appraised in Old Tenor, equal to 45s. to the dollar, would reduce values to a little more than \$15,000. Among the funeral charges were £40 for printing the funeral sermon, £49.8 for funeral rings, and £14.10 for gloves.

His Family.

Col. John Stoddard married Prudence Chester of Wethersfield, Ct., in 1731. Ten children were born to them—four daughters and six sons—five of whom survived their father. His daughters were educated in Boston, their teacher being a man by the name of Turner. They would ride to Boston on horseback, sometimes on a pillion behind their father or some other person, and occasionally on a side-saddle. Of three daughters, who came to the age of maturity, Mary, the elder, married Col. John Worthington of Springfield; the second, Pru-

dence, married Ezekiel Williams of Wethersfield ; and the third, Esther, died unmarried at the age of 78. Of the sons, Solomon who lived in Northampton, was a man of much ability, and for many years occupied the position of Register of Probate ; he died in Northampton at the age of 94. Israel, the younger, removed to Pittsfield, where he died about 1785. Both adopted the political sentiments of their father, and had a falling out with the whigs during revolutionary times.

**Residence.**

Col. Stoddard lived on the old homestead of his father on Prospect Street, which descended to him by will.

## CHAPTER XIV.

### NEW SCHOOLS—DIVISION OF THE ADDITIONAL GRANT.

*Schools Carefully  
Nurtured.*

NEITHER the excitement of existing warfare nor the pecuniary embarrassments caused thereby, were sufficient absolutely to absorb the attention of the community. In the multiplicity of rapidly recurring events, when the military engrossed all other interests, the improvement and enlargement of schools and school methods was not overlooked. The citizens dealt generously by them, providing extra teachers and establishing new schools in all sections, whenever their need was made apparent. Laggard only in the matter of heating, they were liberal and progressive in every other respect. Yet the town was constantly endeavoring to supply this defect. The reiteration of votes to compel people to keep the schoolmaster's woodpile intact, has almost become burdensome in this narrative, yet in 1746, it was found necessary again to act upon the matter. This time it was ordered that every parent "sending a boy to school," must follow him within ten days with a load of wood, or pay a fine of 5s.

*The Town Boards  
the Schoolmaster.* Another change for the better was adopted the next year. Heretofore school-teachers had paid their board bills from their salary. Probably they "boarded round," at the homes of their scholars; and the parents paid a portion of their school rates by that means; but now a new system was put in practice. In 1747, the town assumed that expense. The first item of that kind on the treasurer's account is a payment of £14.7 to Moses Lyman for boarding Nathaniel Taylor, who taught school at the center, from October to

the following April. This was in addition to the salary, which amounted to £60 for the half year. No vote appears ordering any such change, and there is nothing to show by what authority it was made. Possibly the rapid depreciation in value of Bills of Credit had something to do with the matter. From that time, similar payments were made annually, applying to all sections of the town. It may be surmised that this change affected the schoolmaster in many ways. Not only was he benefited pecuniarily, but his social standing was greatly improved by familiar association with the families of the town's best citizens. Whatever may have been his position previous to this action, he certainly found a home afterwards in such households as those of Col. Seth Pomeroy, Caleb Strong, Rev. Mr. Hooker, Joseph Hawley, John Hunt and Thomas Allen. Undoubtedly the society of these young men, most of them college graduates, was much sought by the cultivated among the inhabitants, especially when accompanied by an occasional warrant upon the town treasury. In a letter written to his wife during the campaign of 1755, Col. Pomeroy sends his "service to Sr. Ely," meaning Richard Ely, schoolmaster, then boarding in his family. The price allowed varied from 4s., 4s. 8d., to 5s. per week.

**New Schools Es-  
tablished.** Two schools were established in the so called outer districts, in 1743; five years afterwards a still further extension was made, and three more were provided, this time literally in "the remote parts of the town." In December, 1748, the town voted that schools should be kept "for the instruction of children in reading and writing, viz.: one upon the Plain, one over Mill River, one at Pascommuck, one at Bartlett's Mill, and one at the new Precinct, at the cost of the town." The two first named were identical with those instituted three years before, the others were new.

**Improvements in  
the Schools Sug-  
gested. New  
School-House  
Ordered.** Still further progress was in contemplation, and during the succeeding year another step in advance was suggested. Early in 1749, a committee consisting of Col. Timothy Dwight, Mr. Joseph Hawley, and Samuel Mather, was

appointed "to Consider with respect to the better Regulation of our School, to project Some way that our School for the future may be more advantageous and profitable for the Education of our Children." The following January this committee reported as follows:—

"That the Town Erect a new School House near Elisha Pomeroy's trading Shop, that Shall be Very warm and Convenient, for writers, Grammar Scholares, and Arithmeticians as its likely they may be in Town to be Instructed, and that there be for the future, two School-masters maintain'd in Town in the Winter Season in the middle of the Town, viz:— one to which Grammar Scholars and Arithmeticians and writers Shall be Sent, the other to which, the Readers, or English Scholars Shall be Sent; and in the Summer Season, there be but one School maintained, viz:— the Grammar School to which Scholars of all Sorts Shall be Sent Untill the Season grows Cold & that then, there be two again as afores'd; & that for the future any provision for Schools in the Remote parts of the Town be omitted."

The above Vote Rescinded. This report was accepted, and Lieut. Noah Wright and Mr. Ebenezer Hunt were added to the committee, which was instructed to consider what kind of a house should be built. This was rather a one-sided proposition, both as regards the character and location of the schools. It provided solely for the enlargement of one department, and omitted the outlying districts altogether. When the people in the outskirts began to realize the true position in which they had been placed by this decision, that they must either do without schools or send their children to the center of the town, they rallied, and at the following March meeting the former vote was reconsidered and rescinded.

Still further Changes for the Better in the Schools. This agitation of the school question while it failed to better the schools in one section at the expense of those elsewhere, resulted in good to them all. In 1750, an order was adopted to provide

"some meet person to assist the Gramm' school master in teaching the Writers and English readers, And that English School masters shall be provided for the 2<sup>d</sup> Precinct and the Farms, and that the school money already granted to the 2<sup>d</sup> Precinct be used for the paying for the schooling of the youths of sd precinct."

It was also voted to build a school-house in the second precinct. The next year the same assistant was continued,

and an allowance voted for schools in the second precinct and in the remote parts of the first precinct. In 1752, English schools were established at Pascommuick and at Bartlett's Mill, and an usher provided for the grammar school, to assist "Mr. Street in teaching reading and writing." It was also voted that a separate room should be provided for the usher. Here was another forward step. The "usher," apparently more competent than the "assistant," who had taught under the eye of the head-master, was to keep an independent school, in reality forming two schools at the center. A room was hired for the usher in the house of Samuel Judd on Pleasant Street. There was still a strong party in favor of a new school-house at the center, and the proposition to build one there was defeated by a majority of only three votes the same year.

**Girls Excluded from  
the Public Schools.**

In this agitation of the school question no reference has been made to the education of girls, the accepted inference being that their schooling was neglected because they were not admitted to the town schools. The first schools in New England were not free. Only a portion of the master's salary was paid by the town; the rest, as many facts already cited abundantly prove, was collected of the parents. While the education of boys was amply provided for, that of the girls, left to their parents, was by no means neglected. Though some of the wealthier citizens, like Col. Stoddard, educated their daughters in Boston, private schools for girls were kept at the houses of the inhabitants in all sections of the town. The girls within certain limits would gather at one of the farm-houses, and the wife or some other member of the family was paid for teaching them. Co-education of the sexes was as slow in coming into practice in primitive schools as it has been in more modern days in colleges and scientific institutions. No attempt to admit girls into the town schools was made for more than a quarter of a century.

**Bills of Credit De-  
preciating.**

So great had been the depreciation of Bills of Credit that in 1747, action was taken upon the matter in town-meeting. "The Question Was put, whether the Town will take Something

of [off] the persons that have the bills of the Town Upon Interest, on the Consideration of the Sinking or the depreciating of the bills, and it passed in the affirmative." It was voted that the treasurer "shall take, £2 per cent per annum for the last year Ending in May last." The town treasurer was also directed to "let out the bills for this year Coming as Old Ten' bills at the rate of £6 upon the Hundred for Interest and at the rate of £2 Upon the Hundred for their depreciating, or Sinking in their Value." The money "produced by the sale of the school lands," was voted to be "let out upon interest," at the same rate, "the town running the risque of the depreciating of the bills."

**Liberty Granted to the Second Precinct to Sell Land.** Liberty was granted to the inhabitants of the second precinct "to sell 200 acres of land on the back side of Whiteloaf hills that was formerly sequestered for the use and benefit of said precinct, which land with 300 more formerly granted them was to be in lieu of their right and interest in or to the land lying in the meadow or common field in Northampton, sequestered for the ministry provided they relinquish their right or interest in or to the land sequestered lying in the 1<sup>st</sup> Precinct & do quit and discharge the same from all demands of or from the 2<sup>d</sup> parish in said town on account of said sequestered land lying in the 1<sup>st</sup> precinct."

**Additional Grant Divided. Rule of the Division.** In 1702,<sup>1</sup> a triangular tract of land containing about 3,000 acres, lying between Northampton, Springfield, and Westfield, was granted by the General Court to Northampton and Westfield. After forty-six years' possession as common land, a proposition was made in town-meeting for its sale or division. This was promptly negatived, but at the afternoon session that vote was reconsidered, and the matter postponed till January 30<sup>th</sup>, 1748. At that meeting, "after the matter was thoroughly debated," the decision was reached to divide all the land in the "additional grant." In February, rules for the division were adopted, a survey and plot of the land ordered, and a list of the polls and

<sup>1</sup> See vol. 1, p. 465.

estates upon which the division was based, was entered upon the record. It was provided that all the polls of the "Inhabitants that have not been warned out of Town," should be rated at £10. All persons under 21 years of age should be accounted to their parents or masters, and the valuation added to the list. The rule of division was as follows:—

"That the Sum Each person is assessed at this year in this Town with the addition of the Poll or Polls he pays for respectively, Shall be the rule to determine Each persons Right or proportion by, Exclusive of Such as are Excluded as afores<sup>4</sup>, Excepting that when the Polls or Estate of others of age, are Set to any particular person of a family, Each person Shall be Entitled to his respective Share, that Notwithstanding and that when any Orphan hath any Estate rated the right for Such Estate Shall be to him and if he be not a Servant and his poll be rated that Shall be to Such Orphan's own benefit, also excepting that the Rev. M<sup>r</sup> Jonathan Edwards, minister of the first Precinct, & Rev. M<sup>r</sup> Jonathan Judd, minister of the 2<sup>d</sup> precinct, Shall be admitted each to a right Equal to the Sum of £100."

Non-resident taxpayers were also to have the rights of their estates. Because the lots were small, parties were allowed to draw together by one number if they could agree. There are two hundred sixty names on this list, which undoubtedly includes the name of every male person in Northampton and Southampton, except paupers and transients.

Statistics of this  
Division.

Annexed is the list, showing the number of polls, the amount at which each person is rated, the owners of meadow-land, and the place of residence of every male inhabitant of the original town at this date:—

Acres Meadow Land.		Polls.	Estate.	Residence.
	Ezra Clark	1	49	Plain (Bridge St.)
17½	Josiah Pomeroy	2	106	" "
21½	Abner Lyman	1	100	" "
27½	Ena. Ebenezer Sheldon	2	118	" "
26½	Nathaniel Curtis (Moses Wright)	2	65	" "
11	Dea. Ebenezer Pomeroy	2	76	" "
28	John Wright	3	86	" "
17	Hezekiah Wright	1	42	" "
9	Sergt. Joseph Wright	1		" "
	Reuben Wright	1	42	" "

## 1740.] NEW SCHOOLS—DIVISION OF ADDITIONAL GRANT. 185

Acres Meadow Land.		Polls.	Estate.	Residence.
1	Aaron Wright	1	32	Bridge Street
17	Gad Lyman	1	137	" "
16	Nathaniel Edwards Heirs		13	" "
23	Lt. William Parsons	1	205	" "
	Supply Clapp	1	05	" "
	Edward Coats	1	01	" "
	Amos Loomis	1	41	" "
39	Capt. John Lyman	3	147	" "
20	Lt. James Lyman	2	68	" "
	Jacob Parsons	1	56	" "
12½	Joseph Alvord	2	67	" "
14	Ebenezer Wright Jr. (Father and Brothers)	4	90	" "
	John Birge Jr.	1	02	Back of Cemetery
54	Elihu Parsons	1	138	Hawley Street
	Mrs. Mercy Parsons (his mother)	1	48	" "
	Aaa Wright	1	34	" "
	Timothy Wright	1	05	" "
7½	Ebenezer Alvord	2	34	" "
	Noah Strong	1	24	" "
	Capt. Orlando Bridgman	1	118	" "
15	John Bridgman	1		" "
20	Ebenezer Hawley	1	94	" "
31	Mrs. Rebecca Hawley		42	" "
	Mr. Joseph Hawley	1	56	" "
	Lt. Elisha Hawley		117	" "
31	Lt. Nathaniel Strong		40	" "
	Nathaniel Strong Jr.	1	41	" "
	Mrs. Martha Strong (wid. of Daniel)		18	" "
16½	Samuel Sheldon	1	110	" "
29½	Samuel Clarke	1	76	" "
34	Lt. Noah Wright	2	130	Plain
	Isaac Parsons	1	59	" "
	Selah Wright	1	32	" "
21½	Abigail Parsons (wid. Nathaniel)	1	59	" "
12½	Capt. Preserved Clapp	1	34	Pleasant Street
5	Eliphas Clapp	1	81	" "
20	Joseph Lyman	2	167	" "
7½	Lt. William Lyman	1	116	" "
6	Medad Lyman	1	9	" "
25	Lt. Supply Kingaley	1	71	" "
13	Elizabeth Strong (wid. Ebenezer)		88	" "
21½	Capt. Moses Lyman	3	138	" "
35½	Mr. Jonathan Strong	2	85	" "
7	Ensign Caleb Strong	1	176	" "

Acres Meadow Land.				
14	Preserved Bartlett	3	57	Pleasant Street
12	Jonathan Burt	1	41	" "
19 $\frac{1}{4}$	Ebenezer Bartlett	1	65	" "
—	Aaron Bartlett	1	8	" "
10	Benjamin Bartlett	1	44	" "
	Joseph Bascom	1	48	" "
23	William Judd	1	87	" "
1 $\frac{1}{4}$	Samuel Judd	1		" "
12	William Bartlett	2	76	" "
	Samuel Mather	1	141	" "
12 $\frac{1}{2}$	Ebenezer Hunt	2	146	Main Street
	Bela Strong	1	79	" "
19	Samuel Marshall	1	74	" "
	Samuel Marshall Jr.	1	15	" "
13	Elisha Pomeroy	2	174	" "
5	Maj. Seth Pomeroy	3	595	" "
9	Edward Baker	1	89	" "
— 1	Saul Alvord	1	28	" "
	Ephraim Wright	1	108	" "
11	Elizabeth Wright (wid. Jonathan)	1	41	" "
5	James Searle	1	7	" "
	Elias Strong	1	36	" "
—	John Strong	1	8	" "
21	Noah Parsons	2	100	" "
15	Samuel Kingsley	1	100	" "
	Gideon Parsons	4	110	" "
	Waitstill Strong	3	88	" (corner)
28	Jonathan Kingsley	3	71	" "
37	Nathaniel Clark	1	36	" "
	Gideon Clark	3	35	" "
	Selah Clark	1	46	" "
11 $\frac{1}{4}$	Moses Kingsley	1	81	" "
	Isaac Searle	1	24	" "
4 $\frac{1}{4}$	Asahel Clap	1	48	" "
	Aaron Clap	1	38	" "
38	Capt. John Clark	3	95	" "
	Josiah Clark Jr.	1	40	" "
	Timothy Clark	1	36	South Street
	Seth Clapp	1	39	" "
— 39	Lt. Samuel Clapp	2	58	" "
7	Ena. John Clapp	1	49	" "
32	Capt. Roger Clap	4	122	" "
— 15	Samuel Edwards	4	79	" "
— 29 $\frac{1}{4}$	Katherine Phelps (wid. Nathaniel)	63		" "
	Nathaniel Phelps	1	59	" "
	Martin Phelps	1	38	" "

## 1749.] NEW SCHOOLS—DIVISION OF ADDITIONAL GRANT. 187

Acres Meadow Land.		Poll.	Estate.	Residence.
	Nathaniel Clark Jr.	1	50	South Street
18	Jonathan Strong Jr.	2	60	" "
- 28	Ebenezer Hutchinson	1	82	" "
	Samuel Clapp Jr. (last house)	1	48	" "
5	Daniel Clark	1	50	" "
48	Mr. John Hunt (New Boston)	1	227	Elm Street
28½	Mr. Joseph Hunt	1	121.	" "
	Ebenezer Clark Jr.	1	50	" "
	Moses Clark	1	62	" "
47½	Capt. John Baker	4	167	" "
3	John Baker Jr.	1	57	" "
	Caleb Clark	1	80	" "
	Wid. Sarah Clark (Caleb's mother)		46	" "
38½	Lt. Jonathan Hunt	4	231	" "
	Benjamin Clark	1	43	" "
38	Increase Clark	2	146	" "
- 20	Ens. Josiah Clark	2	97	" "
51	Lt. Ebenezer Clark	5	218	" "
20½	Dea. Noah Cook	4	70	" top of hill
17½	Noah Clark	3	95	West Street
	Seth Clark	1	14	" "
27	Samuel Langton	1	94	" "
	Obadiah Frary	1	23	" "
19½	Benjamin Edwards	1	86	" "
	Ebenezer Edwards	1	106	" "
16½	Israel Rust	2	83	" "
3½	Major Ebenezer Pomeroy	1	106	Catholic Church
12	Daniel Pomeroy	1	118	" "
11	Samuel Baker	1	43	Pancake Plain
- 9½	William Phelps	3	54	Prospect Street
16	James Hulbert		33	" "
14	Jonathan Rust	1	45	" "
- 11	Thomas Allen	1	62	" "
	Aaron Baker	1	41	" "
8	David Burt	.3	97	" "
8	Thomas Burt	2	102	" "
	Joseph Burt	1	7	" "
50	Madame Stoddard		222	" "
14½	Samuel Phelps	3	67	" "
	John Alvord	2	33	" "
	Jonathan Alvord	1	18	" "
	Zebadiah Alvord	1	12	" "
7	Lt. John Miller	2	82	King Street
	Eleazar Burt	1	60	" "
	John Frary	1	13	" "
7	Ebenezer Phelps	1	79	" "

Acres Meadow Land.		Polls.	Estate.	Residence.
7	Joseph Phelps		12	King Street
	Benjamin Parsons	1	100	" "
12	Eleazar King	2	63	" "
9	Joseph Allen	1	85	" "
8	Samuel Allen	1	60	" "
19	Hezekiah Root	3	112	" "
12	Daniel King	2	73	" "
6½	Medad King	2	44	" "
	Lt. Elisha Strong	1	46	" "
24	Hope Root	1		" "
	Stephen Root		36	" "
	Aaron Root	1	43	" "
12	Enoch Southwell	1	48	" "
	Mark Warner	1	34	" "
	Mark Warner Jr.	1	16	" "
	Daniel Warner	1	7	" "
	Elisha Warner	1		" "
7½	Noah Bridgman	2	31	
- 7	Abigail King (wid. John)		12	
	Wid. Hannah Phelps (2 <sup>d</sup> wife Sam'l)		16	
	Caleb Wright	1	2	
	Israel Sheldon	1	10	
3	Rev. Jonathan Edwards		100	" "
23	Timothy Dwight Esq.	2	115	Market Street
	Timothy Dwight Jr.	1	56	" "
- 30	Samuel Courtis		83	" "
5	John Hannum	1	30	" "
5	Benjamin Alvord	1	43	" "
16	John Allexander's Heirs		47	" "
	Ithamar Clark	1	23	" "
	Samuel Allexander	1		" "
47	Mr. Josiah Parsons	2	154	" "
	Seth Strong	1	62	" "
21	Ensign Gideon Lyman	3	143	" "
	Jemima Wright (wid. Samuel)	1		" "
30	Lt. Benjamin Sheldon	2	143	" "
13½	Samuel Hannum		52	" "
- 9	Samuel Cleason	1	20	" "
	Nathaniel Day	1	7	" "
2½	Jerijah Strong Jr.	1	68	" "
5	Zebadiah Miller	1	17	" "
- 8	Ebenezer Burt	1	44	" "
8	Aaron Miller		17	King Street
24	John Miller	2	74	" "
	Thomas Judd	3	51	South Farms
	Elias Lyman	1	105	" "

## 1792.] NEW SCHOOLS—DIVISION OF ADDITIONAL GRANT. 189

Acres Meadow Land.		Polls.	Estate.	Residence.
	— William Wait	2	77	South Farms
	Ebenezer Wait	1	27	" "
	— Nathaniel Kentfield	1	3	" "
29 $\frac{1}{2}$	John Parsons	1	51	" "
	Wid. Sarah Parsons		49	" "
21 $\frac{1}{2}$	Daniel Alexander	1	43	" "
	Noah Clark Jr.	1	48	" "
	— Abigail Wharton		21	" "
10 $\frac{1}{2}$	Samuel Janes	4	141	Easthampton
3 $\frac{1}{2}$	Lt. Elisha Searl	1	71	" "
— 16	Ebenezer Ferry	1	71	" "
	Josiah Searl	1	26	" "
	Eliakim Clark	1	37	" "
12	Robert Danks	1	36	" Nash
	Ephraim Danks	1	34	" "
	Benoni Danks	1	30	" "
	— Zadoc Danks	1	23	" "
	Joseph Wright Jr.	1	45	" "
	Titus Wright	1	14	" "
8 $\frac{1}{2}$	David Bartlett	1	11	" "
	Jonathan Clapp	1	140	" "
	Jonathan Wait	2	47	" "
5 $\frac{1}{2}$	Joseph Bartlett	1	287	" "
20 $\frac{1}{2}$	Benjamin Lyman	2	80	" "
	Benjamin Lyman		34	Southampton
	— Rev. Jonathan Judd		100	" "
12 $\frac{1}{2}$	Dea. Stephen Wright	3	76	" "
5	Eldad Pomeroy	3	47	" "
5	Samuel Pomeroy (Dec <sup>4</sup> )		75	" "
	Caleb Pomeroy	1	17	" "
	Simeon Pomeroy	1		" "
	Ebenezer Pomeroy	1	10	" "
	Elisha Pomeroy	1	10	" "
	Joshua Pomeroy	1	10	" "
	Samuel Pomeroy	1	11	" "
	Roger Clapp Jr.	1	23	" "
	Ebenezer French	1	9	" "
	Jonathan Clark	1	33	" "
	— Ebenezer Corse	1	31	" "
	Eleazar Hannum	3	33	" "
	— Ebenezer Kingsley	2	25	" "
	Nathan Lyman	1	24	" "
	Jonathan Bascom	1	17	" "
	Stephen Sheldon	1	31	" "
	Wid. Mary Sheldon		29	" "
	— Noah Pixley (deceased)		14	" "

Acres Meadow Land.		Polls.	Estate.	Residence.
	Elisha Clark (deceased)		10	Southampton
	Nathaniel Searl Jr.	1	7	" "
	Eliphas Searl	1		" "
- 8	Wid. Miriam Strong		19	" "
	John Wait	1	25	" "
	John Wait Jr.	1	3	" "
- 16 1/2	Dea. Waitstill Strong	1	23	" "
	Thomas Porter	1	8	" "
3 1/2	Nathaniel Searl Sen.	3	30	" "
	Joseph Clark's Heirs		10	" "
	Dea. John Clark Jr.	1	22	" "
	Aaron Clark	1	16	" "
	Samuel Danks	1	23	" "
	Ichabod Strong	1	29	" "
	Elias Lyman	1	20	" "
	Stephen Root	1	16	" "
	Samuel Burt	1	22	" "
21 1/4	Moses Wright's Heirs		18	" "
	Phinehas King		16	" "
2 1/4	Samuel King	1	13	" "
6	Thankful Alexander		6	Non-Resident
- 8	Lydia Dickinson		16	Hatfield

In the above table the number of acres of meadow-land assigned to each person is taken from the apportionment for the meadow fence assessed in 1744, five years before the additional grant was divided, and is believed to include all the owners at that time. In a few instances the number of acres belonging to an individual is not carried out on the original record, and there were several non-residents, whose names do not appear. The whole number of acres included within the meadow fence in 1744, as reported by the committee at that time, was 2493. The footing above will reach 2131 acres, and there were nearly 400 acres owned by non-residents.

## CHAPTER XV.

### PRECINCTS—MR. EDWARDS' SALARY—GREAT AWAKENING.

Mill River Overstepping its Bounds. UNEASY Mill River was trying to overstep its allotted bounds, near Bartlett's Gate, at the lower end of Pleasant Street, and measures were taken in 1749, to prevent anticipated trouble. In all probability the place where the greatest mischief was expected, must have been near the turn by which the river was diverted from its former course, the stream naturally seeking to return to its old channel. It is quite evident that the bed of Mill River above or near the old South Street bridge, was formerly many feet to the south of the channel in which its current now flows. Less than a generation ago, a deep gulley, evidently once the bed of the stream, extended across the home lot of the late Mr. Elijah Kingsley. In 1766, there existed a strip of land, an island, on the north side of the river between the gas works and the bridge, of sufficient size to warrant a vote in town-meeting permitting Capt. William Lyman to "fence and feed the beach above Bathsheba Hull's house." She was a negress, and lived in a little house on the river bank just above the bridge. Four years later there was danger of the river's "shifting its course again into the old Mill Trench northward of the Island where Amos Hull dwelt." The surveyors were ordered to prevent the anticipated change by "hedging or otherwise." This island was formed by the trench, dug in 1660, to carry off the waste water from the first grist-mill, erected a short distance up the river, and through which it would seem part of the current then flowed. Much of this beach has undoubtedly been transferred to the other side of the river, and all evidence of the old trench has long since disappeared.

New Bridge over  
the Stream.

A new bridge was built over Mill River "near Waitstill Strong's" in 1749, and the timber was ordered "to be gotten out" that winter. The next year the accounts for building this structure, which was on or near the site of the recent old bridge, were accepted and ordered to be paid. It was called the "Great Bridge over Mill river," and cost £218.7.6, old tenor, which was equivalent to about \$100. The old bridge and timber was sold for £4.7.6. A great flood, caused by heavy rains, occurred in December, 1748, and undoubtedly so injured the bridge, as to require its rebuilding. This bridge remained in use for more than twenty years, when it was carried off by a great freshet<sup>1</sup> which occurred in January, 1770, but it was immediately rebuilt.

Pomeroy's Trading  
Shop.

Elisha, son of John Pomeroy, who lived on what was afterwards known as the "Judge Lyman place," was a blacksmith, but became a merchant, and in the year 1749, had permission to erect a "trading shop" between his blacksmith shop and the "house of correction." The latter was on the opposite side of the street near the present location of Spooner's Market. This must have placed his store well into the highway. It was near this building that the committee decided to place the proposed new school-house.

## Town Pound.

An important institution in every town was the "pound," a lockup for all stray stock, which could only be redeemed by the owner's paying the legal fees. It was usually placed near the entrance into the meadows, though sometimes it was near the meeting-house, and in some instances there was one at each end of the town. Northampton ordered one built within a few years after settlement. It was situated at the lower end of Pleasant Street near the meadow gate, and is still familiar to everyone, though it has now fallen into disuse. Considerable litigation grew out of the practice of impounding

<sup>1</sup> This flood is mentioned in the Day-Book of Dea. Ebenezer Hunt, as follows:—"1770, Jan. 7. A great rain with south wind, the Mill River broke up, and the ice carried off Lickingwater bridge. It was one of the highest floods that any person remembers in Mill River, when the Great River did not set up. It was over the bank in my home lot."

animals. Some persons had them incarcerated unlawfully, while others rescued them after they had been locked up, or while on their way to the pound. Many allusions are to be found upon the town records to the pound, which show that it was kept in complete repair. In 1749, a new one was ordered to be built on the old site.

*Portions of the Highway Sold.*

In 1750, William Judd, living on Pleasant Street, petitioned for permission to purchase a piece of land in the highway near his house. A committee was appointed not only to consider his application, but to examine the highways throughout the town, and report on all encroachments. Two years afterwards another committee was instructed to "see in what parts of the body of the Town, the Streets and highways may be reduced, and part of them sold without inconveniencing the publick and report thereon as soon as may be." Later in the year this committee reported that land might be sold to Mr. John Hunt on Elm Street, a short distance north of his new house, and also that a portion of the highway adjoining the homestead of Saul Alvord on meeting-house hill might be sold to him.

*Recording Town Warrants.*

Much negligence prevailed during the early years of the settlement in regard to the record of town business; the clerks did not consider it necessary to record the names of many of the petty town officers, and some other things were omitted. The practice of recording the warrants for meetings was not adopted till nearly one hundred years of town history had elapsed. Among the earlier regulations, adopted in 1662, was an order that all business to be brought before the town, must be considered by the selectmen, and by them presented at the meeting. This may be considered as the foundation of the system of notifying by warrant what business was to be transacted, but none of these documents found a place upon the records. Occasionally an old warrant will appear among the ancient town papers, but none earlier than the eighteenth century. It was not till 1751, that the first of these papers was copied upon the records. Major Joseph Hawley was at that time town clerk, but he

was not particular about recording warrants, and very few of them appear till 1760 and after, when Timothy Dwight was chosen clerk. He was more particular and systematic than his predecessors. In after years many of the warrants were omitted, and only left on file. Indeed the town records down to the commencement of the nineteenth century were decidedly brief, and many omissions of importance are noticeable. Seldom was any notice taken of an election of Representatives to the General Court, and only in more recent days can their names be found upon the town records.

**The First Precinct.** For nearly a dozen years, while Southampton was in an embryo state—a precinct and not a town—it was necessary to keep two distinct records in Northampton, one for the town and the other for the precinct or parish. The new settlement, first known as "Newhampton," was still an integral part of the old town. In both sections the secular interests were identical, but each had a meeting-house and a minister of its own. In the distribution of the territory covered by the "additional grant," both ministers were placed on an equal footing and shared alike. The business of the First Parish during these years was not of special importance, and the precinct meetings offer little that is of interest to the general reader. To vote the salary of the pastor, to designate the quantity and fix the price of the wood furnished him, to levy taxes, rent the parish land, and keep the meeting-house in repair, were the principal questions in agitation. A matter of considerable perplexity was that of providing fuel for the minister, and frequently several precinct meetings were required before it could be adjusted.

**Its Organization.** The first precinct meeting was held on Wednesday, February 10, 1741. John Stoddard was chosen Moderator, and Samuel Mather, Clerk. It was voted "that the selectmen or assessors chosen at the annual meeting in March, shall be the assessors for the precinct, for the year current," and the selectmen were authorized to call precinct meetings. Mr. Edwards' salary "for the past year" was to be £350 in bills of credit, and the improve-

ment of one half of the sequestered land in the common field. It was also voted to provide him with wood by way of rate, and the assessors were "directed to make a tax or assessment to pay the same."

**Salary of Mr. Edwards.** So irregular had become the prices of commodities owing to the fluctuations in the value of bills of credit that, at the March meeting in 1741, Mr. Edwards proposed that the precinct should allow him a permanent salary, rather than fix the amount yearly, as had been the custom. This was refused, but Mr. Edwards was persistent, and renewed his request year after year. At the next annual meeting he addressed a letter to the precinct, giving his reasons at length "for settling or fixing his Salary for the future." His main point was "that bills of credit had been fluctuating and uncertain in their value and were still depreciating and sinking in their value, whereby many mischiefs and Inconveniences arise." After an extended debate the meeting declined to grant his request, but adjourned for five days in order to give Mr. Edwards "opportunity to offer what he thinks proper." At the adjourned meeting an attempt was made to reconsider the former vote, "but it was not decided whether it passed in the affirmative or negative." An addition of £150 was made to his salary, and the price of wood fixed at 15s. per load. Before the end of the year, however, at another meeting, the price of wood had to be raised to 18s., and the quantity placed at eighty loads.

**A Permanent Salary Voted.** In December, 1747, a special meeting was called to act upon this question. After a statement made to the meeting by Mr. Edwards in person, the proposition to establish a permanent salary was carried, and a committee appointed to consider the question and devise some method of procedure. They were to report at an adjourned meeting. In the meantime £600 in bills of credit, old tenor, and the use of the usual quantity of land, were voted as the salary; the price of wood being placed at 21s. per load. In the month of January came the old complaint that wood enough could not be obtained at the price offered, and it was voted to allow 25s. per load.

Report of the Committee.

The committee made their report at an adjourned meeting in December, but it was not accepted. It was apparently referred back to them for further consideration. At the annual March meeting the next year, the committee submitted the following report :—

"The committee appointed by the First Precinct In Northampton, to consider of a motion of the Rev. Mr. Jonathan Edwards for the settling of his salary, having fully considered that matter, have agreed to report as their opinion, that it is advisable for the Precinct to settle a Salary as a recompense for Mr. Edwards Labour in the Gospel Ministry amongst them and particularly they propose

"That Mr. Edwards be allowed the Improvement of one half of the Sequestered Land that Lyeth in the Common or General Field In the Town of Northampton, to use it annually, during his Continuance in the work of the Ministry amongst them, and that he be allowed and paid out of the Town Treasury annually One Hundred Pounds in bills of Public Credit of the old Ten<sup>l</sup> of the value they now pass at, to enable him to purchase firewood for his family, and in case that in any year, fire wood should be Commonly Sold for more than twenty-five Shillings pr Load, for an ordinary Sled Load, that then & in Such Case, the Parish make an addition to the Hundred Pounds proportionate to the rise of wood, and in case wood shall in any year be sold Commonly for less than twenty-five shillings per Load, then the sum to be paid for that purpose be proportionably less than One Hundred Pounds.

"They further report that there be annually paid to s'd Mr. Edwards, out of the Town Treasury a further Sum of Seven Hundred Pounds in bills of Public Credit of the old Ten<sup>l</sup> at their present value, or in other bills of Public Credit proportionably, and the value of the Bills to be Estimated by the prices of the following necessaries of Life, which are now Recorded at the following rates, viz : Wheat at 30s. per Bushel, Rye at 20s. per Bushel, Indian Corn at 12s. per Bushel, Pork at 2s. per pound, and beef at twelve pence per pound, and in Case that any or all of these necessaries of Life before mentioned Should in any year vary in their price, So as to alter the General Summ that then there be an addition to the Summ of £700 or a diminution therefrom, So as to make the Sum to be paid proportionate to £700 at the prices hereinbefore set, as for Instance if each of these five articles Should rise in their price One Eighth, that then an Eighth be added to the sum of £700, or if two of them Should rise one quarter and one rise an Eighth, and the other two remain at the Same price, that then there be an addition of one Eighth to the £700, and So if the prices of those necessaries Should be lowered in like manner, that the Sum be lowered in the Same proportion. The foregoing Sums to be paid annually to

the Rev. Mr. Jonathan Edwards so long as he shall Continue in the ministry among them.

“ John Stoddard	Eben' Pomeroy	Timo. Dwight
Sam'l Mather	Joseph Hawley	Ebn' Hunt.”

“ And the matter being long debated the Question was put whether the first Precinct in Northampton do receive and accept the Report of s'd Committee, and it passed in the affirmative by a Great Majority.”

**How the Prices  
were to be De-  
termined.**

It was also voted that “ prizes of the necessities of Life which are the Basis or foundation upon which the sum of £700 to be annually paid is to be raised shall be determined at those seasons of the year annually viz.: beef Sometime in the fall of the year, & Wheat, Rye Indian Corn & Pork in the month of January.” The assessors were to name the “prizes,” “always Conferring and Consulting with Mr. Edwards in doing the same.” Mr. Edwards signed an acknowledgment of his satisfaction with the above arrangement.

**Another Gift to Mr.  
Edwards.**

The long consideration required to bring about this adjustment, and the evident reluctance with which it was granted, indicate that the relations between pastor and people were at that time somewhat strained. Indeed the first breach between them had already occurred, though it may be inferred that the immediate unfortunate effects of it were slowly passing away. And this belief is strongly emphasized by the fact that in the following May, the precinct voted an addition of £170 to the salary of Mr. Edwards “to enable him to support his family and purchase books.”

**Naughty Children  
to be Punished.**

The rising generation seem to have been a thorn in the flesh of their elders, particularly on the Sabbath. Instead of listening with proper decorum while the minister “improved” his seventhly, eighthly, or even twelfthly, they spent their time in a way that greatly annoyed the congregation. So unruly did the children become that it was found necessary to appoint a special committee of seven persons “to inspect their behaviour in the meeting house.” This committee was “Impowered and desired to prosecute those that are

disorderly in the time of public worship, that are above the age of 16 years before a Justice of the Peace." The younger disturbers were to be "set before the Deacon's seat as a public example." In March 174<sup>6</sup>, it was "voted that the young women that are seated in the front corner Pew in the Gallery be removed & the Pew be seated with young men." An absolutely ungallant vote, unless other seats were provided for the young women, of which there seems to be no evidence.

*The Controversy  
with Mr. Edwards.*

The controversy concerning the admission of members to the church, the ostensible ground on which the dismissal of Mr. Edwards was based, began in 1749. This contention, so fully treated in Dwight's "Life of President Edwards," has been the theme of many able writers. Its historical details have been exhausted, but a general outline of its principal facts, to which it is impossible to add anything essential, seems to be necessary. This chapter of history, while not at all creditable to Northampton, must needs find a place in its annals.

*The Great Awaken-  
ing.*

Before entering upon that subject it may be well first to outline the Great Awakening, which left its impress upon the English speaking world. It commenced in Northampton, and spread, not alone throughout the town and county, but encompassed New England, embraced the colonies of America and extended across the ocean to England and Scotland.<sup>1</sup> The labors of Mr. Edwards had been abundantly rewarded. Thus far during his pastorate revivals had followed each other at intervals, each more effective than its predecessor, till the fame of Northampton's minister extended far and wide. During the fifteen years immediately following the death of his grandfather his earnest and powerful presentations of Gospel truth had borne almost constant fruit. This last and most powerful awakening, which took place within half a dozen years of that of 1735, already alluded to, was the most effective of any that had yet visited the New England churches. It began

<sup>1</sup> Allen's Life of Jonathan Edwards, p. 134.

in this town in 1740, and its manifestations were very greatly stimulated by the aid of George Whitefield, who visited Northampton in October of that year.<sup>1</sup> From this time forward the revival continued to increase till it spread throughout the town, embracing both old and young. At first it appeared among professors of religion, but soon deep concern was manifested among the youth. This was followed by an awakening among the very young, and before the new year commenced religious subjects almost absorbed the conversation in all classes. The fervor augmented as the season progressed, and in the Autumn Mr. Edwards writes :—<sup>2</sup>

“The months of August and September, were the most remarkable of any this year, for appearances of the conviction and conversion of sinners, and great revivings, quickenings, and comforts of professors, and for extraordinary external effects of these things. It was a very frequent thing, to see an house full of out-cries, faintings, convulsions, and such like, both with distress, and also with admiration and joy. It was not the manner here, to hold meetings all night, as in some places, nor was it common to continue them till very late in the night; but it was pretty often so, that there were some that were so affected, and their bodies so overcome, that they could not go home, but were obliged to stay all night where they were.”

In the latter part of 1741, there was “some abatement of these extraordinary appearances, but they did not wholly cease.” Early in the following year Mr. Buell,<sup>3</sup> an evangelist of some note, came to Northampton, and during a

<sup>1</sup> In alluding to the work of Mr. Whitefield in Northampton, Mr. Edwards says:—“He preached here four sermons in the meeting house (besides a private lecture at my house) one on Friday, another on Saturday, and two upon the Sabbath. The congregation was extraordinarily melted by every sermon; almost the whole assembly being in tears for a great part of sermon time. Mr. Whitefield’s sermons were suitable to the circumstances of the town; containing a just reproof of our backslidings, and in a most moving and affecting manner, making use of our great professions and great mercies, as arguments with us to return to God, from whom we had departed.”—Dwight’s Life of Edwards, p. 100.

<sup>2</sup> Dwight’s Life, pp. 162, 163.

<sup>3</sup> Rev. Samuel Buell was born in Coventry, Ct., and was graduated from Yale College in 1741. He proposed to study theology with Mr. Edwards, but owing to the progress of the great revival obtained a license to preach and entered upon the work of preaching as an itinerant. He was for several years an evangelist, and finally settled at Easthampton, L. I. Of him Mr. Edwards writes:—“About the beginning of February, 1742, Mr. Buell came to this town. I was then absent from home, and continued so till about a fortnight after. Mr. Buell preached from day to day, almost every day, in the meeting house. He spent almost the whole time in religious exercises with the people, either in public or private, the people continually thronging him.”—Dwight’s Life of Edwards, p. 164.

brief absence of Mr. Edwards,<sup>1</sup> preached almost every day in the meeting-house. He was accompanied by a number of zealous persons from Suffield, Ct., and his discourses, supplemented by their exhibitions of feeling, greatly intensified the already prevailing nervous tension. "The people were exceedingly moved, crying out in great numbers in the meeting house, and a greater part of the congregation commonly staying for hours after the public service." The manifestations mentioned by Mr. Edwards seem to have been redoubled under the lead of Mr. Buell; there were tears, shoutings, fallings, and trances, sometimes continuing for twenty-four hours or more. Disturbances of this nature became so frequent that on several occasions meetings were completely broken up by them. Mr. Buell remained here in all six weeks, and succeeded in stirring up the people in a most wonderful manner. But the strain was too great to last, and during the summer the religious fervor sensibly abated, and died out completely during the following winter.

**Beneficial Effect upon the Town.** Notwithstanding the strong nervous stimulation under which it was conducted, and

to which in a great measure may be attributed its success, the effect of this revival upon the people of Northampton was beneficial in a marked degree. It permeated all classes, influencing old and young alike, and everywhere exhibited its good results. This was especially noticeable in the conduct of public affairs. Faction which had long overridden the community, was well nigh obliterated. The two parties into which the town had for so many years been divided, were essentially mingled into one. The temper of the people was greatly softened; they were more guarded in their communication with each other; and town-meetings were carried on with less heat and acrimony. One of the most memorable results of this state of feeling was the settlement of the controversy about the common lands, which had agitated the town for

<sup>1</sup> It was customary for the clergy of New England to go about among other churches at various times, sometimes making an exchange of pulpits, extending over several weeks. It was probably when Mr. Edwards was away on an occasion of this kind that Mr. Buell took his place. It seems to have been a system of awakening tactics much in practice at that time.

more than a generation. Another equally memorable result was that the people were more than ever united in their religious opinions.<sup>1</sup> Such a condition of affairs was never before known in the history of the town. Apparently religion had taken deep root, and the moral standard of the people had been greatly benefited. This feeling outlived the immediate heat and excitement of the revival, and the impression upon church and people had every appearance of permanence.

Such was the result and such the effect of the great awakening upon the town of Northampton, yet like all similar movements it gradually subsided. The methods of the revivalists, always combated by the more conservative, at last came under censure, and clergymen of high repute opposed their continuance; a controversy arose so deadening in its effects that finally the revival died out entirely.

<sup>1</sup> Letter of Jonathan Edwards, Dwight's Life, p. 170.

## CHAPTER XVI.

### CONTROVERSY WITH REV. JONATHAN EDWARDS.

Young People Accused of Reading Immoral Books.

As might have been expected, the reaction following such excitement left vital religion at a low ebb, and a season of unusual laxness prevailed. During this condition of affairs occurred the first radical difference between Mr. Edwards and his people. It originated in 1744, among the younger and more recently admitted members of the church, some of whom laid themselves open to censure by reading immoral books.<sup>1</sup> Mr. Edwards at once took measures to suppress the evil and punish the offenders. He delivered a sermon touching upon the matter in a general way, called the church together, made his charges and produced his evidence. Unanimously the church voted to investigate, and a committee of inquiry was chosen. Without due consideration, and certainly with questionable judgment, Mr. Edwards then proceeded to read from the pulpit the names of the young people implicated, requesting their appearance at a certain date before the investigating committee. In the list were the names of many persons, members of the oldest and most influential families in the town, as well as of others nearly allied to them. No discrimination was made between the accused and those who were merely cited as witnesses. When this revelation burst like a bomb upon them, church and people were astounded, "and the town was suddenly all in a blaze."<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "Possibly they preferred 'Pamela,' which had then just revealed a new source of amusement to the world, to awakening sermons"—Leslie Stephen, *Hours in a Library*, Series 2, p. 63. The most harmless work of modern fiction would then doubtless have been denounced by the clergy of New England as an emanation from the devil, and there may be a grain of truth in the above suggestion.

<sup>2</sup> Dwight's *Life of Edwards*, p. 200.

While the innocent vehemently protested against such publicity, the guilty were equally vociferous in their denunciations of the whole proceeding. Consequently their parents declined to continue the investigation.<sup>1</sup> Many of the persons implicated refused to appear, others who did obey the summons, were insolent or treated the committee with contempt, and nothing could be accomplished. The evil-doers triumphed, and the authority of both pastor and church was greatly weakened. The young lost much of their respect for religion and its interpreters, and a state of great worldly-mindedness prevailed for many years. Still the immediate bitterness of this unfortunate occurrence would undoubtedly have disappeared and was to some extent diminishing, when Mr. Edwards four years afterwards proclaimed his opposition to the established method of admissions to the church, and refused longer to abide by the usual custom.

Mr. Edwards Re-pudicates Stoddardism.

During these seasons of awakening, all admissions to the church were made in accordance with the method pursued for so many years by Mr. Stoddard. This universally called "Stoddardian System" was believed in and adopted by Mr. Edwards. For many years, however, he had scruples of conscience about the admission of members to the church "who made no pretence to true godliness." Study and research only confirmed his doubts, and he decided that should any one seek admission to the church he would put his theory into practice. But so completely had the effects of the previous excitement died out, that for several years there were no applicants for church-membership. In order to acquaint the public with his change of sentiment, in

1 Very few incidents concerning this affair have been preserved, and but few names of persons in any way connected with it can now be identified. The following statement is transcribed from the Judd MSS.: — Sarah Clarke, daughter of Ebenezer, was one of those accused of reading bad books. She told her story before the committee: was herself innocent and believed most of those who were accused. She said there was much exaggeration, though some were guilty. Moses Lyman was the complainant to Mr. Edwards. Sarah Clarke in time of revival used to hear one sermon every day, and spin a run of yarn daily. When those accused of reading bad books were some of them examined at the house of Mr. Edwards, the males were assembled in a room on the main floor, and the females in the room above. A ladder stood against the house, and a young man, said to be — Pomeroy, went up the ladder, and looked in at the chamber window. This caused some talk, and was condemned by all. Ephraim Wright acknowledged that he was one of the bad book party.

1746, he published a pamphlet entitled a "Treatise on the Religious Affections." Few of his people perused this work, and it was not till three years after, when he made known his sentiments to the standing committee of the church, that the parish began to realize the position he had assumed. The year previous, however, Mr. Edwards arbitrarily refused to admit a certain person to the church, unless he made a profession of faith in accordance with the new views of the pastor. Though willing to subscribe to the profession prepared by the pastor, the young man declined to accept it as a passport to church-membership.<sup>1</sup> This apparently abrupt change of sentiment and procedure on the part of Mr. Edwards, caused considerable excitement. At that time "all the churches in the county, except two, and all the clergy, except three, approved of the lax mode of admission."<sup>2</sup> Still venerating the memory of their former pastor, who had led them for so many years, the people were unwilling to accept the new doctrine. When Mr. Edwards announced his change of views to the church committee he proposed to them to preach on the subject. But this, while the public mind was in such a ferment, they decidedly opposed, suggesting that instead he should give his reasons in print. Accordingly he "applied himself with all diligence to prepare something for the press."<sup>3</sup>

And Publishes his  
Views.

In the meantime a young woman presenting herself for admission to the church, was required by Mr. Edwards to make a public profession. This she consented to do if the church authorities approved. The church committee, however, refused to admit her on those conditions by a vote of three to fifteen. In April, 1749, Mr. Edwards proposed, "if the church desires it," to resign his ministry. He coupled his offer, however, with a proviso that everybody should have an opportunity to read his book, and that in the council of dismissal no one should be allowed to vote who had not either read his treatise, or listened to what he had to say in

<sup>1</sup> Dwight's Life of Edwards, p. 314.

<sup>2</sup> Ib. p. 307.

<sup>3</sup> Ib. p. 315.

his own defence from the pulpit. No response was made to this proposition. As Mr. Edwards seemed to depend so fully upon the effect he had hoped to produce by the publication and circulation of his book, the people, who had already determined upon their course, were impatient that it should appear, and the delay always attendant upon printer's work, was actually used to discredit the pastor. It was not that a majority were waiting to read the book, for when it appeared in August, only about twenty copies were distributed through the town, and very few of these were carefully perused.

*Mr. Edwards tries to Ascertain the Opinions of other Clergymen by means of a Day of Fasting.*

On the 15<sup>th</sup> of October, no further advance having been made in the settlement of the difficulty, Mr. Edwards, desiring the advice of some of the neighboring ministers, proposed that a day of fasting and prayer

should be observed. The church assenting, the pastor suggested that the advice of those clergymen invited to assist in the fast-day services, should be requested concerning the admission of members. The church, however, after discussing the matter adjourned without action till after the fast. Several persons desirous of joining the church had signified their willingness to make a public confession, but the committee were unwilling to admit them in that manner, and it was concerning these pending requests that Mr. Edwards desired the opinions of the neighboring clergy. The fast was announced for Thursday, the 26<sup>th</sup>.

*Petition for a Precinct Meeting.*

To such a height had the excitement already reached, that many persons were ready to proceed to extreme measures at once. In the church meeting a council "to bring matters to an issue" had been advocated. This feeling manifested itself without delay in a most unmistakable manner. The next day, October 16<sup>th</sup>, a petition signed by eleven persons was presented to the precinct officials, asking that a meeting be held "as quick as may be," to consider the position of affairs. In this document it was proposed

"that Mr. Edwards, by the Precinct, or by a committee which the Precinct shall appoint, may be in a friendly and in a christian manner treated with and entreated to recede or come back from his principles,

which he has pretended to maintain in his late book, against his own practice and Mr. Stoddard's practice and principles, with respect to the admission of church members."

If he refused, and the precinct declined "to come into his notions or principles," then the alternative of a separation was to be considered. Here was a threat that if the pastor did not back down he must be dismissed. The following names were signed to this petition :--

John Hunt, Gad Lyman, Ephraim Wright, Josiah Pomeroy, Jonathan Strong Jr., John Lyman, James Lyman, Jonathan Hunt, Joseph Wright, Gideon Lyman, Seth Pomeroy.

*A Family Party.* Here was quite a family party ; nine of the eleven signers were related by birth or marriage. John, Gideon and Gad Lyman were brothers ; Gad Lyman married the sister of Josiah and Seth Pomeroy. The latter were brothers ; and Seth Pomeroy married the sister of John and Jonathan Hunt, who were also brothers. Jonathan Strong Jr., and the wife of Jonathan Hunt were cousins, and James Lyman was an uncle of John, Gad and Gideon Lyman. These men were all strong opponents of Mr. Edwards. Ephraim Wright acknowledged that he was among those accused of reading immoral literature. The wife of Zadoc, son of John Lyman and nephew to Gideon and Gad Lyman, was among the number cited before the committee by Mr. Edwards. These facts indicate that much of the bitterness of feeling engendered by the unfortunate affair of five years before still lingered and was coming to the surface. Only four of the above eleven names can be found upon the church records at that time.

Continuous Precinct  
Meeting.

Three days after, the precinct meeting convened, but it was not deemed advisable to act upon the suggestions of the petitioners till after the fast. The only question decided was that the parish did not desire Mr. Edwards to preach upon the question at issue. The meeting was adjourned for two weeks. Though the petitioners had not gained their object, they had accomplished an important purpose. In thus placing the matter before the precinct, the way was opened for that series of meetings by means of which affairs were managed by the opponents of Mr. Edwards throughout

the controversy. This meeting was not dissolved till the desired result was reached. For more than a year it was continued by adjournment from time to time.

**The Day of Fasting.** No record remains concerning the day of fasting, humiliation and prayer. It was shorn of much of its significance when the invited clergy were not permitted to consider the question at issue, and its proceedings had no influence whatever on subsequent events.

**The Adjourned Precinct Meeting.** On the 22<sup>d</sup> the precinct met according to adjournment. It decided not to ask the advice of the neighboring clergy concerning the admission of members by profession, nor was it willing to allow any one to enter the church in that way pending the existing controversy. Mr. Edwards was denied the privilege of preaching on the absorbing topic, and his request to leave that point to the decision of the neighboring ministers was also negatived.

**A Committee of Conference Chosen.** At the adjourned precinct meeting held on the 2<sup>d</sup> of November, the original petition came up for action. The principles advanced by the pastor were not accepted, and a committee of nine persons was chosen to confer with Mr. Edwards,

"and to devise or concert what proper methods shall be taken to preserve the peace, Unity and Comfort of this Church & Precinct and to put an End to the Controversy now subsisting between minister and people." This committee was composed as follows:—Ebenezer Pomeroy Esq., Dea. Jno. Clark, Samuel Mather, Mr. Joseph Hawley, Lieut. Noah Wright, Sergt. Joseph Wright, Deacon Noah Cook, Major Seth Pomeroy, and Sergt. Ebenezer Hunt.

In it may be traced relationships similar to those already pointed out, not only among themselves, but also in some instances with the signers of the petition, two of the latter being members of the committee.

**The Conference and Counter Propos- tions.** In a conference with Mr. Edwards the next day, he was asked by the committee if he had any "measures to propose." He replied that he had already suggested what he considered

reasonable ; a fair hearing was all he desired, and he was willing to admit to his pulpit any person whom the committee should designate to reply to his arguments. Thereupon the committee submitted a proposition fairly on a par with the one in which Mr. Edwards offered to resign his pastorate. Mr. Edwards was to preach upon the subject at issue, but his sermons must first be submitted to the committee, who were to lay them before some clergyman, who should read his reply immediately after Mr. Edwards had concluded his sermon. With this proposition Mr. Edwards was unwilling to comply unless he should be allowed to examine his antagonist's sermon before preaching his own. So this battledore and shuttlecock method of argumentation did not materialize. Objection was also made by Mr. Edwards to the precinct's taking the initiative in the management of an ecclesiastical affair of this nature. It should be done he said by the church.

The Committee Reports to the Precinct.

Unable to come to any satisfactory agreement with the pastor, the committee submitted a report to the precinct, at an adjourned meeting held on the 9<sup>th</sup> of November. They were unanimously of the opinion that the precinct should request the church to apply to some of the neighboring ministers for advice and counsel.

**Mr. Edwards Objects.** This report was put into the hands of Mr. Edwards on the evening before the precinct meeting. But having no opportunity to confer with the committee after perusing it, he forwarded a communication to the meeting. In it he made strong objection to the precinct's requesting the church to call an ecclesiastical council to "issue the dispute between the minister of the Precinct and the Precinct." If the church should call a council, it would be for the purpose of considering difficulties of its own, and not the precinct's disputes. He said that it was "not yet certain that there was any dispute or difference between the pastor and the church, for this had never been properly tried." He still further objected to the church being limited by the precinct to any course of action. The precinct had no more right to direct or limit

the church to a certain method of proceeding than the church had to limit or direct the precinct in the management of its affairs. The church might yet take some action which would supersede the need of a council. He was not opposed to calling a church meeting to secure and promote the interests of religion.

**A Church Meeting  
Called.**

This communication had a decided effect upon the meeting. Though the report of the committee was accepted, yet the vote requesting church action was so modified as to cover one at least of the points raised by Mr. Edwards. The church meeting was to be called to determine "whether there is not a dispute between" Mr. Edwards and the church "respecting the question he hath argued in his book," and if so, "to see if the church will not apply to some of the neighboring ministers for their advice." Ten more persons were added to the committee, two of whom were deputed to wait on the pastor, and lay before him the action of the precinct.

**Ignore the Book  
but want it An-  
swered.**

The principles propounded by the Northampton minister at once opened up a discussion among the clergy throughout the colony, and rumor intimated that their pens were busy in reply. Unwilling either to read Mr. Edwards' book or allow him to preach on the subject, yet his parishioners were anxious that his arguments should be confuted. Accordingly the precinct desired Mr. Ebenezer Hunt to obtain of Rev. Mr. Solomon Williams of Lebanon, a copy of the notes he was preparing in opposition to these new doctrines. After voting to pay the expenses of the council, the precinct meeting was adjourned one month.

**A Stormy Church  
Meeting.**

Agreeably to the vote of the precinct, Mr. Edwards called the church together. But tenacious of what he deemed the peculiar rights of that body, he varied somewhat from the phraseology suggested by the parish in naming the purpose of the meeting. He proposed this question for their action:—"What course ought to be taken by the church under its

present difficulties, with respect to the admission of members into the church." This was not exactly the subject, at least not as thus stated, that the opponents of the pastor desired the church to act upon. A heated discussion followed, and plain talk was indulged in on both sides. Finally the threat was made that if he refused to act as had been suggested, the precinct would warn a church meeting without him. Mr. Edwards denied the right of the precinct to dictate to the church the reasons for calling it together. He argued that it was a bad precedent for the church to submit to the dictation of the precinct, and an unreasonable way of managing church affairs to bring them first into a precinct meeting in which the pastor had no right to appear, and when decided upon, order the pastor to carry them out. By such a course, he said, church meetings would become a nullity, and the pastor a "cypher." He considered the proposition to apply to neighboring ministers for advice concerning the course the church should pursue, unreasonable, because all but one of them were opposed to his teachings. Notwithstanding he consented to put to vote as desired by the parish, the question whether there was any dispute between the pastor and the people on the subject at issue. The vote which was largely in the affirmative, must have satisfied him on that point. Then instead of complying with the suggestion of the precinct with reference to seeking advice from neighboring ministers, he insisted that a mutual council should be called to consider the general question in controversy and the best method of deciding the difference. A long debate ensued and the meeting adjourned without action for one week, having first chosen a committee of five persons, with Major Seth Pomeroy as chairman, all members of the already existing precinct committee, to confer with the pastor.

**Major Pomeroy Swings the Meeting.** At the consultation with Mr. Edwards, his arguments so far prevailed, that the entire committee, with the exception of its chairman, signed a report recommending a mutual council, on the terms proposed by the pastor. This was presented at the adjourned church meeting. Major Pomeroy, however, was strongly opposed to this course. He contended that

the terms of the proposal were too broad, and opened the way for the discussion of topics that they were not yet ready to submit to the decision of a council. He accused Mr. Edwards of having more regard for his own welfare than the good of the church, and argued that the church, ensnared by the general terms of the proposition, would thus consent to a consideration of the question concerning the pending admissions. Should a recommendation to admit them prevail, Mr. Edwards would gain a victory, and though the advice of the council was not binding "it might lay the church under a disadvantage." Major Pomeroy's arguments had a decided effect, and the church refused to accept the report. Ten more names were added to the committee and the meeting adjourned for two weeks.

**The Church Decides not to Celebrate the Lord's Supper.** So strong had become the feeling against the pastor, that certain members of the church refused longer to partake of the Lord's Supper under his administration, and censured him for appointing Sacraments. To test the sentiment of the church on this subject, Mr. Edwards put to vote the question whether that ordinance should be continued, and it was decided in the negative.

**Composition of the Committees.** The committees chosen by the church and precinct, were composed, the former of fifteen and the latter of nineteen persons. And it is worthy of note that fourteen of the fifteen members of the church committee were identical with those who served the precinct in the same capacity. This may have been a coincidence, but in all probability it was unavoidable, as the leading men in church and parish were the same.

**Report of this Committee.** The enlarged committee, after due deliberation, prepared a report which they submitted to Mr. Edwards. They proposed, that previous to any endeavors after separation, an advisory council should be chosen, confined wholly to Hampshire County churches; suggesting that the definitive council, if decided upon, should also be bound by the same limits. They recommended that if Mr. Edwards continued to ad-

vocate the principles set forth in his book, he ought not to remain pastor of the church ; that the business proposed to the advisory council should be :— whether the church should take any longer time to peruse Mr. Edwards' book ; whether the church, considering the great opposition to Mr. Edwards, both in church and precinct, should not use means for an immediate separation ; and if so what measures should be taken to that end. The committee also prepared a vote to be offered in the church meeting, proposing that steps should be taken for an immediate dissolution of the pastoral relation, in case Mr. Edwards refused to accede to their views.

Mr. Edwards Refuses to Accept these Propos- tions. To these suggestions Mr. Edwards promptly demurred. He replied at great length in a communication addressed to the meeting,

taking up each topic separately, showing their inconsistency with one another, and their unfairness to him. He charged the committee with arranging beforehand what was to be done, and confining the action of the council solely to that decision, and he suggested that having provided beforehand a verdict for the council, it was superfluous to call one. He took the ground that the church might possibly differ in opinion from the precinct (losing sight of the fact that the same men composed both bodies, and had the power to carry out in one organization what they formulated in the other). Most strongly he objected to the determination to confine the council to members of the Hampshire County churches, because nearly all of them were in sympathy with his opponents. He charged them with endeavoring to influence him by the threat of recommending an immediate dismissal unless he assented to their views. Undoubtedly this reply of the pastor was irritating and provoking. It contained some thrusts that the committee could not well parry. The effect was plainly noticeable at the next meeting with him.

Another Meeting. Strong Language. At the next conference with the pastor Major Pomeroy spoke plainly. It was the opinion of the committee, he said, that the church had

been put to an abundance of trouble and difficulty by reason of the course pursued by Mr. Edwards. His own opinion and advice was that the pastor should take the matter into serious and solemn consideration and contemplation. He further intimated that the committee had decided not to dally longer about the matter, at the same time presenting him with their ultimatum, which would be reported to the church. They recommended a mutual council, composed of seven or nine churches, all in Hampshire County, to which should be communicated the existing state of affairs, insisting that the opposition to Mr. Edwards was so great that the council should proceed at once to dissolve the pastoral relation.

**Reply of Mr. Edwards.** To these statements Mr. Edwards replied, proposing that five or seven of the nearest churches should be called to decide whether churches out of the county should be included in the council to dismiss the pastor, whether the time had come to take such action, and if not, to advise with reference to the present conduct of affairs. With regard to the proposed report of the committee he would not consent to it, or put any such thing to vote in the church meeting, unless first advised to do so by a council such as he advocated. This was something of a set-back to the committee, and they revised their report, agreeing to suggest that a council of five churches in Hampshire County, mutually chosen, should consider the question whether the proper time had arrived for convening a council for dismissal, whether ministers of churches from other counties should be allowed to take part in it, and to advise upon the course to be pursued in preparation for such a council.

**The Report Debated and Adopted.** This report having been submitted at the adjourned church meeting, Mr. Edwards protested vigorously against its propositions. He insisted that the council should be composed, not of churches, but of neighboring ministers, who although they were prejudiced against him, were less outspoken in their opposition than other ministers in the county. As an alternative, he proposed to leave the mat-

ter with the ministers of the association. The question was long debated and various suggestions were offered by both sides, but the meeting adjourned without action. The next day, after further discussion, the report of the committee was substantially adopted. It was decided that a council from five of the seven nearest churches should be invited, and steps were taken to present the case properly, on behalf of the church. Hon. Ebenezer Pomeroy, Lieut. Noah Wright and Joseph Hawley were chosen agents for that purpose, but Mr. Hawley declined to serve. Again the church refused to observe the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper.

**Precinct Meetings.** While the church was laboring with the problem, the precinct met from time to time, but transacted no business. On the 18<sup>th</sup> of December, a vote was passed to provide for the "entertainment of the Council," to pay all the expenses and to engage Major Lyman [Hon Phinehas Lyman] of Sustield, to assist in presenting the case. Major Seth Pomeroy was authorized to wait on Mr. Lyman<sup>1</sup> and "obtain his services at a suitable reward."

**Meeting of the Council.** On the 26<sup>th</sup> the council met. It was composed of Rev. Chester Williams of Hadley, Rev. Timothy Woodbridge of Hatfield, Rev. Edward Billings of Cold Spring (Belchertown), and Rev. Jonathan Judd of Southampton. The church in Sunderland, which had been invited, was not represented. The names of the delegates, with the exception of that of Dea. Strong of Southampton, have not been preserved.

**Mr. Edwards Argues his Case.** Mr. Edwards spoke in his own behalf before the council. The main questions he presented were, whether it would "be worth the while to use any endeavors for an accommodation," whether the parties were "now ripe for a separation," "whether it was for any thing blame-worthy and scandalous in the pastor, which rendered him unfit for the ministry, and worthy to be dismissed from it," and whether

<sup>1</sup> In Dwight's Life of Edwards, p. 341, it is stated that Mr. Lyman "declined the proposed service."

he should be allowed to go out of the county for members of the final council. He claimed that the clergy in the county were nearly all opposed to him, and would not therefore be impartial judges; and that his people had never given him a fair hearing, either in public or private. Declaring his right to preach his principles, he contended that if he did so the people were obliged to hear him, and requested the council to decide that point in his favor. Many of the accusations against him he answered completely, arguing that he had not been treated fairly, attributing it to the fact that his people or the leading men among them, had from the first determined that he must be dismissed.

*Contention of the  
Church Unre-  
corded.*

No record is to be found of the arguments advanced by the agents of the church. Only from an occasional allusion to them in the remarks of Mr. Edwards, can an idea of their purport be obtained.

*Mr. Edwards again  
offers to Resign  
Conditionally.*

After another lengthy argument in favor of his position, Mr. Edwards made a second conditional offer to resign his pastorate.

He proposed that the people should listen to his declaration of principles, defer all further action upon the matter till spring, when the traveling would be more comfortable, not agitating the question in the meantime. Then if they desire a council of churches to settle the controversy, allowing him to choose some members of it from other counties, and the council should be able to "find out no way for a composition or accommodation," he would resign, provided the precinct would free him from rates.

*Decision and Ad-  
journment of the  
Council:*

The council decided that there should be a restoration of the sacrament; that pastor and people should converse freely about the points in controversy, but that there should be no public proceedings relative to them. An opinion was also expressed that the opposition of the church committee to Mr. Edwards' preaching upon his principles was one probable occasion of the uneasiness and dissatisfaction which pre-

ailed. Probably to see what effect their recommendations would produce, the council adjourned to the first Wednesday in February, 1740.

Another Abortive Conference.

An adjourned precinct meeting was held on the first of January, at which a committee of seven persons, all of them prominent in the previous interviews with the pastor, was chosen to "confer with Mr. Edwards in a free christian and friendly manner, agreeably to the advice of the late council." Still anxious, however, that the arguments of Mr. Edwards should be answered, Mr. Williams not having published his pamphlet, the precinct voted "to take effectual care to employ some suitable person that is going to Boston," to interview Mr. Clark of Salem [Rev. Peter Clark] to ascertain if he proposed to answer Mr. Edwards' book.

When the above committee sought an interview with the pastor, he objected on the ground that the proposition of the committee made the whole matter a public proceeding, contrary to the advice of the council, but he expressed a willingness to confer with each member of the committee or any others in their private capacity.

## CHAPTER XVII.

### DISMISSAL OF REV. JONATHAN EDWARDS.

#### Final Decision of the Council.

AGREEABLY to adjournment the council re-assembled February 7<sup>th</sup>, the subject under discussion being the right of the pastor to select members of the final council outside the county lines. Mr. Edwards presented his opinions with fervor and earnestness, evidently producing a favorable impression. After considerable debate the council found itself evenly divided, and no decision was reached. A compromise was finally agreed upon, by which the pastor was permitted to select a minority of the members from other counties. Mr. Edwards had contended for the privilege of naming one half the council outside of Hampshire County, while the church insisted that none should be so chosen.

#### Pulpit Rights of the Pastor.

Mr. Edwards then desired that the council should decide whether he had a right to preach his opinions from his own pulpit, but they declined to consider the question, holding that he had that privilege, and that he ought not to leave that question to any council. Thereupon Mr. Edwards declared that he judged he had a right to preach on the subject on the Sabbath, but would take the least offensive method, and deliver a course of weekly lectures on the topic.

#### The Precinct Un-willing to allow him to Preach his Peculiar Doc-trines.

At a meeting adjourned to February 12<sup>th</sup>, a committee to confer with Mr. Edwards, and endeavor to dissuade him from preaching on that subject, was appointed; it then adjourned to March. Mr. Edwards declined to accede to this request, and went forward with his lectures. The first one

was attended by many strangers, but few of his parishioners were present. It fell on a day when the County Court was in session, and the Justices adjourned the court in order to attend the lecture. A deserved compliment to the fame of the preacher, as well as a decided indication of the interest manifested in this important question.

Advice Sought from  
the Hampshire  
Association.

A movement was then made to have a church meeting convened in order to seek the advice of the Hampshire Association of Ministers. But Mr. Edwards objected. Hardly a week, he said, had passed since a council had been held for that very purpose, and the condition of affairs had not since materially changed. He further declared that he would have no hand in calling any more councils, unless he might be permitted to invite from other counties, members favorable to his own views.

Thereupon a paper was prepared desiring the association to convene and give advice. It recited that Mr. Edwards had declined to call the church together to make the request, and that he refused to assist in calling any more councils, unless he might choose one half the members from other counties. This paper received about fifty signatures, and was forwarded to Rev. Mr. Williams of Hadley. He sent the summons to the members of the association to meet at his house at a time named. In this document it was stated that the people of Northampton were desirous that some one should preach on the opposite side of the controversy, and sought the advice of the association thereon.

Only six of the twenty-five ministers comprising the association responded. Three of them had an interview with Mr. Edwards, who told them that he desired to select only a portion of his half of any council from beyond the county, and not the whole as had been represented. The meeting adjourned without action. Indeed it would have been impolitic and contrary to usage for so small a number of members to pledge any thing in behalf of the association.

**Another Animated Church Meeting.** In the meantime the weekly lectures were continued, and large audiences gathered to listen, among whom were to be found few Northampton people. After the fifth and last lecture, in accordance with a vote of the precinct, Mr. Edwards called a church meeting to agree upon a council. This was apparently one of the most hotly contested of the many church meetings that had been held. The first vote was upon admissions to the church, and a large majority signified their preference for the old way. By a bare majority, at the conclusion of an animated debate, it was decided to call a council, which was to take into consideration the state of affairs, and if judged best to proceed to dissolve the relation between pastor and people. Then followed another lengthened discussion concerning the question of inviting ministers from other counties. Mr. Edwards insisted on the privilege of naming one half the council, three of whom should be from churches not in the county, if the council consisted of more than fourteen churches, but he would be satisfied with two if the whole number was not more than ten. The church decided against this proposition, and adjourned to the next day. An attempt was made at the adjourned meeting to amend the vote already adopted concerning the business to be brought before the council. But after a spirited debate, Mr. Edwards refused to put to vote the motion to amend, virtually ruling it out of order. Again the suggestion to select members of the council from other counties was negative. Thereupon the moderator threw out the hint that the meeting had better be dissolved, as there seemed to be no prospect of joint action. He thought that if the church had decided "not to leave it to the discretion of the council, whether to separate and not allow him to choose any members of the council outside of the county," it would not be worth while to make any attempt to act in concert. This ultimatum only added fuel to the flame, bringing out in a more emphatic manner the determination not to yield those points. The more hot-headed were in favor of the church acting ex parte in the matter, and after the meeting had been dissolved some one proposed that they should then and there take action in defiance of the pastor, and pass the amended call, but wiser counsels prevailed.

**Lower Association  
Applied to.**

At a precinct meeting held on the 2<sup>nd</sup> of April (after two adjournments without business), it was voted to "apply to the association of the lower part of the county for advice whether it were best to comply with Mr. Edwards' terms respecting the choice of a council." This body was to meet at Springfield Mountains on the following Wednesday. Mr. Josiah Pomeroy was appointed messenger to present the request of the parish, and Major Ebenezer Pomeroy and Major Joseph Hawley were designated to prepare the document. The precinct then adjourned till the 10<sup>th</sup> of April. In order that the association might fairly understand the case, Mr. Edwards sent a communication to a member of the association setting forth his views. At the precinct meeting held on the 10<sup>th</sup>, the letters of the association to the pastor and precinct were presented, and the former also offered a letter which he had addressed to one of the deacons. Neither of these documents have been preserved. This meeting was composed of but forty-four persons, and the only business accomplished was to request Mr. Edwards to call a church meeting to consider the question at issue, and adjourn to the 17<sup>th</sup>.

**Its Advice Rejected.** The suggestions offered by this association nowhere appear, but from a sentence in Mr. Edwards' report of the church meeting, called in accordance with the latest vote of the precinct, the inference may be drawn that its purport was to call another council to decide about inviting members of the definitive council, from other counties. At the church meeting the advice of the association was read and discussed, and by a vote of one hundred nine to fifty-six it was decided not to admit members from other counties, and also not to call another previous council.

**Deacons Warn a  
Church Meeting.**

On the 17<sup>th</sup> of April the precinct met again, and a letter from Rev. Mr. Clark of Salem was read. No copy of this communication remains, but in it he undoubtedly declined to undertake to answer the arguments of Mr. Edwards. It was voted to apply to the deacons of the church to warn a meeting of

that organization, to be held the next "Fryday," and to pay them for their trouble. Mr. Edwards had gone on a "journey down the country," and the precinct was in such haste to have its mandates carried out that it could not await his return. The precinct meeting was adjourned to the 2<sup>d</sup> of May.

**Its Proceedings.** Three days after, on the 20<sup>th</sup>, the church was convened, and the question concerning the expediency and propriety of the brethren acting without the pastor in calling a council was under discussion. A proposition was made by Mr. Hawley that seven persons, ministers or laymen or both, should be summoned, not as an ecclesiastical council, but as advisers, to consider whether by some method pastor and church might not consist together notwithstanding their differences of opinion. These men were to be mutually chosen from any part of the county. This was the beginning of the end, and after the proposal had been fully argued, it was adopted by a great majority. A committee of five persons was chosen to consider what "circumstantial alterations" might be deemed necessary in the call, and the meeting adjourned for one week. This committee was unable to agree, a majority of them holding the opinion that it would be better to comply with the request of the pastor in reference to the residence of members, and so reported. Apparently the church had become tired of the wrangle, and at the adjourned meeting voted that the pastor should be granted the privilege of choosing some members of the council "without the bounds of the county," and requested him to notify a church meeting. Probably the meeting held in the absence of the minister, was not deemed legally competent to act finally in the matter.

**A Mutual Council  
Decided upon.**

Accordingly another gathering of the church was held, and the previous action ratified, with the qualification that it should not have the "force of a precedent." The number to be chosen from abroad was limited to two, with the privilege of naming two others as substitutes. It was also decided that the council should be one of churches, to consist of

ten members. The pastor and church then selected the churches they desired as follows:—

“By Mr. Edwards, Rev. Mr. Reynolds of Enfield; Rev. Mr. Billings of Cold Spring; Rev. Mr. Abercrombie of Pelham; and Rev. Mr. Woolbridge of South Hadley as substitute. He also named Rev. Mr. Foxcroft of Boston; Rev. Mr. Parkman of Westborough; and Rev. Mr. Wigglesworth of Ipswich Hamlet, and Rev. Mr. Hobby of Reading as substitutes.

On the part of the church were chosen Rev. Mr. Woodbridge of Hatfield; Rev. Mr. Breck of Springfield; Rev. Mr. Hubbard of Sheffield; Rev. Mr. Williams of Hadley; Rev. Mr. Ashley of Sunderland; and as substitutes, Rev. Mr. Williams of Longmeadow, and Rev. Mr. Leavitt of Somers.

Major Pomeroy, Lieut. Wright and Joseph Hawley were appointed to manage the case before the council. The Precinct convened by adjournment, immediately after the church meeting, and voted to pay the expenses of the council, as well as of some person who should be procured by the church to assist them in presenting their case.”

*Proceedings of the  
Council.*

On the 19<sup>th</sup> of June the council met. Nine churches only were represented. The church at Cold Spring (Belchertown), did not accept the invitation, but Mr. Billings, the pastor, being in Northampton on the day on which the council assembled, was desired by Mr. Edwards and the church to sit and act in the council, and was admitted by that body. As he had no delegate with him the council was not full.<sup>1</sup>

The council was composed of the following named churches and delegates:—

“Enfield—Rev. Peter Reynolds, pastor; Mr. Edward Collins, delegate.

“Sheffield—Rev. Jonathan Hubbard, pastor; Mr. Daniel Kellogg, delegate.

—“Sutton—Rev. David Hall, pastor; Mr. Jonathan Hall, delegate.<sup>2</sup>

“Reading—Rev. William Hobby, pastor; Mr. Samuel Bancroft, delegate.

<sup>1</sup> This act of Mr. Billings cost him his pastorate. Within two years he was dismissed, ostensibly on the same grounds as was Mr. Edwards. When the church at Cold Spring was invited to join the council by Mr. Edwards, it declined on the ground that it did not agree with his principles, and was unwilling that its pastor, who was of the same opinion as the Northampton pastor, should represent it there.

<sup>2</sup> It is nowhere stated how the church in Sutton came to be included in the council. It was not among those originally named by Mr. Edwards. Undoubtedly it was accepted by both parties in place of some one of them that declined.

"Springfield, First Church—Rev. Robert Breck, pastor; Mr. Thomas Stebbins, delegate.

"Sunderland—Rev. Joseph Ashley, pastor; Mr. Samuel Montague, delegate.

"Hatfield—Rev. Timothy Woodbridge, pastor; Oliver Partridge Esq., delegate.

"Hadley, First Church—Rev. Chester Williams, pastor; Mr. Enos Nash, delegate.

"Pelham—Rev. Robert Abercrombie, pastor; Mr. Matthew Gray, delegate."

The council organized by the choice of Rev. Jonathan Hubbard as Moderator, and Rev. Chester Williams as Scribe. Both sides presented their case, and the council, having endeavored to harmonize the differences between the parties without avail, voted that the pastoral relation should be dissolved if the people still persisted in desiring it, and adjourned for a couple of days in order to give the church another opportunity of expressing its opinion. That body was again convened, and again it voted—by two hundred against twenty—that the pastor must be dismissed. Accordingly on the 22<sup>d</sup> of June, the council took the necessary steps to dissolve the relation between pastor and people. The result of the vote was as follows:—

"Affirmative—Pastors—Jonathan Hubbard, Robert Breck, Joseph Ashley, Timothy Woodbridge, Chester Williams.

"Delegates—Daniel Kellogg, Thomas Stebbins, Samuel Montague, Oliver Partridge, Enos Nash.

"Negative—Pastors—Peter Reynolds, David Hall, William Hobby, Robert Abercrombie, Jonathan Billings.

"Delegates—Edward Collins, Jonathan Hall, Samuel Bancroft, Matthew Gray."

A Protest against  
the Action of the  
Council.

Those pastors and delegates voting in the negative entered a protest against the decision of the council. They believed that the proceedings had been consummated in too great haste, considering the past conduct and present temper of the people; some who voted to dissolve the connection expressed surprise at the uncommon zeal manifested by the people in voting for the dismission, which showed "that they were far from a temper of mind, becoming such a

solemn and awful transaction considered in all its circumstances."<sup>1</sup>

**Compromise Im-possible.** Had the council been full the result would have been a tie. Both pastors and delegates had decided upon their course beforehand, and each voted in accordance with the views of the party by whom he was selected. The position of affairs in the church—the bitter uncharitableness which prevailed on one side, and the unyielding stubbornness on the other—precluded any attempt at compromise, and the council had none to propose. The doors of the church so far as the admission of members was concerned, had been closed for some time, and apparently could not be opened unless one party or the other yielded unconditionally, or were forced to submit to a decree of the council. The people of Northampton, whether with or without sufficient cause, had lost confidence in their pastor. Taught by the emotional preaching of that day, which permitted feeling to usurp the place of reason, they sought to compass their ends despite all opposition. The two parties which had since its settlement, embittered the social and political life of the town, united by means of the great awakening under Mr. Edwards, now made common cause against the man whose influence had brought about this unity. So thoroughly had this spirit of contention among themselves been subdued, that one argument against allowing the pastor to preach on the issue, was the fear that it might "make parties in town."

<sup>1</sup> In the foregoing narrative of the dismissal of Rev. Jonathan Edwards from the church in Northampton, the Journal of Mr. Edwards as quoted in Dwight's Life of that eminent Divine has been followed. The church records are mute concerning the whole matter. So little appears there during the pastorate of Mr. Edwards, that it has been suggested that they have been tampered with, and all information relating to that controversy abstracted. But there is little or no evidence to justify such an insinuation. It was not then customary to make full records of any public meeting, and it is not to be supposed that church records would be an exception. The church records previous to the pastorate of Mr. Edwards, are very imperfect. They contain a list of church members, but scarce anything relative to its business transactions. While it is to be regretted that more minute reports were not preserved, it is yet fortunate that Mr. Edwards' Journal remains to supply the deficiency. The records of the precinct meetings during this time, are all carried out in the usual brief and unsatisfactory manner, and from them Mr. Edwards must have obtained his facts concerning parish action.

*Pastoral Relations not Indissoluble.* Much may be said on both sides of this controversy, and neither party can be deemed entirely blameless. The ground has been so thoroughly covered by other writers that it is needless to enter largely upon the matter here. In those days the dismissal of a pastor was by no means a rare occurrence. The impression prevails that then clergymen were settled for life. That was the understanding among pioneer churches, and in the majority of cases, so resulted. Still when a church and people found sufficient reasons for parting with a pastor, they had no hesitation about dismissing him. During a little more than thirty years—from 1721 to 1755—no less than six clergymen were dismissed within a radius of twenty-five miles of Northampton, and within the bounds of what then constituted the County of Hampshire.

*Extenuating Circumstances.* Not a little severe and in some degree just criticism has been bestowed upon the people of Northampton, for the bitterness of their opposition to Mr. Edwards. Sharp controversy and extreme partisanship were characteristic of the times. In a community where the clannishness of relationship largely prevailed, personalities were brought into every contest. Letters to government officials concerning local disagreements, to be found on file in the archives of the state, amply prove this assertion. It will be remembered that during the contest over the settlement of Mr. Breck at Springfield, in which Mr. Edwards bore a conspicuous part, so strong was the partisanship displayed, that the aid of the County Court was invoked by one party to silence their opponents. While there may be no sufficient apology for the unchristian hatred which pursued Mr. Edwards to his dismissal, there are still extenuating circumstances. To the people of Northampton, the religious opinions by which they had been so long governed, were no less significant than were to Mr. Edwards the principles by which he sought to supplant them. The battle of methods was fought out on both sides with equal zeal and ability.

There is another consideration, which though it may be deemed of slight importance in comparison with other

suggestions, ought not to be entirely overlooked. When Mr. Edwards was dismissed he was simply the pastor of an obscure country parish. His renown as a thinker came afterwards. The odium of dismissing the greatest theologian of modern times is imputed to the people of Northampton, but while the uncommon heat and ardor of his opponents cannot be too strongly censured, it must be considered that much of modern criticism, in fact most of the denunciation of his opponents, has been founded upon the reputation that came to him after his dismissal. In the solitudes of Stockbridge he wrote his immortal treatises on the "Freedom of the Will," "Original Sin," and "The History of Redemption," and won a name that will never fade. While he was known as a preacher of more than ordinary power, and a man of greatly superior intellect, the halo of a subsequent achievement that challenged the sympathy of his admirers, had not then appeared. He was dismissed as a pastor of a small country church, of more than ordinary capacity it is true, but not as the man of commanding influence which he afterwards became.

The Precinct followed Established Precedent.

There were precedents for the position taken by the citizens concerning the make-up of the council, though they finally yielded that important point. The precinct, in acting in advance of the church, but followed the course pursued since the establishment of the town. In almost every case respecting the settlement or call of a minister, the town vote contains no allusion to any co-operation with the church. Up to within a few years of this time, town and church were practically the same. Now as another church existed, the precinct or parish took the place of the town, and following out previous practice, took all the preliminary steps. Mr. Edwards resented this, and in some degree undoubtedly aggravated the feeling against him by assuming certain rights as pastor and moderator of church meetings, by which he sought to modify or change the line of action proposed by the precinct. But it is unprofitable to discuss further this unpleasant controversy. Mr. Edwards was misrepresented by his opponents, and every means was adopted, however unscrupulous, in accordance with the prevailing temper of the times, to compass his dismissal.

**A Doubtful Assertion.** It has been many times asserted that at last the precinct voted no longer to hear Mr. Edwards preach. His farewell sermon was delivered July 1, 1750. After that he was engaged by the committee to preach whenever he was in town, but as he says, only "when no one else could be obtained, and only from Sabbath to Sabbath." "At length," observes Dr. Hopkins, "great uneasiness was manifested by many people of Northampton, that Mr. Edwards should preach there at all. Upon which the committee for supplying the pulpit, called the town together to know their minds with respect to that matter; when they voted that it was not agreeable to their minds that he should preach among them."<sup>1</sup>

**Not Justified by the Records.** While it may be possible that such a meeting was held and such a vote passed, the records of both precinct and town are silent concerning the matter. The exact date of this meeting is not given, but it is generally understood that it took place in the latter part of the month of November, 1750. Precinct meetings were held in that month, and at one of them it was voted "to pay Mr. Edwards £10 old tenor, per Sabbath for the time he preached here since he was dismissed," but there is nothing on record concerning a determination to hear him preach no more. If at any meeting such a vote was passed, it must have been at one hastily summoned by the committee, in such an informal manner that no record of its proceedings was ever made. Certain formalities were required to establish the legality of any town or precinct meeting, and while it is doubtful whether any meeting called in accordance with the usually prescribed formula, ever passed such a vote, it is still barely possible that it may have been omitted from the records. It is not to be asserted that Dr. Hopkins, who was familiar with all the proceedings of the time, though not settled in Hadley till four years after the dismissal of Mr. Edwards, would deliberately falsify in such a matter, yet there seems to be the shadow of a doubt resting upon that statement. If any such opinion was ever expressed by the people of Northampton, it was undoubtedly instigated by the at-

<sup>1</sup> Dwight's Life of Edwards, p. 412.

tempt made about this time, or soon after, to resettle Mr. Edwards over a new church in town, to be formed by his personal friends and admirers. Whatever of truth there may be in this statement, it is certain that Mr. Edwards preached here after the passage of the vote. The last sermon delivered by him in Northampton, was in the afternoon of October 13th, 1751, from the text to be found in Heb. 11:16. Rev. Jonathan Judd of Southampton occupied the pulpit in the morning, and in his diary both facts are recorded.

Mr. Edwards Called  
to Stockbridge.

Mr. Edwards received proposals from the church and congregation in Stockbridge to become their pastor, in December, 1750. About the same time he had an invitation from a London Missionary Society to take charge of the Housatonna Indians, who were located at Stockbridge and its immediate vicinity. Accordingly he went in January to that place, where he remained throughout the winter, and finally accepted the call, removing to Stockbridge in the autumn of 1751.

Another Difficulty  
in Northampton.

But he did not leave Northampton without one more unpleasant encounter with his old parishioners. The friends of Mr. Edwards, though small in numbers, were devoted to him, and were anxious to retain him in Northampton. With this intent they, together with "some who acted on neither side, but after his dismission adhered to him," proposed to form another church, and settle him as its pastor. When this subject was first introduced is somewhat uncertain. Probably it was in contemplation for some time, and came to a head when he received the call to Stockbridge. Mr. Edwards was satisfied that this would only perpetuate and prolong the strife here, and did not favor the design. Yielding at last to the importunity of his friends, he consented to join them in seeking the advice of an ecclesiastical council.<sup>1</sup> This body met in Northampton, May 15<sup>th</sup>,

<sup>1</sup> "The opponents of Mr. Edwards imagining that the convening of this council was part of a plan for reversing the proceedings of the former council and restoring him to his old pastoral charge, were exceedingly excited, gave way to great violence of feeling."—Miller's Life of Edwards, p. 122.

1751. Great excitement was created in town by this movement. It was believed that Mr. Edwards, through his friends, was endeavoring to obtain a re-settlement in town.

*Remonstrance of the Church.* At a church meeting called to consider the subject, a committee was appointed, who drew up a remonstrance which was presented to the council. This paper was one of the most bitter documents that the opponents of Mr. Edwards had formulated against him. It has disappeared, and only from the manner in which Mr. Edwards and Mr. Hawley allude to it, can any idea of its purport be obtained. Mr. Edwards, in a letter to Mr. Hawley (which together with the reply of Major Hawley, will be noted hereafter), says in regard to it:—

"as to your Remonstrance to the last council, it not only contained things that were uncharitable and censorious by which Facts were misinterpreted and overstated but it was full of direct, bold slander asserted in strong terms, and delivered in very severe opprobrious language merely on suspicion and surmise."

Major Hawley, who, though he denied writing the document, acknowledged that he assisted in compiling it, and copied and read it to the council, thus characterises it. He says that it was

"Everywhere interlarded with unchristian bitterness, sarcastical, and unmannerly insinuations. It contained divers direct, grievous, and criminal charges and allegations against Mr. Edwards, which, I have since good reason to suppose, were all founded on jealous and uncharitable mistakes." "It was," he continues, "a scandalous, abusive, injurious libel, against Mr. Edwards and his particular friends."<sup>1</sup>

The council immediately invited the committee to appear and substantiate the charges and insinuations it contained. Refusing to recognize that assembly as an ecclesiastical body, the committee declined to act. The church was also desired by the council to unite with it in a friendly conference upon the affair, but the state of feeling was such that nothing could be accomplished. Finally the council, agreeably to the judgment of Mr. Edwards, advised that he accept the call to Stockbridge.

<sup>1</sup> Dwight's Life of Edwards, p. 494.

**Mr. Edwards Re-**  
**moves his Family.**

For more than a year Mr. Edwards continued to occupy his homestead on King Street, and did not remove his family to Stockbridge till October, 1751. The interval he spent between Northampton and Stockbridge, having been installed over the church in the latter place, in August. He preached his last sermon here on the 13<sup>th</sup> of October, and three days after set out with his family on the journey to his new place of abode. Nothing is known concerning the manner of his leave-taking, or who of his faithful friends were present to bid him a sorrowful farewell. All that remains relative to it is the following entry in the diary of Rev. Jonathan Judd of Southampton :— “Oct. 16, met Mr. Edwards and family at Lorin (?) Bartlett’s, rid some miles.” It is gratifying to know that at least one faithful friend cheered by his presence, the wearied divine as he severed the last ties that bound him to the scene of his aspirations, his triumphs and his tribulations. From that time onward no evidence appears to show that Mr. Edwards ever again preached in Northampton. However, as he had two married daughters living here it is probable that he occasionally visited the place. He made a journey to Northampton in 1755, and no doubt came at other times to visit his daughters.

**Major Hawley Ar-**  
**raigned.**

Mr. Edwards, in a letter to Rev. Mr. Erskine of Scotland, written in July, 1750, in a review of the controversy with his people, thus speaks of one of the most prominent among his opponents :—

“ The people, in managing this affair on their side, have made chief use of a young gentleman of liberal education and notable abilities, and a fluent speaker, of about seven or eight and twenty years of age, my grandfather Stoddard’s grandson, being my mother’s sister’s son, a man of lax principles in religion, falling in, in some essential things, with Arminians, and is very open and bold in it. He was improved as one of the agents for the church, and was their chief spokesman before the council. He very strenuously urged before the council the necessity of an immeditate separation ; and I, knowing the church, the most of them, to be inflexibly bent on this event, informed the council that I should not enter into the dispute, but should refer the matter wholly to the council’s judgment.”<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Dwight’s Life of Edwards, p. 410.

**He Writes to Mr. Edwards.** The individual referred to in the above extract, was Major Joseph Hawley, who doubtless contributed more than any of his contemporaries towards the dismissal of Mr. Edwards. In a short time Major Hawley began to realize the injustice of his course, and on the 11<sup>th</sup> of August, 1754, opened a correspondence with that gentleman, requesting him to give his judgment concerning the conduct of the writer in that affair. To this letter, which has not been preserved, in the following November, Mr. Edwards made an elaborate reply. In it he reviewed to some extent the entire controversy as well as the part taken in it by his correspondent. He dwells especially upon the uncharitable and unchristian spirit evinced by the people and their leaders, the continued perversion and misrepresentations of his views, the want of deference towards him whom most of them "esteemed to be the chief instrument in the Hand of God of the eternal salvation of their souls," and the manifest determination from the beginning of the controversy that he should be dismissed. He says: —

"The People most manifestly continued in a constant flame of high Resentment & vehement opposition for more than two years together; & this spirit instead of subsiding grew higher and higher, till they had obtained their end in my expulsion; nor did it cease then, but still they manifested their Jealousy of me, as if I was personally doing the part of an Enemy to 'em so long as I had a living in the Town, yea till they saw the Town well cleared of all my Family. So deep were their Prejudices when their Heat was manifested that nothing would quiet 'em till they could see the Town clear of Root & Branch, name & Remnant." With reference to Mr. Hawley's own course, he says in the same letter: — "And therefore, sir, I think you made yourself greatly guilty in the sight of God, in the Part you acted in this affair, becoming, especially toward the latter Part of it, very much the Leader in it; & much from your own forwardness, putting yourself forward as it were as tho' fond of meddling & Helping, which were the less becoming considering your youth and considering your Relation to me. Your forwardness especially appeared on this occasion, that after you were chosen as one of the committee to plead their cause before a council, you came to me and desired me to stay the ch. on purpose that you might have opportunity to excuse yourself from the Business; which was accordingly done, and you did excuse yourself and was excused, but when the matter came to be pleaded before the council you (I think very inconsistently) thrust yourself forward and pleaded the cause with Earnestness, notwithstanding 'tis manifest that what you

did in the affair from Time to Time, not only helped the People to gain their end in dismissing me, but much encouraged and promoted the spirit with which it was done; your confident, magisterial, vehement manner had a natural direct tendency to it." He also gives his views concerning the Remonstrance, to which allusion has already been made, and strongly states his own position in the affair of the proposed re-settlement.

**Major Hawley in Reply Apologizes to Mr. Edwards.** To this letter Major Hawley replied on the 21<sup>st</sup> of January, 1755, receiving "kindly and thankfully," the strictures upon his conduct which it contained. He acknowledged that he was guilty in many ways, though he had not in all respects apprehended himself so culpable as did Mr. Edwards. Several instances are cited in which he condemns himself for his manner and language, and evinces much sorrow therefor, though he still adheres to the sentiments then uttered. The following paragraph indicates sufficiently the general tone of the letter:—

"As to what I said at Father Lyman's before the previous council, I freely confess, Sir, and own that the air and language in which considerable of what I said was delivered, was irreverent, immodest, derisive, magisterial and savouring of haughtiness and levity, and such as ill became me when arguing with you, Sir, who was so much my superior in age, station and accomplishments, and who deserved from me great respect and deference; for which I humbly and sincerely ask your forgiveness and am very sorry, not only for that it was disrespectful to you, Sir, But also a very ill example to others, and had a tendency to abate the respect and reverence which the bystanders ought to have maintained in their minds towards you, and which it was my Duty to have by all means Endeavored to have maintained, and probably had an influence upon the hearers towards prompting them to a disrespectful and Irreverend treatment of you afterwards. But with regard to the sentiments I then delivered, upon the most impartial consideration I have ever been capable of I have not been able to discover sufficient reason to alter them, and apprehend that if I had declared them in a decent, moderate, humble manner, I should not have reason to reflect upon myself therefor. And I make no doubt, Sir, But that if I had opportunity for free and calm conversation upon the matter I would satisfy you that there was no Inconsistency in what I said before that council, with my wholly declining to act as the ch'a. agent in the matter that were to have been laid before it." In regard to the remonstrance he offers little excuse, but condemns the substance of it, the manner of its presentation, its undue heat and exaggeration and the untruths and slanders it contained. He expresses sorrow for the

part he had taken in that "melancholy affair," and "humbly & earnestly" asks the forgiveness of Mr. Edwards.<sup>1</sup>

And writes another  
Letter Six Years  
Afterwards.

Ten years after the proceedings for dismissal had been closed, six years subsequent to the above quoted correspondence, and two years after the death of Mr. Edwards, Major Hawley again opened up the matter. This time he addressed a very humble and apologetic letter to Rev. Mr. Hall of Sutton, a member of the two councils. Having made his peace with Mr. Edwards and been forgiven by him, he now made a full and free confession to the public. In this document he takes much the same ground as in the letter to Mr. Edwards, accusing himself of bitterness, partisanship and uncharitableness, acknowledging in particular certain marks of disrespect to Mr. Hall, as well as to the council. He strongly condemns his own acts in preparing and promulgating the remonstrance against the settlement, and is humbly penitent and sincerely sorry for the course he pursued in that unhappy affair.<sup>2</sup> That Major Hawley greatly regretted the position he had assumed and maintained in this controversy is manifest, and that he had the manliness and courage to confess it, is greatly to his honor as a man and a christian.

**Mr. Edwards' Friends.** When the final council voted to dissolve the pastoral relation between Mr. Edwards and his church, "if the people still persist in desiring it," the church was speedily convened to answer the question. As has been previously stated, "a great majority (above two hundred against twenty)<sup>3</sup> voted" in the affirmative, Mr. Edwards writes that twenty-three persons voted in his favor, and "others staid away choosing not to act either way." Which statement if correct is of very little significance, but the very full vote given—the church consisting of "about 230 male members"<sup>4</sup>—shows the state of

<sup>1</sup> This correspondence may be found in full among the Hawley papers in the Bancroft collection, at the Lenox Library in New York. The letter of Mr. Edwards was published in the *Bibliotheca Sacra*, vol. 1. p. 553, but the reply of Major Hawley has never before been given to the public.

<sup>2</sup> The above letter may be found entire in Dwight's *Life of Edwards*, pp. 421-427.

<sup>3</sup> Dwight's *Life of Edwards*, p. 308.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.* p. 410.

feeling in that body. In another letter Mr. Edwards states that there were "about 20 heads of families, besides others, women and young people, who appeared openly against the proceedings of the town." These were the men who voted against dismissal, notwithstanding the social ostracism that pursued all who publicly adhered to him. The position in the community of those who befriended the pastor at this time, is summed up by Mr. Edwards. He says:— "A person by appearing my friend at Northampton, even so much so as openly to discountenance my being turned out of the pulpit, exposes himself to the immediate persecution of his neighbors, and perhaps of his nearest friends."<sup>1</sup> It appears that only a score of men throughout the whole town had the courage of their convictions, and dared to brave public sentiment in that time of prejudice, strife and contention. Their names are worthy of preservation, but only a few of them can now be positively identified. Mr. Edwards himself names Col. Timothy Dwight and Dr. Samuel Mather. Mr. Sylvester Judd records the following:—Samuel Kingsley, Nathaniel Strong, Benjamin Lyman, Joseph Allen and Benjamin Sheldon. To this list also belong the names of Major Timothy Dwight and Elihu Parsons, who both in 1750, married daughters of Mr. Edwards. Tradition and conjecture add the names of Dea. Samuel Lyman, Dea. Stephen Wright, Daniel Clark, Simeon Clark, Capt. John Baker, John Baker Jr., Ebenezer Clark Jr., William Clark, Capt. Roger Clap, Major Jonathan Clapp, Joseph Bartlett and Increase Clark.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Dwight's Life of Edwards, p. 467.

<sup>2</sup> See Appendix.

## CHAPTER XVIII.

### SELECTION AND SETTLEMENT OF A NEW MINISTER.

**Advice Sought about a New Minister.** THE precinct, on the 29<sup>th</sup> of June, 1750, took measures to supply the pulpit, instructing the committee appointed for that purpose to apply to the neighboring ministers and solicit their advice respecting some "suitable gentleman to preach here on probation." Mr. Edwards was invited to preach the next Sabbath, and the church was desired to "appoint a day of solemn fasting and prayer to God for his direction and blessing in seeking a gentleman to settle here in the work of the Gospel Ministry."

**An Unlucky Act.** A controversy arose with Mr. Edwards the next month, respecting the use of the sequestered land. Apparently the custom had been to rent one half of it, and give the minister the use of the rest. In 1750, the year of his dismissal, Mr. Edwards claimed the usual privilege. But although the year was already half completed, the precinct refused to grant him the use of any of the land.

**An Extraordinary Vote.** In November the town passed a somewhat extraordinary vote, allowing Daniel Sheldon "£30 old Tenor at y<sup>r</sup> rate Dolls @ 52s, & as much more as he deserves for his extraordinary service by Ringing y<sup>r</sup> Bell for church meetings & extraordinary parish meetings and extraordinary Sweepings occasioned by such extraordinary meetings." From October 9, 1749, to November 19, 1750, no less than twenty precinct meetings had been held, as well as a large number of church gatherings, for all of which Daniel Sheldon had to ring the bell.

**Lightning Strikes the Meeting-House.**

During the summer of 1751, the meeting-house was struck by lightning, and was considerably damaged. The lightning struck the weathercock, and ran down the spire to the ground. Whether it was considered a direct visitation of the Providence of God frowning upon the people for dismissing their pastor, is not recorded. Doubtless there were those who took that view of the matter. A question arose whether a new weathercock or a vane should be procured, to surmount the steeple. Economic considerations prevailed, and the committee was ordered to obtain whichever was the cheaper. A weathercock was purchased at a cost of £10.13.

**The Pulpit Supply.**

The committee appointed to supply the pulpit was diligent in its work, and during eighty-seven Sabbaths, immediately following the dismissal of Mr. Edwards, there were but seven in which there was no preaching. Mr. Edwards preached twelve Sabbaths in all, but not consecutively, for he says that he only preached when the committee could obtain no one else. Mr. Pierce<sup>1</sup> of Hadley, was employed ten Sabbaths between July 22<sup>d</sup>, 1750 and February 18<sup>th</sup>, 1751. He did not always preach here, however, but on several occasions arranged an exchange with other clergymen in the county. Rev. Mr. Frink of Rutland, preached about eight Sabbaths, to February, 1751. Major Hawley, in a letter to his brother Elisha, thus alludes to the efforts to obtain preachers:—

“They have no candidate for Mr. Edwards place. Mr. Frink preached two months, to good satisfaction, but he was not with us on probation. Capt. Wright was sent to the Jerseys for a Mr. Arthur, but he was sick and died soon. Mr. Wright then obtained through Prest. Burr of New Jersey College, knowledge of Mr. Farrand, a graduate last commencement. He was highly recommended by President Burr,” but Mr. Hawley thought he “must be very fresh not having been licensed when Mr. Wright was in the Jerseys.” “Our estate,” he continues, “is very melancholly whoever is in the mistake, either Mr. Edwards or y<sup>e</sup> people, yet surely our loss of him and y<sup>e</sup> difficulty we meet in endeavoring for a candidate are tokens of the great displeasure of the Almighty. May God be merciful to us.”<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Josiah Pierce of Hadley was a graduate of Harvard College, removing to Hadley, where he was employed as town clerk and teacher. He sometimes preached, though he does not appear to have been ordained.—History of Hadley, p. 362.

<sup>2</sup> Hawley MSS., Lenox Library, N. Y.

**Mr. Farrand Called.** During twelve Sabbaths previous to June 17<sup>th</sup>, 1751, Mr. John McKinstry<sup>1</sup> preached and Mr. Daniel Farrand officiated thirty Sabbaths, to February 13<sup>th</sup>, 1752. His preaching was quite satisfactory, and in September, 1751, when he went to New Jersey to attend commencement, the parish voted that he should be requested to return and preach longer as a candidate, it being the "almost universal desire of the parish that he should return hither as soon as may be." He did return, and occupied the pulpit till February 13<sup>th</sup>, 1752. On the 29<sup>th</sup> of April, he was invited by a "very large majority" to settle. Afterwards there was a "polling of the members of the meeting," and eighteen persons voted in the negative. He refused to accept the call, and finally settled in Caanan, Ct.

**"Sorrowful Circumstances."** After the refusal of Mr. Farrand different clergymen were employed as they could be obtained during that year, but their names do not appear, and undoubtedly the people were destitute of preaching much of the time. In a letter written November, 1752, Mr. Edwards touches upon the position of affairs in town during this period :—

"The people of Northampton are in sorrowful circumstances, are still destitute of a minister, and have met with a long series of disappointments, in their attempts for a re-settlement of the ministry among them. My opposers have had warm contentions among themselves. Of late, they have been wholly destitute of any body, to preach steadily among them. They sometimes meet to read and pray among themselves, and at other times set travellers or transient persons to preach, that are hardly fit to be employed."<sup>2</sup>

**The Aggrieved Brethren.** The agitation caused by the recent controversy that convulsed the church and parish did not immediately subside. Its influence undoubtedly retarded the settlement of a new pastor. For a time it destroyed unanimity of feeling towards any candidate proposed, and must have had an unpleasant effect upon the minds of the clergymen who were invited to the pastorate. That there was a difference of sentiment exist-

<sup>1</sup> Rev. John McKinstry was born in Sutton, was graduated from Yale College in 1740, and ordained pastor of the second church in Springfield (now Chicopee), in 1752. He did not preach here as a candidate.

<sup>2</sup> Dwight's Life of Edwards, p. 518.

ing in the church is apparent from the following vote, passed at a meeting in February, 1752:—

"Then after some Conference The Question was put whether the Precinct would use any means to procure a Candidate for the work of the Gospell Ministry in s'd Precinct before the church in s'd precinct had Endeavored to accommodate and settle the Difficulties subsisting therein with those who call themselves the aggrieved Brethren, and It passed in the Negative." It was also voted that the moderator of the church be desired to warn a meeting "to take y' papers, called the church's remonstrance, of the Clerk of the church, and give y' Aggrieved Brethren (if they desire it) an opportunity to take a copy of part or y' whole thereof, under the inspection of s<sup>t</sup> Committee."

Nothing more is known of this document, neither is there positive evidence of the cause of disagreement.<sup>1</sup> That it was an outcome of the late trouble can not be doubted. This was without doubt, the contention to which Mr. Edwards alludes in the heretofore quoted letter.

*Major Hawley Turns Jones out of the Pulpit.* During the remainder of the year, after the declination of Mr. Farrand, about whom Mr. Edwards says that there was much contention, no person seems to have appeared here as a candidate, and the treasurer's books contain no account of any money paid for the pulpit supply. It was during this period that Sunday services were conducted as stated by Mr. Edwards, by "travellers and transient persons." Tradition asserts that Major Hawley on one occasion became so disgusted with the preacher, that he went into the

<sup>1</sup> The "aggrieved brethren" may have been disturbed on account of the attitude of the precinct, which seems to have taken the initiative in ecclesiastical affairs throughout the controversy with Mr. Edwards. In almost every movement during that time the church appears to have acted at the dictation of the parish. Indeed the records show that heretofore all action in reference to church matters originated in town-meetings; at least there is nothing to prove that the two organizations were in the habit of acting in concert. In the absence of any other information it may be inferred that at last certain members of the church, who were undoubtedly the friends of Mr. Edwards, objected to any further continuance of this method, and desired that in matters relating to the calling of a minister, the church should have an equal voice with the parish. Mr. Edwards dwelt especially upon this point in his arguments against the precinct vote. It will be noted that but twenty votes were cast in the church meeting in favor of retaining the pastor, when decisive action was taken at the desire of the council. When Mr. Farrand was invited by the precinct, eighteen votes were given against him, and it is legitimate to conclude that they were cast by the same persons. After this, when it is presumed that the "aggrieved brethren" had been appeased, it will be seen that the votes in the precinct relative to calling a minister are in "concurrence with the church." Nothing points absolutely to such a solution of the difficulty, but in the absence of certainty this one is at least plausible.

pulpit, turned the speaker out of it, and concluded the services himself. Mr. Baucrost has among his notes about Mr. Hawley : "turned Jones out of the pulpit about 1752." This tradition fits in admirably with the state of affairs then existing and may contain a grain of truth. Jones, (if such a person was employed to preach), was evidently an itinerant, who had no standing as a clergyman, and was one of those who, according to Mr. Edwards, was "hardly fit to be employed."

**Difficulties Increase.** An attempt was made to obtain "a young minister, a Mr. Green of Barnstable,"<sup>1</sup> but there is no evidence that he ever preached here.

**Rev. Judah Champion Invited.** This state of affairs continued till the commencement of the following year, when Rev. Judah Champion<sup>2</sup> was invited to preach as a candidate. He occupied the pulpit for about three months, apparently to the satisfaction of the congregation. In April, 1753, the precinct voted to concur with the church in inviting him to settle, but he declined. He was offered £266.13.4 as a settlement, and a salary of £80.

**Rev. Mr. Hooker Preaches as a Candidate.** During the summer of 1753, affairs began to improve somewhat. The committee was fortunate enough to obtain the services of another candidate, and preaching was much more regular; yet the condition was by no means encouraging. Up to this time several candidates had been called; but at the close of the third year after the departure of Mr. Edwards his place had not been filled. From a worldly point of view the position was most desirable. The community was prosperous, the town increasing in wealth and population, and the salary was the "largest paid by any country congregation in New England."<sup>3</sup> Yet the clergy seemed unwilling to settle here. There was something unsatisfactory in the moral and religious aspect of the place. The antag-

<sup>1</sup> Dwight's Life of Edwards, p. 492.

<sup>2</sup> Rev. Judah Champion was the son of Col. Henry Champion; he was born in East Haddam, Ct., graduated at Yale College in 1731, and settled in the ministry at Litchfield, Ct., in 1738. He died in 1810, aged 81 years.

<sup>3</sup> Dwight's Life of Edwards, p. 492.

onisms engendered by the controversy that ejected the former minister were more pronounced than ever, and the ministers shrank from undertaking the task of reconciling them. Entire unanimity had not prevailed at either call, and no one knew how soon the scenes of previous years might be repeated.

The First Precinct  
Merged into the  
Town.

The meeting at which Mr. Champion was invited to preach on probation was the last precinct meeting. In 1752, Northampton declared its willingness that the second precinct should be erected into a separate district, and the next year the legislature passed the requisite enactment. The name of Southampton first appears on the town records in that year, and the first precinct was merged into the township. For twelve years two precincts had been in existence, and while all general town business had been transacted in one town-meeting, everything pertaining to church affairs had been managed separately by the separate precincts. With the incorporation of the new district the old system was revived, and all town business, ecclesiastical as well as secular, was hereafter transacted at the same meeting.

Mr. Hooker Invited  
to Settle.

On the 17<sup>th</sup> of September, 1753, the town voted "in concurrence with the church" to extend a call to Rev. John Hooker. The vote was unanimous. Mr. Hooker probably preached here about four months previous to the invitation to settle, though there is no vote to be found requesting him to preach as a candidate. On the 10<sup>th</sup> of September he was paid £19.4, which, according to the sums paid other ministers, indicates a candidacy of about sixteen Sabbaths. In all probability he came here in May, a few weeks after the departure of Mr. Champion. It may well be believed that it was largely through Mr. Hooker's ministrations that the long existing disagreements in the community were reconciled, and he had the good fortune to find among the first fruits of his labors a people cordially united in seeking his services. The town offered him

"the sum of £266.13.4 in the present lawful money of the Province of Massachusetts Bay in New England, to enable him to procure a settlement in this town; £200 whereof to be paid him in the spring of the

year 1734, and the remainder in the spring of the year 1735, and that they give him for a salary besides and exclusive of the above sum of settlement y<sup>e</sup> sum of £40 like lawful money for his first year's Salary," with an increase of £5 each year till the amount should reach £100, which was to be his permanent compensation. In addition the sum of £6.13.4 was voted "to enable him to procure firewood."

~~He Accepts the Call.~~ The meeting was adjourned to the 15<sup>th</sup> of October, and at that time the written acceptance of Mr. Hooker to the above propositions was presented. In that document he declared "That the unanimity with which he understood y<sup>e</sup> he was chosen and y<sup>e</sup> above proposals made, He could not but look upon as the voice of Providence calling him to undertake y<sup>e</sup> work of y<sup>e</sup> Gospel ministry in this town." He demurred slightly at the sum allowed for fire-wood, deeming it insufficient, but finally consented to the arrangement. It was also voted that money paid to Mr. Hooker should be in "silver of sterling alloy at six shillings eight pence by the ounce or in Spanish milled pieces of eight at six shillings by the piece." This contract with Mr. Hooker was entered in full upon the records, and signed by him on the 11<sup>th</sup> of December, 1733.

**The Ordination.** His ordination took place on the 5<sup>th</sup> of December. A committee of six persons was appointed to order the sittings of the people in the meeting-house, and the services were to commence at 10 o'clock, A. M. Ten ministers and delegates comprised the council. The ordination services were as follows:—

Rev. Stephen Williams of Longmeadow, moderator of the council, made the first prayer at the Imposition of Hands and gave the charge; Rev. Mr. Hopkins of Springfield made the prayer after the Imposition of Hands; Rev. Peter Reynolds of Enfield made the prayer before sermon; Rev. David Parsons of East Hadley (Amherst) preached the Sermon, from Acts 10<sup>th</sup> Chapter, 33<sup>rd</sup> verse; Rev. Robert Breck of Springfield gave the Right Hand of Fellowship. The other members of the council were Rev. John Woodbridge of South Hadley, Rev. Jonathan Ashley of Deerfield, Rev. Joseph Ashley of Sunderland, Rev. Timothy Woodbridge of Hatfield, and Rev. Jonathan Judd of Southampton.

*Expenses of the  
Ordination.*

The expenses of the ordination were paid by the town, and amounted to £48.14.9 old tenor, equal to £6.8.7 lawful currency. Included in the account was the sum of £7.4 paid for wine. While the different amounts paid to certain individuals may be found among the town treasurer's papers, the articles provided, with the single exception of wine, are not stated. An ordination dinner for the ministers and their delegates was an important and never omitted proceeding, and it was for this that the largest expense was incurred. What rejoicings among the young people in the evening followed the religious exercises of the morning, are not known. It is easy to imagine that everybody, both old and young, felt like indulging in some kind of celebration at the conclusion of this long and bitter struggle. The custom of finishing off the ordination exercises with a ball in the evening was almost universal, and no doubt was followed on this occasion in Northampton, though nothing has been discovered which throws any light on the subject.<sup>1</sup>

1 Ordinations in old times were regarded as a pastime, an occasion for frolic and amusement. By common consent Wednesday seems to have been the day of the week usually fixed upon for the ceremony. These occasions were somewhat rare, and the general interest manifested in them, always drew large crowds. The exercises usually occupied from an hour and a half to two hours. At first they were much more elaborate, sometimes continuing throughout the day, and formerly it was the custom for the candidate to preach a sermon at his ordination. But much of the solemnity of the occasion gradually wore away, the exercises were curtailed to an hour or two, and the rest of the time was devoted to conviviality and social intercourse, the affair closing in later times with the ordination ball in the evening. The town or parish always paid the expenses of the ordination which, in some cases were quite large. As much as £50, equal to half a year's salary, was expended at an ordination in Charlestown, in 1718. A dinner was always provided for the attending ministers and their delegates, and it came to be one of the most important features of such an occasion. An open air ordination was held at Wrentham, in November, 1738. A great concourse of people assembled, and the services took place in a valley.

## CHAPTER XIX.

### FOURTH FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR.

**The French and English extend their conquests in all Directions.**

DURING the short interval of peace which followed the close of "King George's War," in 1748, and which continued but half a dozen years, both French and English endeavored to push their conquests to the utmost. The boundaries between the contestants for American soil were left undetermined by the treaty of Aix la Chapelle, but were to be arranged by a commission. A conference settled nothing, and negotiations only protracted the uncertainty. While the French penetrated the wilderness to the west and established posts down the Ohio, claiming jurisdiction to the Gulf of Mexico, the English were pressing to the eastward in Acadia, to the Northward in New York, New Hampshire and Vermont, and to the westward in Pennsylvania. The governments of both countries were engaged in negotiations concerning the movements of their subjects on the American continent, the negative results of which it was apparent must inevitably end in war. Expecting, indeed with little prospect of avoiding such an outcome, and in preparation for it, both nations dispatched armies of observation across the Atlantic : — The English to Virginia under Braddock, and the French under Dieskau to Canada.

**Union of the Colonies Discussed.**

In the meantime the question of taxing America was under discussion in Parliament. Many plans for the union of the colonies among themselves, as well as for closer connection with Great Britain, were suggested. A conference of delegates from the colonies was held at Albany, a system of union decided upon and referred to the several legislatures and to Parliament ; but it failed to meet the views of either and nothing was accomplished.

**War Commenced.** Though the only apparent settlement lay in a resort to arms, neither nation was quite ready for that decisive step. But while the diplomatic warfare was raging in the old world, open hostilities had commenced in the new, and the "seven years' war, the school of the Revolution,"<sup>1</sup> was begun. The war in America had been two years in progress before a formal declaration was made.

**Several Expeditions** Projected by the English. In February, 1754, an expedition was sent out by Gov. Dinwiddie of Virginia under the command of Col. Washington to protect the frontiers, and drive the French from the Ohio. Though at first successful, Washington was compelled to yield to superior numbers, and surrendered to the French. The following year occurred the unfortunate expedition under Gen. Braddock, and at the same time three other movements were in progress. One of them was intended for the preservation of Oswego, and the reduction of Niagara; another was directed against Crown Point, and a third had for its object an attack upon the French settlements in Nova Scotia. These expeditions, however, are not material to this history, except so far as they were participated in by citizens of Northampton, or its immediate vicinity.

**Protective Measures Adopted.** Gov. Shirley, prominent in planning the campaign, took precautions for the protection of the Province, and the several towns were ordered not only to provide ammunition, but to take all necessary measures for defending themselves. In accordance with this order, the town had in July an inventory made of its stock of ammunition. Hezekiah Wright, who had it in charge, reported that it consisted of 345 lbs. of powder, 720 lbs. of lead, and 1,000 flints. Col. Israel Williams of Hatfield was made commander-in-chief in Hampshire County, and Capt. Elijah Williams of Deerfield, was put in command of the cordon of forts erected for the protection of the frontiers, all of which were greatly strengthened.

<sup>1</sup> *Oration of Edward Everett.*

**The Forts already  
Garrisoned.**

The more important of these fortifications had been garrisoned from 1749 to 1754, though but few if any soldiers from Northampton had been stationed in them. Capts. Elisha Hawley and William Lyman of this town, then lieutenants, both served during this period, and were at times employed at Forts Dummer and Massachusetts.

**Indian Raids in West-  
ern Massachusetts.**

Before any declaration of actual warfare had been made, the Indians became active and alert. Existing fortifications in the more exposed towns were repaired, and many new ones erected. The first attack fell upon the New Hampshire settlements. In August, a woman was killed and several persons captured at different places. On the 30<sup>th</sup>, a party of nine persons were made prisoners at Charlestown, and carried to Canada. These raids caused great alarm everywhere. Many settlers in the newly established towns withdrew, and others sought refuge within the fortifications. Pittsfield was deserted, and it was feared that in other towns this example might be followed. The Indian hordes were again let loose, and in the language of the military correspondence of that day:— “It is now open war and a very dark distressing scene opens; a merciless miscreant enemy invading us in every quarter, pushed on by our inveterate foe.”<sup>1</sup>

**Indians Discovered  
at Southampton.**

On the 9<sup>th</sup> of September, Col. Israel Williams writes to Secretary Willard that “6 Indians were discovered at Southampton yesterday, a party of 30 men were sent after them. The Indians seem full of fury and malice.” He had previously issued an order to Major Hawley at Northampton to enlist ten men for service in Southampton. The same day on which the above letter was written, Major Hawley reported that he had enlisted and dispatched from Northampton the following named men, under command of Sergt. Noah Strong:— Medad Edwards, Samuel Fairfield, Asahel Birge, Eleazar Pomeroy (servant of Samuel Clark), Elijah King (servant of Joseph Bascom), Benjamin Bartlett (servant of

<sup>1</sup> Letter of Col. Israel Williams.

Samuel Alvord), Phinehas Colfax (servant of Jonathan Hunt Jr.), and Edward Higgins, who figures somewhat further in this particular expedition. In November, Noah Burt, Silas King, Shammah Pomeroy, and John Birge, were added, probably to take the place of some who had been dismissed. The next day these men marched to the house of Rev. Jonathan Judd in Southampton, the only fortified place in the town. They put the structure in good condition for defence, and there made their headquarters. They remained till the 18<sup>th</sup> of December, when the squad was disbanded. Part of their duty was to guard the inhabitants while at their daily labor. How one guard performed that duty and the results to Private Higgins are detailed in the following letter from Major Hawley to Col. Israel Williams:—

“ Sept. 22, 1734.

“ Yesterday about 3 o'clock, P. M. an enemy was at Southampton, about a mile from Mr. Judd's. Two men and some lads were picking corn, and one man carting corn. Two soldiers were on guard, one at the bars of the field and the other at the opposite side of the field. The carter was gone with a load of corn, and returning. Higgins at the bars supposed he heard some one stir in the brush (which were very thick) near him. He turned and faced the place where he heard the noise, upon which a gun was discharged, which shot the left thigh of his trousers through on the crotch side, with a ball and three swan shot, but missed his flesh. The account when it came to me yesterday seemed to be unaccountable and to bear several marks of incredulity. viz.: that no Indian was seen, but one gun shot, that his trousers were blacked with the powder and he not hurt; the gun was a very loud one, and Higgins to account for his not being hurt said he stood somewhat astraddle. A number of our people from the other side of the river had gone out a little before. I was inclined to think the fellow had shot his own breeches with a view to make noise, but the people who went out are satisfied the fellow was shot upon by an enemy. Lt. Nathaniel Clark, whom I esteem judicious, has been on the spot and informs me that the place where the gun was shot was on the east side of Manhan river, that upon the beach of a brook the west side of the river, they evidently tracked two Indians about 40 rods from where the brook goes into the river. The brook is thickly set with growth. They saw the track of one on the east side of the river, and they find at about a rod's distance from where the fellow said he stood when the gun was discharged, evident signs of the standing of a man in very thick brush. No track was visible, the ground being hard; & small alders were bent or broke down, and a large alder burnt to the white by the powder, and very much blacked, so it is evident the muzzle of a

gun was not a foot from it. A little nearer was an elder cut off by the ball in a line to where Higgins says he stood, and in the line to his breeches. This experiment was tried. The spot where he said he stood was in the middle of the cart path, where there was nothing standing to hang his trousers on, so that if he did it himself he must have managed with great art and design hardly possible. His breeches were not blacked.

"The people in the field say he came to them as soon after they heard the gun as was possible for a man to come, and his gun was then loaded with two balls; he appeared in the utmost consternation. His brother soldiers proposed to go to the spot but he said 'for the Lord's sake don't go there.' The soldiers and laborers all immediately fled from the field at the opposite part to the nearest house that way. The fellow appears innocent and is uniform in his account. No persons had been where the tracks were discovered. The most considerate are satisfied the enemy was there. The people of Southampton will be together today and therefore not exposed. I hope to send a suitable number of men tomorrow early to Southampton (today is the Sabbath) to secure those parts, and a party west where they may be most likely to come across the Indians, or their tracks if they are returning."<sup>1</sup>

JOSEPH HAWLEY."

Excitement in South-  
ampton.

A few days previous to this alarm the people of Southampton were considerably excited, and were evidently ready after the adventure of Higgins as Mr. Hawley suggests, to come together, concentrating within and about the fortifications for safety. On Sunday, September 1<sup>st</sup>, while good Parson Judd was preaching, his audience suddenly left him. "The assembly," he records in his diary, "broke up in sermon time by a gun shot at a bare." Whether the "bare" escaped and the congregation returned to the "improvement" of the remainder of the discourse, the diary saith not. The next day he made the following entry:—"The scout came in who went out yesterday; people began to move together." On the 9<sup>th</sup>, Mr. Judd "rid to Hatfield and obtained orders to Major Hawley for 10 soldiers," and the next day he records "the soldiers enlisted and came to my house." This seems to have been the origin of the order for the guard at Southampton, though Mr. Judd does not mention that any Indians had been seen there on Sunday, the 8<sup>th</sup>, the inference being that the "bare" incident of the previous week had been sufficient to call for the presence of ten soldiers.

<sup>1</sup> The above letter in its abridged form is found in the Judd MSS.

Militia of Northern  
Hampshire Reor-  
ganized.

A complete reorganization of the militia of Hampshire County was entered upon this year. Joseph Hawley of Northampton and Elijah Williams of Deerfield were promoted to the rank of major at about the same time by Gov. Shirley, and the former became quite active in the formation of the new companies. Apparently there was to be a muster and a reorganization of the regiment in the northern part of Hampshire County, and on the 16<sup>th</sup> of August Major Hawley wrote to Col. Israel Williams about the officers of the Northampton companies. He proposed the following names: —

His own Co.	2 <sup>d</sup> Co.	3 <sup>d</sup> Co.
Lt. Gideon Lyman	Capt. [John] Hunt	Capt. Benj. Sheldon
Lt. William Lyman	Lt. Ebenezer Hunt	Lt. [Eben] Kingsley
Ens. Nathaniel Clark	Ens. Josiah Pomeroy	Ens. Dan'l Pomeroy

Major Hawley's Sug-  
gestions.

He mentions a Capt. Wright, who probably belonged to the first company, who it was expected would refuse his former commission. If Capt. Wright declined, the companies were to be officered as above, but Wright and Gideon Lyman would not serve together, or one under the other. Should both decline, then he suggested that Lieut. William Lyman should be made captain, and Josiah Pomeroy lieutenant of the first company, Daniel Pomeroy, ensign of the second company, and Jonathan Strong Jr., ensign of the third company. His brother Elisha, he thought in case of the failure of one of the above officers, would be a better lieutenant than Lieut. Caleb Strong, as he had done much more to merit the position. It is not probable that any companies were officered at that time in just the manner proposed by Major Hawley, though several of the persons named served in the expedition against Crown Point, and some of them were killed. Indignant at the manner in which his suggestions had been received by his commanding officers, Major Hawley on the 3<sup>d</sup> of October addressed a pungent letter to Col. Williams, plainly intimating his dissatisfaction at the snub inflicted upon him. In it he suggests that Col. Israel Williams, Col. Oliver Partridge, Major Ephraim Williams, and himself, should confer upon military affairs "for y<sup>e</sup> defence of our people on y<sup>e</sup> west of

Connecticut river." He complains that Col Israel and Major Ephraim concert such schemes as they "think proper, and labour it with y<sup>e</sup> Governour, and he also with y<sup>e</sup> whole court," while "Col. Partridge schemes something different perhaps, which he will labour with ye Governour and House. I am privy to neither scheme, and perhaps y<sup>e</sup> first of my hearing thereof should be in y<sup>e</sup> House." He says "I don't think y<sup>e</sup> in my private capacity I am of much importance in such matters, but as a member of y<sup>e</sup> House it is possible I may be, for I have always spoke my mind in y<sup>e</sup> House and sometimes have been heard."<sup>1</sup> Major Israel Williams and Major Hawley were cousins, and as nothing further has come to light, it is presumed that neither party pressed the quarrel to the point of interference with the best interests of the service. In November Major Hawley was appointed on a committee in connection with Major Elijah Williams and Capt. Timothy Ruggles to disburse money in building and repairing forts on the frontier west of Connecticut River. In the above proposed list of officers Major Hawley claims one of the companies as his own, but there is no proof that he ever entered the field. Indeed in July of the succeeding year, after news came of the disaster at Hoosack, he gives two reasons for not volunteering. They were as follows:—"one is that the weather is so extream hot that it would instantly bring on y<sup>e</sup> disorder to which I am incident in hot weather," and the other was the "hurrying time in y<sup>e</sup> business of my profession."<sup>2</sup> From evidence thus far obtained, it seems that Major Hawley passed from the rank of chaplain at Louisburg in 1745, to that of major in 1754, without ever having taken part in anything more hazardous than an occasional scouting expedition, yet he took a prominent part in the organization of the Hampshire County Regiments, as will hereafter be noted.

**Activity Everywhere.** All the forts on the frontiers were garrisoned in 1755, and scouting parties were constantly on the move. Indians hovered about in every direction. Attacks were made upon fortified places in New

<sup>1</sup> Perry's Williamstown, pp. 267, 268.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., p. 268.

Hampshire, a number of people were killed, many captives taken, and much property destroyed. In some places it was impossible to harvest the crops for want of protection, and starvation was imminent.<sup>1</sup>

Service of Titus King.

Among the Northampton soldiers who served in Col. Williams' regiment, was Titus King. He was stationed with nine others under Corporal Zebulon Allen at Charlemont. In June, while guarding a company of men at work in a meadow, they were attacked by Indians. Capt. Moses Rice and Phinehas Arms, a garrison soldier, were killed, and Titus King and Asa Rice, grandson of Capt. Moses, were captured and carried to Canada. King remained a prisoner there three years.<sup>2</sup> On his return he petitioned the legislature for compensation for the loss of his gun and time. His gun cost 44s., for which he was allowed 40s. His three years' service as a prisoner in Canada disgusted him with military life, and he became a pedagogue. For twenty-eight years he taught school in Northampton, commencing in April, 1759. He was noted for his peculiarities and eccentricities, and many humorous anecdotes are related of him by those who attended the town schools. He taught the English school, and received about £19 per year.

Preparations for the Movement upon Crown Point.

Early in 1755, Gov. Shirley commenced preparations for the campaign against Crown Point. The expedition was popular among the western settlements, and requisitions for men were promptly filled. The people welcomed the opportunity for definite action; they were glad to be relieved of the strain of guarding against an Indian raid, of the hurried pursuit, and fruitless, unsatisfactory return. They welcomed a change from the monotony of garrison duty. It was believed also that an offensive movement would tend to prevent the merciless incursions of the Indians, all of whom would be required to defend the point assailed.

<sup>1</sup> For a detailed account of the casualties on the northern frontiers see Sheldon's History of Deerfield and Hoyt's Indian Wars.

<sup>2</sup> Hoyt says that King was "carried to France, thence to England, whence he at length returned to Northampton, his native place." King, however, does not mention his foreign trip in his petition to the legislature for the payment of his losses, as quoted in the Judd MSS.—See Hoyt, p. 208.

**A Regiment Enlisted.** Orders were issued in March for enlisting a regiment of five hundred men to consist of ten companies in Hampshire County, and Col. Israel Williams, Col. Partridge and Major Hawley were authorized to "settle the officers" of the regiment. Major Hawley was representative from this town that year, and by him Gov. Shirley sent all the necessary papers. These gentlemen held a meeting at South Hadley, where the matter was considered. Major Ephraim Williams was, at the suggestion of the Governor, appointed colonel of the regiment, and through the influence of Major Hawley, Major Seth Pomeroy was named lieutenant-colonel. In a letter to the other gentlemen of the commission, dated April 9, Major Hawley strongly urges that appointment. He says also that Capt. Nathaniel Dwight of Belchertown would "accept a captaincy if he could have it seasonably," and that he would have no difficulty in raising a company "speedily in his own parts." He received his commission and joined the army after the battle of Lake George. The custom had been years before first to enlist the men and then to allow them to choose their own officers, but that had long since been changed, and now it was the duty of the commissioned officers to recruit their own men. The ability and influence of captains in that direction were prime factors in their selection. All of them entered vigorously upon this work, and on the 30<sup>th</sup> of May orders were issued for the regiment of Col. Williams, as soon as the companies were "compleat," to march to the general rendezvous at Albany.<sup>1</sup>

**Lieut. Lyman's Company of Scouts.** Lieut. William Lyman of Northampton was promoted to a captaincy in June, and ordered to enlist a company of scouts to consist of not less than thirty men. None but able-bodied men were to be accepted, each scout was to cover not less than thirty days, and provisions for that length of time were to be carried. The captain and other commissioned officers were to "keep as exact journals" as possible of each of their marches. Capt. Lyman raised his company, but no record of any of his excursions has been found. When reinforcements were needed for the Crown Point

<sup>1</sup> Perry's Williamstown, pp. 200, 201, 202.

expedition, he recruited his company to the number of fifty-nine men, joined the army, and was attached to Col. Pomeroy's regiment, where he served from September 15<sup>th</sup> to December 10<sup>th</sup>, but was not in any engagement.

**Col. Seth Pomeroy  
and Capt. Elisha  
Hawley leave  
Journals of their  
Services.**

Sir William Johnson was given command of the army destined to operate against Crown Point, and the history of his failure to capture the position is familiar to every one. Only the fact that in the enterprise participated many citizens of Northampton, some of whom lost their lives there, and two of whom left journals containing many interesting details not elsewhere to be found, renders any extended allusion to it of special importance. Many extracts from the journal and correspondence of Col. Seth Pomeroy have from time to time found their way into print, but no part of the journal of Capt. Elisha Hawley, who was killed in the "bloody morning scout," has ever been published. It is believed that both of these documents are of sufficient interest to be given entire.

**Northampton Com-  
panies in the  
Army.**

About the last of June the army commanded by Gen. Johnson, to the number of nearly three thousand men, was concentrated at Albany. About one thousand more were added as reinforcements during the progress of the campaign. In one of the regiments raised in Western Massachusetts were several companies enlisted in Hampshire County, and three of them were commanded by Northampton men. One of them under Capt. Elisha Hawley, brother of Major Joseph Hawley, was composed mainly of Northampton men.<sup>1</sup> It was the custom for field-officers to command companies, and Lieut.-Col. Seth Pomeroy was at the head of another. After the promotion of Col. Pomeroy it was commanded by Capt. Simeon Davis of Greenwich. It contained few men from this town. The company of Capt. William Lyman has already been mentioned.<sup>2</sup> Other soldiers from Northampton seem to have been scattered through the regiment. The troops marched to Albany about the middle of June, and went into camp about two miles below that city.

<sup>1</sup> For Muster-Roll, see Appendix.

<sup>2</sup> Ib.

**Capt. Hawley's Com-  
pany.** The soldiers from Northampton and vicinity under Capt. Hawley set out for Albany the last week in June, and were in camp at Greenbush on the 29<sup>th</sup> of the month. They marched by way of Westfield,<sup>1</sup> and the entire army remained in camp, waiting for stores and ammunition till the middle of July. On the 17<sup>th</sup> the corps of Gen. Phinehas Lyman, who commanded the Massachusetts and Connecticut troops, was ordered to build a fort at the "Great Carrying Place" on the Hudson River near the site of Fort Nicholson. The details of this march will be found in the appended journals. General marching orders were not issued till the 2<sup>d</sup> of August, and about the middle of the month the army joined the advance guard at the new fort, which had been appropriately named Fort Lyman, but was afterwards changed to Fort Edward. On the 26<sup>th</sup>, the army went slowly forward and encamped at the lower extremity of Lake George, where it remained, collecting means of transportation through the lake, till attacked by Dieskau on the 8<sup>th</sup> of September.

**Baron Dieskau and  
his Army of French  
and Indians.** While Gen. Johnson was thus slowly advancing, Baron Dieskau with an army of French and Indians, about fifteen hundred strong, occupied Fort Ticonderoga. On the 6<sup>th</sup> and 7<sup>th</sup> of September he moved southward, landing at South Bay. His plan was to get in the rear of Johnson's army, attack Fort Edward, then barely completed, and held by Col. Blanchard with his New Hampshire regiment, and secure the great amount of supplies stored there. But his Indian allies refusing to participate in an assault upon a fort defended by artillery, he decided to attack Gen. Johnson's camp. Proceeding by the way of Wood Creek, he gained the rear of the English army, and counted upon a speedy victory. Gen. Johnson, anticipating the attack upon Fort Edward, though unaware that Dieskau had changed his

<sup>1</sup> The principal thoroughfare from the Connecticut Valley to Albany during the seven years' war was by way of Westfield, Blandford, Tyringham, North Sheffield (Great Barrington) and Kinderhook. It was the route that had been used as far back as 1693. There were several other routes, but they were not much in use. A new way was cut from Northampton to Albany, in 1758, but it was in an imperfect condition, impassable for wheels. There was another way from Deerfield through Charlemont to Fort Massachusetts, thence to the fort at Hoosack.

plan, sent a detachment of one thousand English and two hundred Indians to "catch the enemy in their retreat." The battle which followed has been many times described, and need not be enlarged upon, as many incidents relating to it will be found in the journal and correspondence of Col. Pomeroy.

Capt. Hawley's  
Journal.

Capt. Elisha Hawley, who lost his life in this engagement, was a son of the second Joseph Hawley, and an only brother of Major Joseph. He had seen much service during King George's War on the frontiers, and was at one time in command at Fort Massachusetts. It was at the latter post in 1748, when serving as lieutenant under Capt. Ephraim Williams, that he had been wounded. He was a capable, efficient and popular officer. In the last week of March, 1755, he received an order to enlist a company for the Crown Point expedition, and in a short time he had fifty-three Northampton men ready to march. With his company he went forward with the advanced guard to the building of Fort Lyman, was in the thick of the fight in the "bloody morning scout," where he was wounded Sept. 8<sup>th</sup>, and died on the 24<sup>th</sup>. His journal, commenced when he left home for the army, and continued till the day before his wound, giving an account of the services of the Northampton company, is appended in full:—<sup>1</sup>

June 26<sup>th</sup> 1755 set out from Northampton for Albany in order to proceed in the Expedition against Crownpoint, road to West<sup>d</sup> and Lodged there

fryday 27<sup>th</sup> road to Sheff<sup>d</sup> in Company with Cap<sup>t</sup> Porter and several others Lodged at Sheldons

28<sup>th</sup> Saturday road to Lodewicks between Kenderhook & Albany. A rainy afternoon

29<sup>th</sup> Sunday road to Greenbush found most of my Company who left Northampton before me Arrived, and station in Col Ranslier Barn—I myself with Ens<sup>a</sup> Smith got a birth in one End of House where we were very Courtyously Treated by one Lawson who lived there.

<sup>1</sup> The Journal of Capt. Hawley is copied from the original MSS. in the Hawley papers, which form part of the library of the late George Bancroft, now in the Lenox Library, New York City.

30<sup>th</sup> monday Continued at Col Ransliers with my Company

July 1<sup>st</sup> 2<sup>d</sup> 3<sup>d</sup> 4<sup>th</sup> nothing remarkable

5<sup>th</sup> Saturday Col: Williams and many other Officers of his Regiment arrived—L' Pomroy Came with Col: Williams, and quarterd with us at y<sup>e</sup> Col<sup>r</sup>

9<sup>th</sup> Wednesday Gen<sup>r</sup> Johnson Came to review the army the Regiments were all drawn up to receive him

10<sup>th</sup> Gov<sup>r</sup> Shirley Arrived at Albany in Order to go to Niagara

11<sup>th</sup> this day there was an Indians Scalp brought from Kinderhook to Albany

12<sup>th</sup> we were order'd to Carry our tents which I had the day before taken out of the Stores up the river as far as Col Skylers, where the were order'd to be set up

13<sup>th</sup> Sunday hear'd m<sup>r</sup> Becket preach in Connecticut Camp—but the Col<sup>r</sup> with many of the Companys were very busey in seting up our tents at the flats

14<sup>th</sup> this Day we were again reveiu'd<sup>1</sup> by Gov<sup>r</sup> Shirley at Greenbush

15<sup>th</sup> were Employ'd in Carrying batoos from the yard to the river

16<sup>th</sup> Wednesday rec<sup>d</sup> Orders to git our Stores ready and march with Gen<sup>r</sup> Lyman up to the Carrying place

17<sup>th</sup> moved up to Col: Skylers

18<sup>th</sup> 19<sup>th</sup> 20<sup>th</sup> & 21<sup>st</sup> were Employ'd in getting and Loading Stores

22<sup>nd</sup> Tuesday set out from the flats in Company with Col: Ruggles's Regiment and three Companys of Col: Williams's besides our own went to the half moon<sup>r</sup> about 12<sup>th</sup> miles above the City

23<sup>rd</sup> Set along up the river with our batoos the water this day that we past overwa<sup>2</sup> very bad a great part of the way falls

24<sup>th</sup> Set out again Up the river after we had unloaded our batoos to about 2 barrels weight; about 2 aClock came to still water where Gen<sup>r</sup> Lyman with his regiment was Encamp<sup>r</sup> we pitch our tents on the E<sup>r</sup> side the river a little above the mouth of Scattacook river

1 Reviewed. The word in the original is very indistinct.

2 So in original manuscript.

25<sup>th</sup> 26<sup>th</sup> 27<sup>th</sup> 28<sup>th</sup> Lay at Still water were employ'd in Clearing the road for y<sup>e</sup> Waggons to Come with our Stores

29<sup>th</sup> Set out for Surrotoga with our Stores that were brought up by wagg[ons] as well as with what we brought in the batoos: Arrived there a little before night and Encamp<sup>t</sup>

30<sup>th</sup> & 31<sup>th</sup> tarried at our Camps and were many of us Employ'd in repairing y<sup>e</sup> roads &c

Agust 1<sup>st</sup> struck our tents and moved up the river about four miles—Cros'd a bar in the river where the water fell about six or seven feet drew our batoos over this bar by ropes with much difficulty—Encamp<sup>t</sup> at y<sup>e</sup> foot of another pair of falls

2<sup>d</sup> unloaded our Battoes and drew 'em up the falls and Carry'd our stotes by in Waggons: L<sup>t</sup> Pomroy was this day very Ill.

3<sup>d</sup> Sunday Loaded our batoos again and set out for the Carrying Place where we arrived alittle before night—L<sup>t</sup> Pomroy was this day quite Sick, we Carry'd him in the batoos

4<sup>th</sup> this day Ens<sup>a</sup> Smith was taken very Sick with a bloody flux which prevails very much in the army—L<sup>t</sup> Pomroy is still very sick

5<sup>th</sup> Sent out Several Scouts

6<sup>th</sup> the Scouts sent yesterday return'd—this day one of our army was whip'd 100 stripes for the most vile Cursing & Swareing

7<sup>th</sup> we were very busy in geting timber & bark for a storehouse & fort—Ens<sup>a</sup> Smith very sick L<sup>t</sup> Pomroy better

8<sup>th</sup> still busied in getting timber & framing it

9<sup>th</sup> 10<sup>th</sup> 11<sup>th</sup> 12<sup>th</sup> 13<sup>th</sup> Continued at y<sup>e</sup> Carrying place were employ'd about y<sup>e</sup> building as before

thursday 14<sup>th</sup> Gen<sup>l</sup> Johnson Came to us with about 40 Indians. Col: Williams Companys that were behind, Col: Titcomb & Col: Guttriges Regiments, and some of the Rhode Islanders

16<sup>th</sup> 15<sup>th</sup> Nothing remarkable

17<sup>th</sup> Sunday this day we were Join'd by the remainder of the R. Islanders and the New Yorkers, with a large number of Waggons loaded with Stores

18<sup>th</sup> this day one Sam<sup>ll</sup> Stebbins of middleton was drowed in y<sup>e</sup> river against y<sup>e</sup> Camp—'twas Supposed he had a fit by some tho 'tis not Certain what was the occation of his drowning

19<sup>th</sup> this day we were employ'd in Grinding axs Court martials &c Nothing very remarkable

20<sup>th</sup> began to Intrench about y<sup>e</sup> Fort by Cap<sup>t</sup> Ayres direction

21<sup>th</sup> Continued the Intrenchment. a scout arrived from Crownpoint

22<sup>nd</sup> Continued y<sup>e</sup> work at y<sup>e</sup> trench &c

23<sup>rd</sup> Saturday the women who have followed us every time the army came together were sent away from the army by Order of Council

24<sup>th</sup> Sunday I went to Clear the road towards Lake S<sup>t</sup> Sacrament with about 400 men—m' Williams preach'd at y<sup>e</sup> camp

25<sup>th</sup> work'd again at y<sup>e</sup> road &c

26<sup>th</sup> the Gen<sup>ll</sup> with Col: Ruggles, Col: Williams's & Col: Gutteridges Reg<sup>m't</sup> and some of the Yorkers and Rhode Islanders set out for Lake S<sup>t</sup> Sacrament we had about 150 waggons with us and 5 field peices went about 4 miles and Lodged

27<sup>th</sup> Continued our march went about 6 miles this day

28 Set out again for the Lake where we arrived about 4 O'Clock—from the foot at Lydias to the Lake a fine road

29<sup>th</sup> spent the day in Clearing y<sup>e</sup> Ground about y<sup>e</sup> end of the Lake &

30<sup>th</sup> this day we were join'd by about 160 Indians—fir'd y<sup>e</sup> Cannon at y<sup>e</sup> Coming were Employ'd as Yesterday

31<sup>st</sup> Attended publick worship &c

Sep<sup>t</sup> 1<sup>st</sup> this morning about 50 men deserted because they were refused their back Allowance of Rum &c L<sup>t</sup> Nicson of Col: Ruggles's Regiment went after 'em about 4 or five miles and brought 'em all back to the Camp

2<sup>d</sup> had news by the Indians that the French had not secured the Carrying place at y<sup>e</sup> N. end the Lake

3<sup>d</sup> Wednesday Gen<sup>t</sup> Lyman Came up to us with his own & Col: Titcomb's Regiment

4<sup>th</sup> 5<sup>th</sup> 6<sup>th</sup> nothing remarkable, stores were Continually Coming in Waggons &c

7<sup>th</sup> Sunday, Last night we had a Gen<sup>l</sup>l Alarm in y<sup>e</sup> Camp  
occation by the Cent<sup>o</sup> hearing something

[After this the journal contains a number of blank leaves  
followed by the following :— ]

		D <sup>r</sup>
July 22 <sup>d</sup>	To 24 days work in the battoes . . . . .	24
23	To 24 more ditto . . . . .	24
24	To 24 ditto . . . . .	24
27	To 7 days work @ y <sup>e</sup> roads . . . . .	7
28	To 5 d <sup>o</sup> . . . . .	5
29	To 24 days work in batoos . . . . .	24
30	To 5 days work at y <sup>e</sup> roads . . . . .	5
31	To 14 ditto . . . . .	14
Aug <sup>st</sup> 1 <sup>st</sup>	to 30 days work in Batooes . . . . .	30
2 <sup>d</sup>	to 10 days work in Batoos . . . . .	10
3 <sup>d</sup>	to 24 days work in Batoos . . . . .	24
	To 8 days works at y <sup>e</sup> roads . . . . .	10
5 <sup>th</sup>	To 3 days work at getting bark . . . . .	3
7 <sup>th</sup>	To 15 days work at getting bark . . . . .	15
8 <sup>th</sup>	To 8 days work at getting timber . . . . .	8
9 <sup>th</sup>	To 3 days work at fraiming . . . . .	3
10 <sup>th</sup>	To 16 days work at y <sup>e</sup> timber . . . . .	16
11 <sup>th</sup>	To 12 days work at gitting timber . . . . .	12
14 <sup>th</sup>	To 6 days work at y <sup>e</sup> road . . . . .	6
15 <sup>th</sup>	to three days d <sup>o</sup> . . . . .	3
17 <sup>th</sup>	to 4 days work about y <sup>e</sup> Hospital . . . . .	4
18 <sup>th</sup>	to 6 days works at the Hospital . . . . .	6
24 <sup>th</sup>	10 days work at y <sup>e</sup> road . . . . .	10
25 <sup>th</sup>	to 12 ditto . . . . .	12
28 <sup>th</sup>	to 10 ditto . . . . .	10
29 <sup>th</sup> & 30	10 ditto . . . . .	10

[Then follows on the last page the following memoranda :— ]

Aug<sup>st</sup> 17<sup>th</sup> 1755

Memorandum d<sup>d</sup> Serj<sup>t</sup> Bardwell 4 dollars to purchase  
Stores at Albany

The weight of the beef & tallow we had of Gen<sup>l</sup> Lyman  
529<sup>lb</sup>.

Capt. Hawley's Last  
Letter.

Capt. Hawley was shot through the left breast; the ball was cut out near the shoulder-blade, having pierced the left lobe of the lungs. For nearly three weeks he lingered, hovering between life and death; the surgeon at one time expressed some slight hope of his recovery. His last moments before the fatal march were occupied in writing to his brother, and this letter full of brotherly affection is given below. Major Hawley was too ill to undertake a journey to the camp when he learned the sorrowful tidings. That sad duty devolved upon his brother-in-law, Major Samuel Clarke, who cheered and soothed the last few days of the wounded and dying man.

"Lake St. Sacrament (now called Lake George)  
8<sup>th</sup> Sept. 1755.

"I rec'd your letter dated at Springfield the 29<sup>th</sup> of August wherein you manifest a great concern for us and tell me that if you should hear from us that we were likely to proceed to effect, you are resolved, Providence permitting, to come to us. Sr. I suppose 'tis the fixed determination of the chief officers of the army, to proceed to Crown point as soon as we are joined by the recruits that we hear are raised, 'tis apprehended the consequences of our returning without going thro' with what was projected when we set out would be so fatal that I believe we shall be ordered to proceed altho' our Numbers should not be equal to the Numbers that we are informed are at Crown point—but with respect to your Coming I have but little to say. I should be very glad to have your company, but I am sensible that you are needed at home on many accounts. Shall leave the matter to your prudence. Should be very glad Lt. Lyman would come and join us and Capt. Dwight, but I fear they will on some account or other excuse themselves. While I am writing one of our Scouts who has just come in informs that the day before yesterday they discovered a little west of the drowned land the tracks of a very large body of French and Indians, who were just gone—they say they made as great signs as our army and they suppose intend to attack us or the fort at Lydias's but perhaps their design may be only to attack some of our wagons as they come up with stores. We have sent again to make further discovery and I hope they may be disappointed in their design.

"Sr. we have now another messenger arrived who informs that he was on the road to Lydias's from this place in company with 8 wagons, which were going from hence for Loads (it seems they went from us without leave) he says the wagons before him were fired upon by y<sup>e</sup> Enemy—he heard a great outcry and fled, and is now got to us. I am this minute a going out in Company with five hundred men to see if we can Intercept 'em in their retreat, or find their canoes in the drowned Land, and therefore must conclude this letter.

"from y<sup>r</sup> loving and only Brother

ELISHA HAWLEY."

## CHAPTER XX.

### FOURTH FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR.

Col. Pomeroy's  
Journal.

THE journal of the Crown Point expedition by Col. Seth Pomeroy, which is much more full than that of Capt. Hawley, follows:—

Northampton, July 1, 1755.

Tuesday, set out from home to the Expedition to Crown Point. Arrived at Westfield, lodged at Clapp's Tuesday and Wednesday night.

Thursday, set off for Stockbridge, arrived there at dusk, next day afternoon set out for Cantuhook lodged there.

Saturday morning set off for Albany, arrived there about noon or twelve o'clock.

Sabbath morning, July 6<sup>th</sup>, 1755. Went to Mr. Ogelbee's church, both fore and afternoon, preached an excellent sermon, text from Psalms to prove a Divine Providence. Today it rained forenoon.

Monday, 7<sup>th</sup>. Showery at night. Gen. Johnson came to Albany. I supped with him that night at Landlord Luttridge's. Stayed with him till about 11 of the clock, was well pleased with his company.

Tuesday, the 8<sup>th</sup>. The field officers waited upon General Johnson.

Wednesday, 9<sup>th</sup>. The army that encamped two miles below Albany the General went down to view, being mustered in regimental order and was pleased with their appearance.

Thursday, 10<sup>th</sup>. Governor Shirley came to town with several officers and two companies of soldiers for his army. At his arrival the cannon in the fort was discharged, the field officers that were in town waited upon the Governor and drank a glass of wine with him.

Friday, 11<sup>th</sup>. Governor Shirley invited General Johnson and the field officers of the Crown Point expedition to dine with him (viz. the colonels). We accordingly waited upon him and were well entertained.

Saturday, the 12<sup>th</sup>. I dined with Maj. General Lyman at Col. Rensalers; this was a showery day and it hath been showery every day this week.

Sabbath day, 13<sup>th</sup>. I attended public worship at Mr. Oglebee's Church, both fore and afternoon. In the forenoon Governor Shirley and Gen. Johnson were there, the sermon was well adapted to the occasion.

Monday, 14<sup>th</sup>. A very hot day, the army mustered down at the camp the Generals to view them, in the afternoon up at the flats where part of the army lay they were mustered for the General to view.

Tuesday, 15<sup>th</sup>. Dry and hot no news.

Wednesday, 16<sup>th</sup>. The hottest of weather.

Thursday, 17<sup>th</sup>. Dined with General Johnson, at about 7 of the clock at night left Albany to go forward to Crown Point. Arrived at Col. Seyton's lodged there that night at the flats so called.

Friday, 18<sup>th</sup>. Staid at Col. Seyton's that day, well entertained but the hottest of weather.

Saturday, 19<sup>th</sup>. Major General Lyman went off from Col. Seyton's at the Flats with his regiment with about 20 of the Dutch waggons took part of the stores in the afternoon, about 4 of the clock it rained.

Sabbath day, 20<sup>th</sup>. Somewhat cloudy in the forenoon — no rain — Mr. Page preached both forenoon and after.

Monday, 21. A fair morning still staid at the Flats.

Tuesday, 22. Rain in the forenoon, afternoon Col. Ruggles and our Battoes went off with part of the stores.

Wednesday, 23. All the forenoon I loaded waggons with our stores. Set out myself about 12 of the clock from Col. Seyton's at the flats, arrived at the upper end of the Half Moon lodged in the tent.

Thursday, the 24. I set out with a guard of 100 men to guard the wagons up to Stillwater. Arrived there at 12 of the clock, dined with Maj. Gen. Lyman.

Friday, 25<sup>th</sup>. This day a steady rain so we kept pretty close in our tents.

Saturday, 26<sup>th</sup>. A fair day, we are still at Stillwater and employed getting up stores.

Sabbath day, 27. A fair day, attended public worship both fore and after noon. Mr. Williams preached. Last Friday died an Indian soldier who enlisted from Natick, is the first one I have heard of who has died since we arrived at Albany.

Monday, 28. This is a fair day. A Court Martial was held on 5 deserters in General Lyman's regiment, there not being time to finish it adjourned over to Wednesday at Saratoga.

Tuesday, 29. This day Gen. Lyman gave orders for all our army (now at Stillwater) to remove up to Saratoga all our stores were put into the battoes and we all Marched off between 11 and 12 of the clock with our 2 field brass pieces a number of men to guard on each side of the river. We all came up, viz : Gen. Lyman's Col. Ruggles regiment and 4 of Col. William's companies. Arrived at Saratoga about 5 in the afternoon.

Wednesday, 30. A very rainy night last night and this morning, we are now encamped at Saratoga. Our regiments today are being reviewed, and clearing our camps and up the road towards the carrying place, the afternoon fair weather.

Thursday, 31. A fair day. 300 men sent up towards the carrying place to mend the roads, and about 50 down the road towards Stillwater to complete the bridges that were defective that way which are all finished. A number to the fort at Saratoga to search for cannon balls, and they dug up about 1100 shot and brought them to our camp which was above a mile above the old fort. Saratoga is a rich fertile soil, full of feed, though well stocked with cattle and horses, yet loaded with grass more than the cattle can eat.

Friday, Aug. 1, 1755. Set out this day from Saratoga with all our stores loaded in the Battoes, came to the first fall about 11 of the clock and at about 5 in the afternoon got all our battoes up with the stores which were about 200 and a very great fatigue we had ; then we went on to the next fall, there we encamped at the bottom of the large fall.

Saturday, 2. This morning a detachment of 200 men went forward to mend the roads and about 60 back to mend some that were not finished; before the remainder of the army landed the battoes and took them up the falls, all the battoes got up that carrying place which is 4 or 5 miles above Saratoga.

Sabbath 3<sup>rd</sup>, 1755. Our army set out from that landing above these falls at half an hour after 10 of the clock and came to Fort Nicholson about 6 at night, with our battoes and the stores but the two field pieces that we brought all that way with us were not able to arrive there that day the way not being all repaired.

Monday, 4<sup>th</sup>, at Fort Nicholson. A very rainy night last night and this morning till noon. Our stores received considerable damage in landing so late last night, but took good care of them in the morning; this is a pleasant well situated place here at the carrying or Fort Nicholson.

Tuesday, 5<sup>th</sup>. A fair pleasant day. A scout of 30 men sent to Wood Creek and another scout of 10 men sent to Lake St. Sacrament.

Wednesday, 6<sup>th</sup>. A fair day. The scout sent out yesterday returned today bring no news of the enemy; there is a considerable number of our army now that are sick. I myself have been ill these two days but not confined. I hope it will wear off. We have made a thorough search in our bread cask, and find much damage in the bread, the cask being poorly made. A soldier one Bickenstaff was whipt for profane swearing, a sodomitical attempt 100 lashes and drummed out of the army with a rope about his neck, and ordered to be sent to a convenient place there to be kept and placed till the Crown Point expedition was over.

Thursday, Aug. 7<sup>th</sup>. A fair day, orders given to build two store houses—hands sent to cut and hew timber, peal bark and a considerable number of sticks of hewn timber was drawn by men with a rope. A scout of men came in today who had discovered the tracks of about 20 Indians about a mile to the East, travelling to the South.

Friday, 8<sup>th</sup>. We are now a great number of hands bringing timber, pealing bark and framing store houses. A scout of about 30 men sent to the drowned lands to see what discovery can be made that way.

Saturday, 9<sup>th</sup>. A fair day. Many hands at labor, cutting timber and drawing it for our fort. This day I made me a bedstead and lodged in it at night; wrote a letter home in the evening which was my 5<sup>th</sup>.

Sabbath day, August 10, 1755. A fair day. Mr. Williams preached both fore and afternoon and a number of hands at work at the fort. Two men were sent this morning to Albany. A scout this day who came in who went last Friday for the drowned lands, but did not [reach] their designed place. Made but little discovery of the enemy.

Monday, 11. A fair day. Several scouts came in, made no discovery, a small number of men went down the river fishing and hunting, and brought in one deer, and about 30 large fish, some as big as a cod and much the same sort of flesh both in looks and taste.

Tuesday, 12. A fair day. About 300 men sent towards Fort Ann to repair the roads. A considerable number of our army not well, the common illness that attends armies, but none died. Many have recovered that have been sick.

Wednesday, 13 Aug. A fair hot day and we finished the timber work of our store house which is in the form of an L, 70 feet one way and 40 the other, 150 feet wide at the north end of it. A guard house 30 feet in length 15 in breadth with a mount upon the north end of it, the roofs of the whole sheds inwards; upon the outside about 12 feet high, in two stories are loop holes to fire out of. A mount at the west corner of the river bank enclosed from the west end of the store house to the mount with stockades, from the northwardly end straight to the bank of the river with the same, and on the river bank to the aforesaid mount at the west end, so enclosed about half an acre of land.

Thursday, 14. A fair day. This day General Johnson came to the carrying place at the entrance to our camp. We fired our two field pieces, and aided him into the fort by an interval of the army.

Friday, 15. The forenoon fair, the afternoon showery. A council sat in the forenoon and agreed to send for 400 men to New York, Connecticut 500 and Massachusetts 500; all of which we have ordered to raise the above said number of men in case they are needed.

Saturday, 16. A cloudy day. A post was this day sent

to the several governments with orders to send men to our relief. I sent letters by them to my sons at New Haven and to my wife at home.

Sabbath day, 17<sup>th</sup>, 1755. A fair day. So much business this forenoon that no sermon. Met at 11 o'clock, sang and publicly prayed. Orders given for a meeting 5 o'clock in the afternoon. Just after we met and began prayers news came that the waggons were attacked by 300 Indians. I was immediately ordered with about 400 men to march directly in the utmost haste to their relief, but after going about 4 miles down the road got to the rear of all the waggons and meeting Col. Cockraft he informed me it was a false alarm, so we had to march back doing no service.

Monday, 18<sup>th</sup>, 1755. A fair day. A scout went off for Fort Massachusetts. I sent a letter by one Chapin to my wife. A man in swimming its thought was taken with the cramp or a fit, sunk down though a great number of people were near, yet no one went in soon enough to get him out alive; one depended on another and some were afraid to go in so that the poor man perished. The fourth man we have lost and the first by accident.

Tuesday, 19. A fair day. A council sat this day at Head Quarters, and concluded that 1900 of our army as soon as we should have intelligence, should march forward to clear the road to the next water and build store houses and a fort, and also voted that all the women should be sent out of the camp the first opportunity of conveyance and not return to it again.

Wednesday, 20<sup>th</sup>. A fair day. Capt. Ayers with one of his wild schemes set to work 200 or 300 men to dig a trench round our store house with a design to secure the store house, but if I was to judge by the present appearance of things, an ill constructed piece of fortification.

Thursday, 21 Aug. A rainy morning and fair afterwards in the afternoon. 4 Indians came that General Johnson sent to Canada before he left home, the news if any comes afterwards. Capt. Parson the head of the scout that went 5 days ago came in this day, but could find no road to the broadway, which was his business to look out, it being all mountainous so not to be cast with cannon or waggons.

Friday, 22. This a fair day. A council sat at 3 of the clock in the afternoon to consider some things of importance.

Saturday, 23. The Council that sat yesterday adjourned over to 9 of the clock this day, and voted to send to the several Governments for a reinforcement, having news from 4 Indians who came from Canada that they had made a party much superior to our own. This a fair hot day.

Sabbath day, 24<sup>th</sup>. Sent a letter by Major Foot to my son Seth at New Haven. Sent my 7<sup>th</sup> to my wife by a scout across to Fort Massachusetts, and one to Major Hawley and to Elisha Pomeroy. A thunder shower today. Mr. Williams fore and afternoon.

Monday, 25. A fair day; this day the express went off that was to have gone yesterday.

Tuesday, 26. Orders given to march with about 2000 men, and a number of waggons to carry cannon and stores. We set off about 4 of the clock in the afternoon, 6 or 8 cannon fired at our departure. We proceeded a little above the falls which were about four miles. There encamped with our army under hemlock and bush shelters.

Wednesday, 27<sup>th</sup>. A fair morning. We set out with our army  $\frac{1}{2}$  an hour after 7 o'clock in the morning went on about 4 or 5 miles then stopped, eat pieces of ham broken bread and cheese, drank some fresh lemon punch and the best of wine with General Johnson and some of the field officers, we staid about an hour and then marched on slow for the road was not clear, but a large number of hands clearing before the army.

Thursday, 28. Our army encamped at a good brook about half way from the carrying place to the lake; a small party of Indians went off to hunt a little above last night; they killed and brought in 3 deer; they gave me a thigh of one on which I supped and breakfasted next morning with a good appetite. Set out about 8 of the clock with our army having early sent about 400 men to cut our way; about noon stopped and dined with General Johnson by a small brook under a tree; eat a good dinner of cold boiled and roast venison, drank good fresh lemon punch and wine, we came to the Lake about 4 of the clock.

Friday, 29<sup>th</sup>. A fair cold day, strong wind at north.

This day clearing the land about our camp, our waggons sent back for loading, some addition of Gen. Johnson's Indians.

Saturday, 30. A fair day, wind strong at north pretty cold, about noon there came in about 180 of Gen. Johnson's Indians, we made an interval with our army that was off duty—The Indians fired off their guns at the entrance to our camp, and with our cannon we fired two rounds. We have now about 280 Indians with us, they seem to be engaged in our interest but time only will prove their sincerity, and show whether they will fight for us or not.

Sabbath day, Aug. 31, 1755. A fair day. In the forenoon Mr. Williams preached a sermon to Indians by Interpreters. In the afternoon one to the English in the camp, at 5 of the clock, a Mr. Newell, a young gentleman in the Rhode Island Government a chaplain of Capt. Babcock's preached a very good sermon from Christ's Sermon on the Mount, "Love your Enemies." At night came the waggons loaded with stores and artillery. This day at the carrying place 4 or 5 men being out together 2 or 3 miles from the fort, 2 of the men together, one sitting on a log the others standing by a tree, the Indians fired at those 2 men and killed one on the spot. An Indian fellow belonging to Connecticut and the other an English man—one Dibble was wounded and taken; the other 2 or 3 men made their escape they being a little distance.

Monday, Sept. 1, 1755. A fair day. Early in the morning a great uneasiness tending to mutiny in our army. In Capt. Jones company 30 or upwards marched off with their packs on their backs and guns clubbed. Others threatening to go, we mustered 30 odd men and sent after the runaways and they brought them back about 1 or 2 of the clock in the afternoon. At night the army seemed more composed. Today went, sent out a scout of 30 English and 4 or 5 Indians. The Indians Scout daily both on the Lake and on the land.

Tuesday, 2<sup>nd</sup>. The scout is returned that went yesterday, but made no discovery; a number of waggons came this day loaded with stores, &c. This is a fair pleasant day, pretty hot.

Wednesday, 3<sup>rd</sup>, 1755. A fair day. A number of wag-

gons came this day. Maj. Gen. Lyman with his regiment and Col. Titcomb with part of his came and about 10 Indians. The whole number of Indians now here is about 300. Today we have the sorrowful news of 4 men dying at the carrying Tuesday and Wednesday nights, who were the first men we have had die there with sickness, and they had been there at Fort Nicholson about a month, but many are now sick at the carrying place.

Thursday, 4. Last night a shower beginning about 12 of the clock held till the day, followed a fair day. Sent a letter to my wife this day which was the 8<sup>th</sup> and one to Brother Deacon Pomeroy and received one this day from Charles Phelps. I am field officer this day, the first turn I have had since I came to Fort George, went the grand rounds at 11 of the clock at night. Came back about 12.

Friday, 5<sup>th</sup>, 1755. This a cold day, something cloudy; sent out a scout of about 50 white and about 4 or 5 Indians. Old Hendrick was one of the Indians. I eat a dinner of venison and squash this day which seemed to taste like our own county food.

Saturday, 6<sup>th</sup>. The scout sent out yesterday came in to-day and discovered nothing. Today somewhat cloudy but no rain. An alarm about 12 of the clock last night throughout the whole army but it proved a false alarm; we have an account of 8 persons that have died down at the carrying place this week. which is double the number that have since we came to Albany. They were all strangers to me.

Sabbath day, 7. A fair day but small showers. About 200 waggons came this day loaded chiefly with battoes. I attended public worship this day. News at night of a large body of men travelling south up or near the Wood Creek.

Monday, Sept. 8. Upon the account of the large body of men that were tracked, the account came in last night—we this morning sent out about 1200 men, near 200 of them our Indians went down the road towards the carrying place and had got about 3 miles, when they were ambushed and fired upon by the French and Indians. A number of our men who were in the van returned the fire and fought bravely, but many of our men in the rear fled, the others being overmatched were obliged to fight upon a retreat and a

very handsome retreat they made, by continuing their fire and then retreating a little, and then rise and give them a brisk fire and so continued till they came within about  $\frac{1}{4}$  of a mile from our camp—then was the last fire our men gave our enemies, which killed great numbers of them; they were seen to drop as pigeons that put the enemy to a little stop—they very soon drove on with undaunted courage down to our camp, the regulars came rank and file about 6 abreast so reached near 20 rods length in close order; the Canadians and Indians took the left wing helter skelter down along towards the camp; they had the advantage of the ground—passing over hollow and rising a knoll within gun shot, then took trees and logs and places to hide themselves—we made the best shift we could for batteries to get behind but had but few minutes to do it in; as soon as they all came within shot of the regulars rank and file they came towards that part of the camp, where we had drawn up 3 or 4 field pieces, the others towards the west part of the camp, there I placed myself and part of Col. Ruggles and of our regiment along together—the fire began between 11 and 12 of the clock and continued till near five in the afternoon—the most violent fire perhaps that ever was heard of in this country in any battle. Then we beat them off the ground—we took the French General wounded, and near 30 of his men, a considerable number dead on the ground, and by the account of the General and others we took—the greater part of his officers killed and his army broken to pieces—the number they lost we have no certain account but by what we found and what the prisoners tell us their loss is not less than 4 or 500 men.

Tuesday, Sept. 9. This a fair hot day. We are about the melancholy work of burying our dead that were killed here in the camp yesterday; their number is —— and we are making some sort of a fortification or battlement to stand behind to fight in case the enemy should attack us again which we daily expect.

Wednesday, 10<sup>th</sup>. A fair day and hot. I went out today with the command of about 400 men to bury the dead bodies of those slain in battle the 8<sup>th</sup> inst. We spent the day in a melancholy piece of business and put into the ground 136 bodies of men, we put up and brought in a great

quantity of the French stores, guns, blankets, hatchets, &c, of provisions 2 or 3 waggon loads ; brought in at night the names of the dead. I have not time nor room to mention them but my brother Lt. Daniel Pomeroy was one of the brave, heroic number that fell in that memorable battle which will never be forgot. Sent an express to Col. W<sup>m</sup> Hatfield by Capt. Fellows who went away from the camp about 12 o'clock this day.

Thursday, 11<sup>th</sup>, 1755. A number more sent out to pick up what they could find left on the battle and found the bodies of I think about 4 of our men, a number of the enemy that were hid and buried and a great quantity of stores the enemy left in their flight.

Friday, 12<sup>th</sup>. Fine hot weather but a melancholy place, so many of our near friends taken away and their places left vacant. We are more and more convinced that our enemies have met with a great slaughter by picking up their things that in their hase they ran off and left. Three companies of Provincial forces being new recruits came in. An express was sent today by Capt. Wyman.

Saturday, 13<sup>th</sup>. Still fine warm weather ; upon the examination of the General and other prisoners we find out their designs who came with the full expectation to cut us all off, but to their great surprise their well laid schemes were turned upon their own heads.

Sabbath day, 14<sup>th</sup>, Sept. 1755. Mr. Williams preached both fore and afternoon and a melancholy time it was to find so many of our brave men missing, but when considered how we were delivered we might well sing of mercy and of judgment. A number of waggons came this day also 22 cattle sent by the provinces.

Monday. Hot and showery ; a part of the waggons went down for stores today, and the French prisoners that could be conveyed on waggons carried off for Albany.

Tuesday, 16<sup>th</sup>. Some waggons did not start till this morning, then they went off, and the French General in a horse litter. Cold last night but today fair and pleasant. We have got our whole camp fortified with some battlements to stand behind to fight with small arms—our cannon all mounted and placed ready for firing.

Wednesday, 17<sup>th</sup>, 1755. Today it was ordered that Lt.-

Col. Gilbert act as Col. in the late Col. Ephraim Williams regiment, and Capt. Gadfire act as Major in the same regiment. Today a very cold rain—the soldiers are very much pinched, having lost their clothes in the late battle.

Thursday, 18<sup>th</sup>, Sept. A fair day. Sent Seargent Bardwell with 3 other men, with letters to Col. Williams, Hatfield, a number of waggons came this day to bring stores of which we were most out.

Friday, 19. A fair day. A considerable number of soldiers in our regimont set out for home, being in an ill state of health and some wounded, so unfit for service here. The waggons that went yesterday came back today.

Saturday, Sept. 20. Fair and pleasant. Sam'l Clarke from Northampton with letters from my friends at home, one from my wife, which I received with joy though it found me in an ill state of health by reason of a severe cold which is now common in the camp.

Sabbath day, 21. Cloudy and some rain, we had preaching in the forenoon, in the afternoon none by reason of the rain; the main body of the Indians went off a few days after the battle of the 8<sup>th</sup> inst. with a quantity of plunder they had picked up after the fight, being much more forward for that than to fight. They carried off no doubt many of our goods, and things left by our people in the battle and not suffered themselves to be searched before they went off. Today 4 went away which I think is the last and if they had never come among us it had been much better for us I think if they had never joined us.

Monday, 22<sup>nd</sup>. Moderate weather for the season, but showery. I have been and still am in an ill state by reason of a great cold but not confined and able to walk about. Recruits and stores are daily joining us.

Tuesday, 23, 1755. Very ill with a bad cold. Last night and today cloudy and misty, not much rain. A great number of waggons and 2 or 3 companies came in today. We had news at night by a scout we sent out of an army of men supposed to be designed for this camp or Fort Edward, at the great carrying place.

Wednesday, 24. A fair day. Col. Ruggles with his regiment moved down to Fort Edward to take the command there. Tonight came in Capt. Rogers with 2 men who

went with him 10 days ago to view Crown Point; they were within fair sight of Crown Point for 2 days and saw the eminence upon the west side where the French were at work making trenches round where we intended to build some works. At 7 of the clock at night Capt. Hawley died of the wound he received in the memorable battle Sept. 8. Eleazar Harmon and Elijah King went away this day. Sent a letter to my wife and one to Seth.

Thursday, 25<sup>th</sup> Sept. This morning I got a coffin made for Capt. Hawley and at 11 of the clock in the forenoon attended his funeral, appointed four bearers, viz: Capt. House, Capt. Burt, Capt. Doolittle and Capt. Burk. Mr. Williams made a prayer, the funeral was attended with decency and order. Waggon stores new recruits &c flocking in upon us. Showery day.

Friday, 26<sup>th</sup>. Received a letter from Col. Israel Williams, dated Sept. Major Samuel Clark went off today a little after noon. Sent letters to Col. Williams and one to Major Hawley. Some showers today. A number of waggons came in.

Saturday, 27. Last night a very cold night and a white frost this morning but a pleasant day. A council of war sat today to consider of things of importance and not being able to finish adjourned to some future time, the day not mentioned. Capt. Rogers with 2 others went off this evening to Ticonderoga.

Sabbath day, 28. A cold night last night. Many people were poorly by reason of colds which are very much brought upon them by reason of the cold and their sufferings from want of clothing, having lost their blankets and some of their clothes in the battle of the 8<sup>th</sup> Inst. Mr. Williams preached today forenoon and afternoon. In the afternoon exercise Elisha Pomeroy came to our camp.

Monday, 29<sup>th</sup>. A scout of 20 men being out today found an Indian about 4 miles off and his thigh broken and brought him in at night, he was examined; he was one of the Penobscot Tribe, the 2<sup>nd</sup> man in that tribe who was at the treaty last summer at the Eastward country. The fellow had his thigh broken in the battle of the 8<sup>th</sup> Sept. and had lived ever since in the woods, though it is pretty certain he had some company within that time which was 21

days and we understood by him that there were a number to come the next day to carry him off.

Tuesday, 30, 1755. A windy cloudy day, some showers. Capt. Rogers with 4 men who went up the lake last Saturday night in order to view Ticonderoga returned. They took a good view of that place and found in their judgments to be as many if not more encamped there than we have in this place and they were building a fort. They saw a battoe with ten men in it put off and come up the Lake; they hastened back and placed themselves in a narrow place on a point of land to wait their return; the battoe then went up to an island, the men landed and stayed a little while and then came back and coming by Capt. Rogers and his 4 men within gun shot they fired upon the battoe with 9 Indians and one Frenchman in it, and killed 2 at the first shot and so they continued firing till they had shot four or five times apiece, and killed or so disabled six of them, that they were not able to paddle the battoe and only four could work—they put in their canoe and jumped into it pursued them till they had almost caught up to them, and came so near the French army that they sent out a number of their battoes after them, so our people were obliged to turn and make the best of their way off, but they all arrived safe without any harm from the enemy, and a bold adventure it was.

Wednesday, Oct. 1. This a fair day; began today to build a fort for cannon and one quarter of our army was appointed to work at it. A man went out a little beyond the fort, lit on a Frenchman deserted from the army at Ticonderoga and gave an account of 400 men at that place which seems to contradict Capt. Rogers account, but Capt. Rogers was there 2 or 3 days after, who gave an account of an army not less than our army which must have come there after the Frenchman had left that place, so that it is likely they went and brought cannon for Rogers saw a battery there with cannon planted; the deserter said there was none when he came away so it is proveable they both spoke true.

Thursday, Oct. 2, 1755. A fair pleasant warm day. Between 5 and 600 men at work at the fort. Ensign Joseph Sheldon with 8 of Capt. Hitchcock's company came today

that had been down at the Flats all the time. About 14 sick when they left.

Friday, 3. A warm pleasant day. Two men buried to-day who belonged to Col. Titcomb's regiment. There are many now in camp who are sick. Gen. Johnson is much amiss with a violent pain in his head.

Saturday, 4<sup>th</sup>. A pleasant morning but the sky soon covered with clouds and cold N. wind, some rain. Mr. Williams went down to Fort Head in the afternoon. Col. Gilbert went with him and so fled to the horns of the altar, and left his flag here standing, which he set so much by and one night some person took it away, and set it up where it ought to be at Col. Williams' tent. Gilbert in the morning brought it back and said he had rather they had taken his head off.

Sabbath day, 5<sup>th</sup> Oct. This a cloudy day. Mr. Emerson, chaplain for the New Hampshire regiment preached and prayed with us that night and Monday morning to very good acceptance. Sergeant Bardwell came today and brought some good tidings from the County of Hampshire.

Monday, 6<sup>th</sup>. A fair weather day. Our fort goes on well. Col. Blanchard, Col. Willard, Mr. Emerson and the whole of that regiment (except Capt. Symes and Capt. Rogers who are to stay here at the fort all the winter with each of them a company of volunteers that they think they can raise for that purpose) are gone home.

Tuesday, 7<sup>th</sup>. A fair day. Major Hore came tonight from Boston his flag much lowered from what it was when he went away, wholly losing his journey and his raised expectations of so many commissions for field officers in Col. Ruggles regiment being all disappointed. The famous insulting Col. Gilbard who so much lotted upon a commission over the late Col. Williams regiment, though to the dissatisfaction of the whole regiment, one night some person moved the flag from before his door, and set it up at the late Col. Williams tent where it ought to stand. Gilbard in the morning was so enraged at it that he sent a file of men to fetch it and set it up before his own door threatened many, but could get no proof, declared that he had rather they had taken off his head, and now he is obliged to go off and leave house and flag; the house he had built,

the flag that his honor so much depended upon to his shame.

Wednesday, 8<sup>th</sup> October. An unhappy accident occurred today; a gun fired off shot a man in the thigh so that it is thought he would die. About 4 of the clock in the afternoon a very hard thunder storm arose. Some of our people on the lakes with battoes came near being cast away but did recover. A tree was struck with lightning which stood within a rod or two of three tents, but nobody was hurt. One tree blew down upon one shelter and liked to have killed 2 or 3 men but all escaped with their lives, but received some wounds but none mortal. Wonderful interpositions of Divine Providence are daily passing before my eyes in the deliverance from sudden death by accident. Surely we carry our lives in our hands.

Thursday, 9<sup>th</sup>, 1755. A fair day. A number of waggons and some of the Connecticut troops, Col. Chaucer and Col. Dyer came today. At four of the clock in the afternoon a Council of War sat to consider of sundry articles; viz, whether we should go to take possession of Ticonderoga, or march for Crown Point immediately answered in the negative, the reasons: 1. We wanted both provisions and men. 2. Whether we should take off any of the men from building the fort to work at the great boat—answered no—there not being tools enough for both purposes, so determined the work at the fort must not be stopped. I hear today that Maj. Foot who went from hence about a fortnight ago, came to Albany, was taken sick, but having a great desire to get home, an opportunity presented to go on board a vessel down the river, getting out of a hot bed—got a relapse and was carried back to the house from whence he came, and died last Sabbath day. A good honest gentleman, his death is much lamented. Instances of the frailty of human nature are constantly passing before my eyes.

Friday, 10<sup>th</sup>. Today moved into the house that the famous Col. Gilbard built when he reigned. Find it very convenient, having got rid of Col. Gilbard's tyranny, invited all the commission officers in my regiment in the evening to drink with me and it appeared to be a time of universal satisfaction with the officers but I am still in an ill state of health by reason of a cold.

Saturday, 11, 1755. A very cold day, snow blasts, etc., the poor soldiers suffered very much with the cold for want of blankets and clothes that they lost in the battle. Capt. Rogers came in who went 4 days ago to view Ticonderoga, found them building about two miles this side of the carrying place, the number appeared to be about a thousand men—there is a considerable number of our men sick. Voted in the council today that all persons judged by the Doctor not fit for service now, nor are like to be this fall, by a certificate from the Doctor are to be dismissed.

Sabbath day, 12<sup>th</sup>. A rainy day. Voted in Council today that the Fort should be carried forward as fast as possible. Voted to send to the several governments the true state of our army as to store, provisions, men and the difficulty of getting up stores at this time and wait their orders.

Monday, 13<sup>th</sup>. A scout went out today of about 50 men, about three miles off at sunset. Capt. Simes head of a scout set out his guards. One of the sentry about 20 rods off not being well on his guard, a small party of Indians fired upon him and killed him dead on the spot, and not the first man that died like a fool.

Tuesday, the 14<sup>th</sup> Oct. Last night a very rainy night and bad for the guards and new comers, which I hear are six companies. Our men crowd in faster than — — — ? Agreed in council today to march back those that were in the road above Albany leaving six hundred at Fort Edward there to stay till further orders, only such as were wanted for guards for the provisions, etc., and they to be of the Massachusetts and Rhode Island troops.

Wednesday, Oct. 15. Raw, cold misty, cloudy and snow upon the high hills. I still remain poorly yesterday and to-day kept my house except yesterday I just went a little while to Council this day. Capt. Rogers went last night with a small scout to see if by any means he could find some of the enemy. I hear that yesterday five Frenchmen were taken near Fort Edward by our guard who were with the waggoners. I have not yet heard a particular account of the circumstances nor their account, but it is supposed they were deserters. My cold seems to be wearing off, but fever follows.

Thursday, 16. A fair pleasant day; took a sweat last night and the night before, but my fever prevails. Keep my house and do not go out on any business. Capt. Buckingham came up from Milford with some of his men to guard the stores yesterday and returned back to Albany today. Capt. Buckingham brought me up a bag of potatoes and cabbages that cousin Elisha Pomeroy being then at Albany got and sent up which came in good time though I have very little appetite.

Friday, 17<sup>th</sup>. Rainy night and part of the day, but it cleared off pleasant. I still remain weak and low. As to news I am obliged to keep house so can give but little account.

Saturday, 18. I still remain very ill. Cannot do much business; one third of my regiment work at the Fort every day.

Sabbath day, 19<sup>th</sup>. I moved to the General for liberty to go home my sickness prevailed upon me so fast. I obtained it. At the same time Maj. Gen. Lyman's horse that had got away from him and was lost, came to my house and stood there. I ordered him to be caught and taken to the General's. I wrote to him desiring liberty to ride him down; this was quite providential for without that horse I don't know how I could have come, and if I had stayed one day longer I suppose I should not have come. The General gave liberty but said I must go the next day for he could not keep his horse.

Monday, 20. This a fair day, set out this morning. Titus Pomeroy with me but I was very sick; arrived at Fort Edward at night lodged there and was very sick all night.

Tuesday, 21<sup>st</sup>. A fair day set out on my way home, arrived at Saratoga at night and very sick all night.

Wednesday, 22. Not able to ride, got a Dutch bin to lay in with some straw in it, carried it into a battoe and the soldiers rowed me down to Stillwater and then I got a Dutchman acquainted with the falls to steer down and got to the Half Moon, half an hour after 7 o'clock and was very sick all night. Drank some milk and water.

An account of the charges of my soldiers at the several taverns they called at upon the road down to Boston, viz:

Saltmarshes 28 men charged	7.3.8
At Balden's 34 men each a meal of victuals	4.5
At Mallbury, Daniel Ward's, 35 men supper and breakfast	10.3.9
I paid eight shillings of the above sum.	
At Staines 33 men suppers	4.2.6
To 35 Breakfasts	4.7.6
To lodging and liquor	2.5.4
To 1 horse hay and oats	4.2
So copied	32.8.9

Thursday, Oct. 23. This morning I drank some tea boiled in a teakettle without a teapot and then my soldiers led me down to the water, got into the battoe—covered myself well up in my bin or Dutch straw bunk as they call it; they brought me down to the Flats to Col. Schuyler's between 10 and 11 of the clock and then very sick, and there I lay very bad for about ten days, and part of the time but very little hopes of my life, but after that I seemed to mend some. After a few days grew better very fast and recovered so much strength that on Monday the 17<sup>th</sup> November — — days after I came there I set out for home — came to the city dined at Mr. Sanders—in the afternoon came over the river, and travelled about five miles and lodged at one Jacob Launson's. About 4 of the clock in the morning a very still night, bright moon shone it being near full there was a hard shock of earthquake; the next day.

Tuesday, the 18<sup>th</sup>,<sup>1</sup> we traveled to Kinderhook, lodged at one Burent Van Buren, had 5 in company with myself; my wife, my son Seth, Jonathan Kingsley and Ebenezer Strong; we set [out] next morning which was Wednesday, 19th. Arrived about 4 of the clock at Aaron Sheldon's at Sheffield, lodged there that night.

Thursday, 20<sup>th</sup>. Set out for Glasco. Arrived there about 5 of the clock, lodged at Henstone's.

Friday, 21. Every day fair and good weather since we

<sup>1</sup> Some mistake in the original about date.

set out, but this morning cloudy, we set out between 7 and 8 of the clock for fear of rain. Came to Clapp's at Westfield about 10 of the clock, there eat breakfast and about 11 of the clock set out for Northampton. Came to my own house about 2 of the clock afternoon. All good weather since we set out which was a great favor, especially for me when just recovered from sore sickness.

I left Albany June 17, 1755, and left at my lodgings, in Jacob Clement's Indian interpreter a small trunk. I think about 4 or 5 fine shirts and necks some caps 2 or 3 white handkerchiefs a little bag of gold in the trunk, the number of pieces or of pounds I can't tell for I did not count them; when I came away I lost my best clothes, coat, Jacket, and britches, my best wig, best hat, books, and saddle bags. I dont think of anything else there. But at Col. Taylor's at the flats I left 2 fine shirts, 2 necks and I think 2 caps. Things lost at Clements are in a closet locked up; the key I brought with me it is now in a little trunk locked in my port mantle.

June 15. Maj. Gen. Lyman, Dr.

To making a gun, £4.0.0. To mending three locks, 4s. 8d.

An account of the goods and chattels taken after the battle Sept. 8, 1755, in the late Col. William's regiment.

Lake George, Sept. 12, 1755.

An account of what plunder, guns  
blankets, coats &c. Col. Williams      }  
Company Capt. Buck hath got, viz:      }  
six blankets from  
the enemy, 3 coats,  
3 jackets.

Col. Pomeroy's company, viz :

I myself have got one gun  
one pistol, one hatchet, one  
bayonet, one in our company  
belonging to our regiment No. 94  
3 French guns, a blanket  
belonging to the Province in the  
hands of Joseph Owen, a belt  
of wampum in the hands of  
Ensign Bixby also an English  
gun marked I D.      }  
one gun suppose  
to belong to our  
army.  
2 Gun locks  
5 Hatchets  
2 broken English  
guns a coat  
English and  
Knapsack.

Major Ashley's company now Lt. Callender commander :  
one French gun, a pair plush breeches, one pair straked

ditto—linen—one pair trowsers, one French axe one gun marked T. E. 24 small bags.

Capt. House, 3 French guns, one English gun marked A. T. E. a pair of English shoes, 2 Knives 2 hatchets 1 Bear-skin.

Capt. Porter's Company: one gun marked S. S. one French gun, one blanket E. T. a large bullet pouch and strap, one shirt one jacket, ten bags one pair linen breeches, 1 Hatchet E. E.

Capt. Hitchcock hath got pair leather breeches, pair brown stockings, one hatchet E. O. one jacket a red one and blue, one pair breeches, linen.

Capt. Ingersoll's company: one province blanket mark S. H. 3 French blankets, 11 bags, 1 bottle.

Capt. Burt hath a French gun, a blue great coat a blanket marked B. R. 3 shirts, 2 bags, 1 cutlass.

Capt. Doolittle's company: 4 hatchets, 2 blankets, 1 Kettle, 1 French gun.

Capt. Hawley's Company: coat quaker and breeches, Indian stockings, a Kettle, an old hat and jacket, one seal-skin Knapsack, one sauce pan, an Indian root bag, a French coat, 3 pair Indian shoes, 4 bags, 2 guns, both French guns one gun barrel, one old blanket, 2 jackets, one hat.

## CHAPTER XXI.

### FOURTH FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR.

The "Bloody Morning Scout." NEWS of the advance of the enemy up Wood Creek was received on Sunday, Sept. 9<sup>th</sup>. Col. Pomeroy reports officially to Col.

Israel Williams: —

"We supposing y<sup>e</sup> they intend to Cut off our wagons, or attack y<sup>e</sup> Fort at y<sup>e</sup> Carrying Place but wanted better Information. Sent Monday morning about 1200 Men near 20<sup>0</sup> of them Indians commanded by Col. Williams Col. Whiting & Col. Cole of Rhode Island. Whiting In y<sup>e</sup> Middle Cole brought up y<sup>e</sup> rear old Hendrick King of y<sup>e</sup> Six nations before with Col. Williams the Indians, Some afore, some in y<sup>e</sup> middle & Some in y<sup>e</sup> rear & so Intermix'd Through."

Dieskau pursued the old, well tried and too often successful game of ambuscade, into which the colonial commander marched with the stereotyped alacrity characteristic of the military movements of that campaign. The French general drew up his forces so as to form a "cul de sac," in which he placed the French regulars at the bottom, and the Canadians and Indians on opposite sides. Consequently after marching about three miles without throwing out scouts or flankers, "between 10 & 11 of y<sup>e</sup> clock," the detachment of colonial troops suddenly found itself in the midst of a deadly fire.<sup>1</sup> Consternation seized both officers and men, and the rear ranks, panic-stricken, fled to the camp. But the main body, as Pomeroy testifies, made a "very handsome retreat," though the commander, Col. Ephraim Williams, was killed early in the fight. A hasty attempt was made to form a breastwork to protect the

<sup>1</sup> Dieskau ordered the Canadians and Indians not to fire till the regulars began the battle, but some of the latter, seeing Mohawks in the ranks of the advancing army, fired a gun to warn them. This brought on the action before Col. Williams' detachment had fairly entered the trap set for it, and undoubtedly saved it from annihilation.

camp, behind which the artillery was stationed. Dieskau, though sorely wounded, ordered an attack upon the camp, but the Indians refused to expose themselves to the artillery fire, and the French, repulsed in their attempt to carry the breastwork, retreated, leaving their commander-in-chief upon the field. Both sides fought with desperation, and the "bloody morning scout," a name applied to the movement of Col. Williams, soon developed into the sanguinary "battle of Lake George."

**Exploit of Capts.  
McGinnis and Ful-  
some.**

Col. Blanchard, in command at Fort Edward on the morning of the same day, learning that several baggage wagons had been plundered, sent out a detachment of two hundred men under Capts. McGinnis and Fulsome. Hearing the firing at the camp, they pressed forward and came upon a large party of Dieskau's troops, who had fallen back after their repulse and had halted for rest and refreshment. This party they immediately attacked and put to flight, capturing a large quantity of stores and baggage. Capt. McGinnis, who belonged to the New York quota, was mortally wounded.

**Col. Pomeroy De-  
scribes the Battle.**

Col. Pomeroy writing home says of the charge upon the camp: "The regulars kept their order till they came within about 20 rods, then made a regular fire by platoons; the regulars and Indians behind trees within about 12 or 14 rods, and perhaps the hailstones from heaven have not been much thicker than their bullets came." In his official report he thus characterizes the engagement: "Such a Battle it is Judg'd by all y<sup>t</sup> I have heard was never known In America." On this bloody field the Hampshire regiment, in which were many soldiers from Northampton, bore a conspicuous part. Its commander reports in the official document already quoted, that "they being foremost, for a considerable time [stood] the fire of there whole army till they ware lik'd to be surrounded which obliged 'em to retreat." Again in a letter to his wife he alludes to the bravery of his own regiment:—

"Officers in our regiment they being foremost and their men had the hottest fire, so more of our regiment are dead you will find than any

other. Their names who died in battle are Col. Ephraim Williams,<sup>1</sup> Maj. Noah Ashley, Capt. Moses Porter, Capt. Jonathan Ingersoll, Capt. Eliasha Hawley is yet alive but no hopes of his life, Lieut. Daniel Pomeroy, Ensign Reuben Wait, Ensign John Stratton." Further particulars concerning the killed are found in his official report:—"Col. Williams was shot Dead in a Moment & before he had Time to Fire his Gun Capt. Hawley Shot I fear Mortal before he had time to fire his gun; My Brother Lieut. Pomeroy, I have had an acct his being well till the army retreated & ask'd 'what? are they going to run?' 'Yes' it is said 'well' said he 'I will give 'em one more Shot before I run,' any further I hant heard, since I have heard he is ded & scalpt." Of himself Pomeroy says nothing in his letters to his wife till ten days after the battle, and then only in answer to her affectionate solicitations and inquiries. On the 18<sup>th</sup>, he tells of his narrow escape from death:—"I am alive and in a tolerable state of health, my mind calm and steady and in the midst of danger and the bullets continually flying near me in the time of battle, and one prevented from killing me right-out by its cutting of a small limb when it got about a foot of my body so much lost its force that only bruised me and fell down at my feet."

The French Commander Wounded and Captured.

Baron Dieskau, five times wounded, was taken prisoner by Col. Pomeroy, and sent to the tent of Gen. Johnson, who was himself wounded, leaving the command to his subordinate, Gen. Lyman. Gen. Dieskau never recovered from his wounds, though he survived the battle seven years. When Col. Pomeroy went out upon the field after the retreat of the enemy, he came upon the disabled French commander, and he has been charged with firing upon the wounded man as he lay helpless on the ground. But the Baron refutes the charge in an account of the fight, wherein he states that his last wound was given him by a French Canadian deserter. He was robbed of his watch and other valuables before Pomeroy found him. Tradition asserts that it was through the exertions of Col. Pomeroy that the watch was recovered and returned to its owner, who afterwards presented it to the Northampton colonel. This cherished relic is said to be still in the possession of his descendants.

1 Col. Ephraim Williams was the founder of Williams College. He had seen much service during the colonial wars, and was a man of influence and ability. He had a presentiment while in Albany when about to start on this expedition, that he should not survive the campaign, and made his will, leaving his property for the support and maintenance of a "Free School" in a town west of Fort Massachusetts, to be named Williamstown. This school has since developed into Williams College. His career is fully sketched in Prof. Perry's "Origins of Williamstown," to which the author of these volumes is indebted for much valuable information.

Col. Pomeroy  
Superceded.

The two vacancies in the roster of the Hampshire Regiment, caused by the deaths of Col. Williams and Major Ashley, were promptly filled by Gen. Johnson. He designated Lieut.-Col. Thomas Gilbert of Col. Ruggles' regiment, as acting Colonel and "Capt. Gadfire" (according to Pomeroy's Journal), as Major. These appointments were very unsatisfactory to the rank and file, as well as to the officers to whom the promotions by right belonged. To Lieut.-Col. Pomeroy, who richly deserved promotion for his gallant service during the campaign, this placing of an officer from another regiment over him must have been especially galling. Very slight allusion to this matter appears in the correspondence of Col. Pomeroy, but the mention made of it in his journal indicates his own feeling as well as the sentiment which prevailed in the regiment. An unsuccessful attempt was made to induce the Governor to confirm these appointments, and at least one officer from the army went to Boston on that errand. Though Pomeroy himself found plenty of other topics with which to enliven his home correspondence, his wife seems to have been well informed upon the subject. In a letter to her husband, dated September 22<sup>nd</sup>, she writes:—

"The introducing another officer from another regiment seems universally resented here." Again on the 26<sup>th</sup>, she thus alludes to the difficulty:—"Capt. Lyman is not like to get up so soon as was expected on account of some difficulties at the camp, particularly with regard to a chief colonel in your regiment. \* \* \* It grieves me much that there should be any difficulty about the disposition of that commission, as it must be a damage to the cause in general by making (as we hear) great uneasiness among the soldiers of your regiment, but especially as it should so nearly concern you." Once more she writes:—"I presume you are willing "Right" should take place. You kindly and I suppose purposely omit writing of any of these difficulties."

"Right" did at last prevail, and about the 7<sup>th</sup> of October Lieut.-Col. Pomeroy received his commission as commander of the regiment. At the same time Dr. Thomas Williams, surgeon, and brother of Col. Ephraim, was commissioned as Lieut.-Colonel, and Capt. James House, as Major. About a month after the fight, on the 10<sup>th</sup> of October, Col. Pomeroy moved into the quarters occupied by "the famous Col. Gilbard when he reigned."

**Reinforcements from  
Northampton.**

Recruiting to reinforce the army had been in progress during the campaign, and a company of sixty men from Northampton and Southampton was ready to start on the 14<sup>th</sup>. "At midnight" of the 13<sup>th</sup>, writes Mrs. Pomeroy to her husband, "a cry came at our door, with the joyful news of victory, though stained with blood," and the company "stopped upon hearing of your victory, and went immediately to follow the directions of the court in raising 2000 men, which I hope will be with you ere long." This was undoubtedly the company of Capt. William Lyman, already mentioned. It was in service from September 15<sup>th</sup> to December 10<sup>th</sup>, and was probably sent to the front at once, though the captain did not apparently join it till sometime afterwards.

**Other Northampton  
Men Killed and  
Wounded.**

In this sanguinary engagement, in which from sixty to seventy soldiers from this town participated, five of them were killed and several wounded. Among the killed, in addition to those named by Col. Pomeroy, were Eliakim Wright and Ebenezer Kingsley, and among the wounded were Elnathan Phelps and Kenfield, all privates in Capt. Hawley's company. Daniel Pomeroy, lieutenant under Capt. Hawley, was a brother of Col. Seth. "He was shot through the temple, leaped up several feet and fell dead." It is related of him that when about to join the army he consulted with his brother. The conversation occurred in a field where Col. Seth was at work. The latter endeavored to dissuade his brother from enlisting, but Daniel had already made up his mind, and closed the conversation by saying, "I must go and must be killed."

**Col. Pomeroy Pro-  
strated by sickness.**

About the middle of October Col. Pomeroy was taken sick, and on the 19<sup>th</sup> obtained leave of absence. At Albany he was prostrated for about ten days, and at times there was very little hope of his recovery. His wife and son were summoned to his bedside, and he did not reach home till the 21<sup>st</sup> of November.

**Operations Suspended.**

No further movement was made towards the reduction of Crown Point. Fort William Henry was erected at the southern extremity of Lake George, which together with Fort Edward was properly garrisoned. The rest of the army was withdrawn.

**No Outrages in Hampshire County.**

Though the Indians did not appear in this town during the year, there was constant anxiety throughout the county. The operations against Crown Point concentrated the attention of both French and Indians, and very little was seen of the latter elsewhere. In the diary of Rev. Jonathan Judd are constant allusions to the state of affairs. Volunteers were mustered in Southampton in May, and in July the pastor read from the pulpit a letter from Major Hawley, "which gave an account of Indians out; read it after exercise in public."

**French Neutrals.**

The expedition to Nova Scotia under John Winslow, great grandson of Edward Winslow, started in May, speedily reduced the French forts, and obtained entire possession of the country. Two battalions were recruited in Massachusetts, but no soldiers were enlisted from Hampshire County, though Col. Israel Williams received orders to draw three hundred fifty men from his regiment to be held in readiness for any emergency. Incidentally only is this movement of local interest. In the deportation of the inhabitants of Acadia<sup>1</sup> which followed, one family was assigned to Northampton, "Silvean

<sup>1</sup> When Nova Scotia was ceded to the English, the French inhabitants refused to take the oath of allegiance to the British crown unless they should be exempted from bearing arms against their countrymen; hence they were termed "French Neutrals." Gen. Winslow found numbers of them in the ranks of the enemy, and their influence had been everywhere opposed to the English government. Consequently it was determined to remove and distribute the entire population of Acadia throughout the English colonies. They were to be supported by the several towns to which they were sent, thereby reducing a virtuous, self-supporting, industrious Catholic people to absolute pauperism. They were transplanted into communities in which their language was not understood, and which hated Frenchmen, loathed paupers, and bitterly detested Catholics. On this shameful transaction was founded Longfellow's immortal poem, "Evangeline," as well as Whittier's vigorous but shorter lyric, "Marguerite." Two thousand Acadians were brought to Massachusetts and distributed among the towns. In Hampshire County usually but one family was quartered on a town. They were cared for by the several municipalities as far as their circumstances required, and were everywhere treated with kindness.

Dupuis" as written by himself, but inscribed on the town books as "Sylvine Dupee," was the name. The family was composed of nine persons: the man, wife and seven children. He was employed by different people, who paid him in clothing and provisions. From the town he received 4s. per week and the use of a house. These payments seem to have continued from 1760 to 1765, after which date no further record concerning him has been found.<sup>1</sup>

**Gov. Shirley Plans  
another Cam-  
paign.**

Having been appointed commander-in-chief on the death of Gen. Braddock, Gov. Shirley—before his failure in the Niagara expedition was known in England—planned, in connection with the colonial Governors, a campaign for the following year so comprehensive as to be beyond the capacity of the colonies to undertake. It involved the employment of upwards of twenty thousand men upon the same lines as that of the previous year. But Massachusetts refused to do more than enlist three thousand five hundred men for another movement against Crown Point, and Gen. Winslow was recalled from Nova Scotia to take the command.

**War Declared and  
New Commanders  
Appointed.**

In May, 1756, England formally declared war against France, and the Earl of Loudon was appointed commander-in-chief in America. Gov. Shirley was superceded in June by Col. Webb, who was to serve till either the newly appointed commander-in-chief or Gen. Abercrombie arrived. Some time elapsed before Loudon left England, and the command devolved on Gen. Abercrombie. He did nothing, however, but await the arrival of his superior officer, who did not reach headquarters at Albany till the last of July.

**The French Cap-  
ture Oswego.**

In the meantime the Marquis de Montcalm had been invested with the command of the French forces. He led an army of five thousand men in August against Oswego, which was garrisoned by fourteen hundred soldiers under Col. Mercer. The death of the commander, together with the exhaustion

<sup>1</sup> Hadley appropriated \$3 in 1766, to remove the French Neutrals to Canada, and the Northampton family may have gone there previous to that date.

of ammunition, brought a speedy surrender of the post. This disaster seemed to paralyze the movements of the English general, and nothing was accomplished during the year. Lord Loudon countermanded the expedition against Crown Point, and Gen. Winslow's army was disbanded, except such soldiers as were required to garrison the frontier forts, which were placed under the command of Lieut. John Hawks. The fourteen forts and stockades extending from Stockbridge to Greenfield were garrisoned by one hundred sixty-two men, many of whom were citizens of the valley towns.

*Position of Affairs.* The history of events in 1756 was but a repetition of that of the preceding years of anxiety, toil and hardship for the settlers of this section. In all the towns the enlistment or impressment of men for service in the various expeditions was vigorously enforced. The same arduous struggle for a bare subsistence continued, and the farmers on the hills or in the valleys of Western Massachusetts were still compelled to labor under the guardianship of soldiers, snatching their scanty crops from a reluctant soil almost beneath the very guns of their savage foes. The most exacting as well as the most dangerous duty of the troops was that of scouting. Men were scarce, the territory to be covered extensive, and it is hardly to be wondered at that the stealthy foe should come suddenly upon detached and careless squads of men, dealing out to them death or captivity.

*Casualties During the Year.*

In the months of June, July and August, the Indians were active, and made numerous incursions into Western Massachusetts. At Winchester, N. H., Josiah Foster and family were captured early in June; within a few days two men were killed within half a mile of Fort Massachusetts; not long after Lieut. Moses Willard was killed, and his son wounded at Charlestown. In July, Sergt. William Chidester and his son James, were killed at West Hoosack, and Capt. Elisha Chapin was captured and soon after slain. In August, two men were fired upon near Northfield, but they escaped. Within a few days an attack was made upon five

men in the northerly part of Greenfield ; one was killed, and two escaped. During the same month, Lieut. Grant and thirteen men were surprised on Hoosack river some miles below Fort Massachusetts, eight were killed and the rest made prisoners. No casualties are noted in any of the valley towns, but several of them were called upon to mourn the death of some of their prominent citizens.

*Slow Progress of  
the War.*

The campaign of the following year was even less successful than that of its predecessor. The incompetency of the commander-in-chief was equalled only by that of some of his subordinates, and the enemy were still victorious. Lord Loudon attempted the capture of Louisburg, but the expedition returned without making a demonstration upon the city. Thomas Pownal, appointed to succeed Gov. Shirley, assumed office in August. In March, a body of fifteen hundred French and Indians commanded by M. de Rigaud Marquis de Vaudreuil, brother of the Governor of Canada, and M. de Longueil, had attacked Fort William Henry, erected by Sir William Johnson, at the lower end of Lake George. The garrison, commanded by Major Evers, refused to surrender, and gallantly defended the fort. Five times the enemy attempted to carry the works by assault without success. After burning the vessels of the English, and all the buildings outside of the fortifications, the assailants abandoned the enterprise, and returned to Canada. The fort was immediately reinforced, and placed under the command of Col. George Monroe.

*The Fort is Finally  
Captured.*

Determined to dismantle this important fortification, which was a standing menace against all their attempts to invade the colonies by way of the Lakes, another and more successful demonstration was made upon it during the summer. While Lord Loudon was conducting the expedition against Louisburg, Montcalm, who had succeeded to the command in Canada, early in the month of August, suddenly projected a force of between five and six thousand men upon Fort William Henry, called Fort George by the French. Gen. Webb, who had been left in command with a force of

five thousand men, was at Fort Edward, distant about twenty miles. He took no measures for the defense or relief of the place, but sent a dispatch to the commandant, exaggerating the numbers of the enemy, and advised him to surrender. Col. Monroe, however, refused to deliver up the fort and defended it with great vigor from the 3<sup>d</sup> to the 9<sup>th</sup> of August, when his ammunition having been exhausted, and one half his guns disabled, he capitulated. The terms of surrender were most honorable; the soldiers were to march out with the honors of war under parole not to serve for eighteen months. Scarcely had the garrison begun the march towards Fort Edward under the protection of a guard, than the Indians, who had obtained great quantities of liquor, fell upon the unarmed prisoners, and a cruel massacre followed. A feeble attempt was made by the French officers to save the captives, but without avail. A few escaped by flight, and others sought protection in the camp of the French.

Northampton Soldiers among the Captives. Great consternation prevailed when news of this disaster reached the settlements. In the garrison were men from almost every town in Hampshire County, and none knew how many, if any, had escaped the terrible butchery. A number of Northampton soldiers were there and for a time it was feared that all of them had perished. Several of them were among the captives, but fortunately none were killed. In Capt. John Burk's company from Northfield were Joel Clapp, Nathaniel Day Jr., Nathaniel P. Hayward, and Samuel Phelps from Northampton, who were captured. John Birge Jr., and Rufus Brown, also from this town, were members of the same company, but they were not in the capitulation.

Great Alarm throughout the Province. The capture of Fort William Henry opened the way for an advance into New York and Massachusetts, and it caused an alarm almost reaching a panic throughout the province. Gov. Pownal appointed Sir William Pepperell lieutenant-general of all the forces of the Province of Massachusetts, and ordered him to Springfield to collect and forward re-

inforcements and supplies for Gen. Webb. One fourth of the soldiers from all the regiments in the province, except those of York, Nantucket and Dukes, were ordered to Springfield. Twenty thousand men responded to this call, and they were marched hurriedly towards the seat of war as fast as they could be organized.

**Patriotism of the People.**

This great and threatening danger roused the patriotism of the inhabitants throughout the length and breadth of Massachusetts. So eager were the soldiers to hasten to the relief of their comrades, that when the first intelligence of the invasion, accompanied by a call for reinforcements, was received, they marched at once towards the scene of action without waiting for orders.<sup>1</sup>

**Reinforcements sent Quickly Forward.**

Col. Israel Williams, who was succeeded by Col. Oliver Partridge of Hatfield, took command of the northern Hampshire Regiment in active service. When Gen. Webb received information of the approach of Montcalm, he sent for reinforcements, and on the 6<sup>th</sup> of August, Gov. Pownal ordered Cols. Williams and Worthington of Hampshire, and Col. Ruggles of Worcester, to raise men and send them to Albany. They acted promptly, and soldiers were on the way to the seat of war within four days. Gen. Pepperell was ordered to Springfield on the 8<sup>th</sup>; two days afterwards he had orders to forward every available man and he at once moved the regiments of Williams, Worthington and Ruggles. On the 13<sup>th</sup>, he writes to Capt. Christie, aide to Gen. Webb, in substance as follows:—

When I came here, I found that Col. Worthington, Col. Williams and Col. Ruggles Regiments were all marched forward to relieve Fort William Henry, some of them <sup>even</sup> before the Governor could get orders to them to march, "such was the readiness of this people to go to the assistance of the distressed, that this part of the Province seems almost evacuated, and the frontier thereof in the north in a most dangerous situation, the whole militia within 40 or 50 miles being drawn off. \* \* \* They went off on a sudden with great freedom in great numbers and thro' great difficulties of their private affairs."

<sup>1</sup> When the enemy invested Fort William Henry, Gen. Webb sent urgent requests to Massachusetts and New York for reinforcements. It was in answer to this appeal that many soldiers marched to his relief without orders from headquarters, and before the capture of the fort was known.—Gen. Pepperell's Report.

Apparently Gen. Pepperell was not aware that on the 6<sup>th</sup>, only three days after the investment of the fort, Gov. Pownal had ordered the commanders of the regiments above named to forward troops to Albany as fast as possible. It is probable that the men whom he reports as having already gone forward, marched promptly under that order.

**The Mass. Colonels  
decline to obey  
orders from New  
York.**

Cols. Williams and Ruggles reached Kinderhook with their forces on the 12<sup>th</sup>, and sent a dispatch to Lieut.-Gov. DeLancey of New York to ascertain the position of affairs.

On the following day he replied that Gen. Webb had reported that the Indians and Canadians were to go off from Fort William Henry that day, and suggested that they join Gen. Webb, and aid him in driving the French from that fort. Williams and Ruggles in their answer, dated the 13<sup>th</sup>, said that they were ordered to aid the forces of Gen. Webb, attacked by the enemy, and not to join in expeditions that might be projected at some future time; they did not think it consistent with their orders to proceed to Fort Edward, that place not being attacked, nor in danger of assault. Besides "we have learnt that a large body of the enemy have turned eastward to attack our own frontiers; our duty is to march to their relief."

Accordingly these regiments began their retrograde march at once, and were at Sheffield on the 15<sup>th</sup>. On the same day Gen. Pepperell wrote to Gov. Pownal that no more troops need be sent to Fort Edward, as the danger would be from Indians on the frontier. Though the commanders of these regiments fell back, apparently without orders, their movement was acquiesced in by their superiors, and seems to have been the proper course to pursue.

**A Magazine of Sup-  
plies formed at  
Springfield.**

Gov. Pownal took measures for the establishment of a magazine of supplies at Springfield, and ordered Gen. Pepperell, in case the enemy approached the frontiers in force, to dismantle all wagons west of Connecticut river by striking off

their wheels,<sup>1</sup> to drive away all the horses, and to destroy all the supplies that could not be removed. But there was no danger of further invasion. Montcalm, deserted by his Indian allies after the massacre, contented himself with destroying the fort, first securing a large amount of stores collected there. In a short time he fell back upon Ticonderoga and Crown Point, and in a few weeks was again in Canada with a portion of his army. The panic subsided and the militia were dismissed.

*Patriotism in Hampshire County.*

News of the invasion by Montcalm and the danger that threatened Fort William Henry, stirred the patriotism of Hampshire County to such a degree that in a short time the country was almost entirely denuded of militia. Every one pressed forward, eager to reinforce the army and prevent the further advance of the foe. Between six hundred and seven hundred men responded to the call for reinforcements from the county, and most of them were on the march before intelligence of the capitulation and massacre had been received. Some of them went only to Springfield, some to Westfield, some to Sheffield, and some to Kinderhook, while a few went to Fort Edward.

*Service of some of the Hampshire Companies.*

Capt. Benjamin Day of Springfield, with a company of over ninety men, was absent about eleven days and marched from fifty to seventy miles. Capt. Stephen Wright of Southampton, with his company of thirty-four men, went to Kinderhook. They marched in all one hundred fifty-eight miles, and were absent eleven days. Capt. James Merrick of Brimfield had about forty men under him, who marched about one hundred seventy-two miles, and were gone from eighteen to twenty-five days. Capt. Samuel Smith of South Hadley had upwards of sixty men in his company ; they marched one hundred eighty miles in thirteen days. Capt. Robert Lothridge of Pelham, with about thirty men, in fourteen days marched two hundred miles. Capt. Nathaniel Dwight of Belchertown, with nearly forty men, covered

<sup>1</sup> By this order is intended all the wagons employed by the military ; wagons were not then in such general use among the people as to warrant such an indiscriminate order.

one hundred ninety-five miles in thirteen days. Lieut. Martin Dewey of Westfield led his company of over thirty men about one hundred eighty miles in thirteen days. Capt. Ezra Clap of Westfield had between forty and fifty men, who were absent fourteen days, and marched nearly two hundred miles. Capt. Moses Marsh, of Hadley, with forty-four men, was on the march for fourteen days. Capt. John Fellows of Sheffield, with about thirty men, went to Fort Edward, marching two hundred four miles. Major John Ashley led another company of more than seventy men from Sheffield to Fort Edward, where they remained eight or nine days. Capt. Jacob Cummins of Ware River, with thirty-seven men, went to Kinderhook ; they saw fifteen days' service and marched two hundred miles. Lieut. David Black of Blanford was eighteen days on the march, and Capt. Joseph Warner of Hardwick went to Kinderhook. The officers of Col. Israel Williams' regiment, who marched to relieve the fort, were : Col. Israel Williams and Major Elijah Williams, both of Deerfield, Major Joseph Hawley<sup>1</sup> of Northampton, Chaplain Timothy Woodbridge of Hatfield, and Adj. Elisha Pomeroy, Col. Cad'. Seth Pomeroy, Ens. Cad'. Noah Strong, and Ens. Cad'. Elisha Strong, all of Northampton. Lieut. Joseph Billings, with eighteen privates marched to the relief of Fort William Henry.

Death of Lord Howe. Capture of Fort Frontenac. With a change in the British ministry, by which William Pitt was placed at the head of affairs, new life and energy was infused into the war. Lord Loudon gave place to Gen. Abercrombie, and three expeditions were planned for the year 1758. The first under Gen. Jeffrey Amherst and James Wolfe, succeeded in capturing Louisburg ; the second, commanded by Gen. Abercrombie and Lord Howe, was repulsed in an

<sup>1</sup> While on this march Major Hawley addressed the following letter to his wife, which is copied from the original in the Lenox Library, N. Y. :—

"Sheffield, Thursday, Aug. 1758.

" My Dear Child.

" I am well here—came here last night—have something of the difficulty I used to have in hot weather by riding. We are proceeding as fast as we well can towards Ft Edward. Uncle Billy, Co. and Elisha are well. My duty most sincerely to Mother. Love to Moses and Hannah.

" I am your faithful and affectionate Husband as long as God shall give us life.  
Joseph Hawley."

assault upon Fort Ticonderoga, and Lord Howe was slain ; while the third under Gen. Joseph Forbes and Col. George Washington, overran the Ohio valley and captured Fort du Quesne. But there was a gleam of sunshine for Abercrombie. An expedition against Fort Frontenac (Kingston) on the north side of Lake Ontario was entrusted to Col. Bradstreet of Massachusetts. With three thousand troops, mostly militia, he speedily took possession of the place. Many pieces of artillery, several armed vessels, and great quantities of supplies fell into the hands of the victors. This was a valuable acquisition, and its possession was of material significance in the campaign of the following year. Massachusetts raised seven hundred men for this campaign, most of whom were under Gen. Abercrombie, who lost in his unsuccessful attack on Ticonderoga nearly two thousand soldiers.

**The Hampshire Regiment.**

Col. William Williams of Deerfield commanded a regiment in Gen. Abercrombie's army. In it Capt. Elisha Pomeroy of Northampton had a company of about one hundred men, upwards of forty of whom were from this town ; twenty-seven from Hadley ; eight from Southampton ; four from South Hadley ; eight from Westfield ; and eight from other towns in the county. They were in the service from April fourteenth to December fifth on the northern frontier. Capt. John Burk of Falltown commanded till June, Capt. Catlin of Deerfield, from June to September, and Capt. Burk again till the end of November.

**The Indians get in some Work.**

Indian depredations commenced early in March, but much less damage resulted from them than usual. Casualties occurred at Colrain, and at Hinsdale, N. H. Several houses were burned and many cattle slaughtered. Fewer raids than usual were chronicled for this year, and none of them came within the present limits of Hampshire County.

**Gen. Amherst succeeds Gen. Abercrombie.**

On his return from the successful expedition against Louisburg, Gen. Amherst was made commander-in-chief in place of Gen. Abercrombie, but the season was too far advanced for

further operations, and he went into winter quarters at Albany.

*The Campaign against Canada.*

The objective point of the campaign of 1759 was the conquest of Canada. An elaborate plan of operations was adopted, by which it was proposed to concentrate three English armies against Montreal and Quebec. One under Wolfe was to pass up the St. Lawrence, the second under Amherst was to move by way of Ticonderoga and Crown Point, while the third was to reduce Niagara, cross Lake Ontario, and descend upon Montreal. Massachusetts put seven hundred men in the field, and all the other colonies made strenuous efforts to increase the army. Full fifty thousand men were employed in this campaign, of which the colonies furnished one half. The seizure of Canada was still a favorite undertaking in Western Massachusetts, and enlistments were not backward. Northampton had fifty-three soldiers in the regiment of Col. Israel Williams, in which were also men from nearly every other town in the county. The Northampton soldiers were dispersed among the several companies:—twenty-two were in the company of Capt. Elijah Smith, and thirty-one in that of Col. Israel Williams.<sup>1</sup>

The details of this campaign, which resulted in the partial subjugation of Canada, are too well known to require extended notice. All the soldiers enlisted or impressed from this section formed part of the army of Gen. Amherst. Ticonderoga and Crown Point were abandoned at his approach, but his movements were so dilatory—owing to lack of transportation and supplies—that he failed to coöperate with Gen. Wolfe, and after the surrender of Quebec he retired to winter quarters. Gen. Prideaux led the army for the reduction of Niagara. He succeeded in the enterprise, but lost his life in the attack, and was succeeded in the command by Gen. William Johnson. Col. Gage superceded Gen. Johnson, but for the same reason that baffled Gen. Amherst, he failed to carry his part of the general plan.

<sup>1</sup> For Muster-rolls see Appendix.

Fall of Quebec. Familiar to all is the story of the capture of Quebec by the gallant Wolfe, who was killed in the moment of victory. He captured that stronghold without the aid of either of the armies designed to coöperate with him. News of the surrender of Quebec was received with the greatest joy by the colonies, especially by the settlers near the frontiers. It meant to them a respite from the horrors of Indian warfare, and it meant to all sections relief from military guardianship, and an end to the weary scout, the fatiguing march, and the fear of starvation. But the war was by no means finished. Montreal still remained in the hands of the French, and another campaign was required to complete the victory.

Capture of St. Francis. One of the most memorable exploits of the year was the capture and destruction of St. Francis by Major Rogers. He was a noted ranger, a native of New Hampshire, whose many brilliant and successful encounters with the enemy enlivened every campaign. One of his many daring deeds was narrated by Col. Pomeroy. When an enterprise requiring courage, resource, dash and ability was to be undertaken, Rogers was usually chosen as its leader. Though Ticonderoga and Crown Point had fallen, St. Francis, a noted headquarters of the Indians, still remained in possession of the enemy. It was one of the important points from which marauding parties were sent out to annoy the English settlements, being situated at the mouth of the St. Francis River, between Montreal and Quebec, and it contained a large amount of stores and plunder. Major Rogers was ordered with a detachment of two hundred men to attack the place. The story of this adventure is told at length in "Hoyt's Indian Wars." Suffice it to say that he accomplished his object, surprising and completely destroying the village. After enduring great hardships, failing to connect with the party sent to his relief, and having been compelled to live many days on nuts and lily roots, he finally reached Crown Point, having lost in the expedition forty-six men.

Last of the Indian Raids. While these operations were in progress, Indian depredations almost entirely ceased. The family of Joseph Willard was captured at Charlestown and carried to Montreal, but the last

appearance of the savages was at Colrain, where a party of ten or twelve of them captured Joseph McKoun, wife and child. Mrs. McKoun was killed after marching a short distance, and her husband and child were taken to Canada. Most of the militia had been drawn off for the army operating in Canada, and when news of this outrage reached Northampton, Major Hawley with a company went immediately in pursuit of the Indians. When he reached Greenfield, finding that the enemy had disappeared, and deeming further pursuit useless, he returned to Northampton.

**Frontier Posts.**

The frontier posts were under the command of Capt. John Burk from December 1758 to February 8, 1759; of Capt. Hawks from February 9 to April 30, 1759; and of Capt. Samuel Wells from May 1 to October 8. One hundred twenty men, most of them inhabitants of the Hampshire towns, were employed in garrison duty.

**Montreal Captured.**

For the reduction of Montreal in the following year three armies were employed, and so carefully had their movements been concerted that they met before the city within two days of the time fixed upon for their junction. Gen. Amherst commanded the main body, and with ten thousand men passed up the Mohawk to Oswego, and after capturing the posts along the St. Lawrence, descended that river to Montreal. He arrived there on the 10<sup>th</sup> of August, where he found Gen. Murray from Quebec, who reached that point the same day. Within twenty-four hours Col. Haviland, who with a smaller force had been in service on Lake Champlain, joined the combined army, and the siege began. It terminated on the 8<sup>th</sup> of September, when the Province of Canada passed into possession of the British.

**Attempt to Recapture Quebec.**

In the spring M. de Levi, who succeeded to the command on the death of Montcalm at Quebec, attempted to re-take the city. Gen. Murray marched out and gave battle, but was defeated and driven back into the city. The French General

then laid regular siege to the place, but before anything decisive occurred, an English fleet arrived, and the besiegers speedily withdrew.

**Soldiers for Canada.** For the "total reduction of Canada" many men enlisted in Hampshire County and some were impressed, but it is not certain that any of them participated in the closing scenes of the war. Fewer names than usual from Northampton are found upon the muster-rolls for 1760. They were undoubtedly employed in garrison duty. Col. Seth Pomeroy had command of the frontier forts from April 16<sup>th</sup> to June 20<sup>th</sup>. He had fifty-six men under him, and they were distributed at Colrain, Charlemont, West Hoosack, and Fort Massachusetts. Several companies from this county were in service during the year. Those who enlisted for the "total reduction of Canada" received \$10 each in cash, and £6 in Treasury notes; those who recruited them were paid 3s. for each man.<sup>1</sup>

**Peace Declared.** While the conquest of Canada completed by the surrender of Montreal virtually ended the war, peace was not declared till 1763. No further fighting occurred, though there were several companies from Hampshire County in the service on the frontiers during the years 1761 and 1762. Few names from Northampton are found upon the muster-rolls.

<sup>1</sup> For list of soldiers in the seven years war, see Appendix.

## CHAPTER XXII.

### FIRST SCHOOL-COMMITTEE—NEW COURT-HOUSE.

War not Recognized by the Town. DURING these seven years of anxiety, alarm, and bloodshed, town affairs moved forward with their usual serenity and harmony. Not an entry on the records gives the shadow of an intimation that a sanguinary conflict was raging, or that at any time there was the least danger of an invasion. By no vote was the critical condition of the country in any way recognized. The enlistment and impressment of soldiers was constantly in progress, and the young men of the town were marching in scores to the seat of war. Some of the companies were composed almost entirely of citizens of Northampton, and many from that town were members of different organizations scattered throughout the county. Several Northampton soldiers were killed, and many wounded. Not a few during the almost continuous movements of the troops were billeted here at considerable expense to individuals, if not to the town; yet no municipal action seems to have been deemed necessary. It is true that none of the Indian raiders penetrated the town, though its citizens were frequently called upon to guard the neighboring settlements. Even when nearly all the militia had been called away to repel threatened invasion, when none knew how soon the dread French and Indians would overrun the country, such matters as the following engaged the attention at town-meetings:—the removal of pigsties from the town lands, the building of horse sheds, the changing of pews in the meeting-house, or the use of the school-house on Sunday noons. If meetings were held to consult upon military matters, no records of them have come to light.

*Fines for Refusing  
Town Offices.*

Stringent regulations were from time to time adopted in reference to the service of individuals chosen to fill town offices. The colony laws prescribed the amount of fine to be collected from those persons who refused to accept office when elected, and theoretically no man was permitted to shirk his official duties without paying the penalty. Five pounds was the legal price that was required to release a man from undertaking the duties of constable, but notwithstanding this heavy fine it was not always an easy matter to find capable men willing to serve in that capacity. While cases are not rare in which the treasury was enriched through such declinations, many refusals to serve were condoned without enforcing the penalty, and in a few instances the courts of law were resorted to in order to compel the payment of these fines. For many years the compensation paid to constables was 20s. per year. In 1741, the constables "in the body of the town" were paid £4, in bills of credit, and in the new town 40s. This law continued in force till 1746, when it was repealed, and the compensation fixed at each annual meeting. After that date the usual amount paid was 20s.

*The Penalty Enforced.* A marked instance of enforcing the penalty for refusing to serve as constable occurred in 1754. At the annual March meeting Cornet John Hunt was chosen to that office. Immediately, before Cornet Hunt had opportunity either to accept or decline, Lieut. Caleb Strong (father of Gov. Caleb) moved that the town should "determine what sum they would accept of any person chosen to the office of constable in lieu of serving in that office," and it was voted to "excuse the person chosen, if he would pay down the sum of £3 lawful money, to be disposed of to the use of the poor." Evidently this action on the part of Lieut. Strong was considered as a thrust at Cornet Hunt, and his friends retaliated by electing Lieut. Strong constable. In the afternoon, permission having been granted him to consider the matter till that time, Lieut. Strong declined to serve, "but," the record reads, "he did not pay down the £3 lawful money or any part of it, nor the sum of £5, the penalty in the law (in

such cases provided) to be paid by persons refusing to serve in the constable's office, or any part of it."

Having heard the decision of Lieut. Strong, the town forthwith turned its attention to the other constable elect: "Then Cornet John Hunt being present at said meeting, the town put the question to him whether he would serve in the office of constable of the town of Northampton for the ensuing year to which he had been chosen, & he declared he would not accept said office nor serve the town therein. The town then made choice of Joseph Hawley Esq., for their agent to prosecute Lieut. Caleb Strong, Cornet John Hunt in manner as the law directs for the penalty each of them had incurred by refusing to serve as constables this year and which they ought to pay by the law of this Government in such cases provided, to the use of the poor of the town of Northampton."

Major Hawley brought the case of Lieut. Strong before the County Court and a summons was issued for his appearance before it, but no further record of the case has been found. Apparently Lieut. Strong was let off with the payment of the fine of £3, as there is no indication of any subsequent action in the case. Cornet Hunt seems to have escaped without prosecution.

**More Difficulty about Constables.** Still further trouble in reference to constables occurred the following year; several persons nominated for that office could not be elected. At last Ebenezer Clark Jr. and John Baker Jr., not being liable to serve, having held the office within seven years, proposed to accept the position for 40s. each, and they were chosen on that condition.

**A New School-House Built.** The question of erecting a new school-house in the center of the town had been a long time in agitation. Five years had elapsed since the town had decided to build one, but it soon after rescinded that order. Its need became more and more apparent as time slipped by, and in 1755, at the March meeting, a committee was appointed to consider and report thereon. They advised that a school-house should be built "large enough to accommodate the grammar school and

the writing and reading scholars in all seasons of the year." In May the town voted to build a school-house of brick, 36 by 18 feet. It was to be placed in the vicinity of the old school-house, which was to be disposed of, and the proceeds appropriated towards the expense of the new one. An account of the committee having charge of the work, is on file among the documents of the year 1755, which shows an expenditure of £84.10.05.

*"Shepherd's Island."* The Island in Connecticut River, formerly known as "Stoddard's Island" and later as "Shepherd's Island," was first brought into notice in 1754, when Gideon Lyman of Northampton petitioned the General Court for liberty to purchase the property. He states that there is an island belonging to the Province between Fort Meadow in Hadley and Old Rainbow in Northampton, containing "as he judges" six or seven acres, "whereon the brush begins to grow, and has been gathering about 30 years," and prays that a committee may be chosen to sell the same to him. In April, John Worthington and Oliver Partridge were appointed to sell the Island "for the most it will bring." Nothing seems to have been accomplished under this vote, and Gideon Lyman, though he owned land in Old Rainbow, opposite the Island, failed to make the purchase.

*The Island a Bone of Contention.* This Island, as the petition of Lyman shows, had been many years accumulating.

For a long time it was nothing but sand, upon which a few bushes began to grow. By degrees it became covered with soil, and grass appeared. It was then claimed by both Northampton and Hadley. Farmers from both towns claimed the crop, and one year it was mowed by a man from Hadley, named Brooks, but the hay was carried off by Nathaniel Day of this town. In order to settle the ownership, the General Court, in 1770, appointed John Worthington, Joseph Hawley, and Elisha Porter, a committee to sell the property. It consisted at that time, "of three or four acres of good improved land and about as much more that is likely to become fit for improvement in a short time." They sold it at "public

venue," and it was purchased by Solomon Stoddard for "£100 lawful money." In a short time he sold one half of it to Noah Edwards. "Stoddard's Island" continued to increase, and in twenty-five or thirty years, seven or eight acres were mowed.

**The Purchase Money Disbursed.** The next year, a committee from several towns in the county petitioned the Legislature, asking that the money paid for the Island should be granted to the county to aid in building and maintaining bridges. They say that this "Island has arisen in the river within the memory of man and so the increase of the estate of the province has grown out of the loss of the inhabitants of said county." Their petition was granted, and the county used the money for the erection and support of a bridge over Ware River.

**Levi Shepherd buys the Island.** In 1803, Levi Shepherd Jr., bought the Island of Mr. Stoddard and Eli and Vester Edwards, for \$1200, and sold it to his father. Since that transaction it has been known as "Shepherd's Island."

**Town Action in 1756 and 1757.** In June, 1756, the town refused to hire any but a Grammar schoolmaster, and ordered the selectmen to "Direct the Schoolmaster that he Spend no more Time with y<sup>e</sup> Latin Scholars than their Equal proportion with other Scholars." The schoolmaster was evidently a believer in classical education, and took great delight in imparting his knowledge.—Dr. Mather sought permission to build a pew in the meeting-house, on the women's side of the broad alley, at the end of the body seats, but the people were unwilling to sanction any encroachments upon that portion of the house, and the request was denied.—The meeting-house had now been built about twenty years, and was in need of substantial repairs. Accordingly it was ordered that the needed improvements should be made, and a window put into the southwest gable of the house.—In May an order was passed to build a bridge over Mill River at "Welch End," provided the owners of the upper mill would provide plank.

As the main use of the bridge would be for the purpose of reaching the mill, it was considered proper that the proprietors thereof should bear a portion of the expense. They, however, apparently demurred, and in December the vote was rescinded.—Ensign Josiah Clark and Josiah Clark Jr. were occupying a portion of the highway with pigsties, and they were reminded of the trespass, and warned that they could only continue them there “during the town’s pleasure and no longer.”—Dea. Sheldon was given permission to build a horse shed on town land near the meeting-house, and also to make an alteration in the seats in his pew in the meeting-house, so that he “may more directly face the pulpit, provided that he restore the pew to its former state at his own cost, when he left it, if the town so voted.”

~~School-House not to  
be used for a “Noon  
House.”~~

People who lived at a distance from the meeting-house, were often, especially in the winter months, much inconvenienced on Sundays for want of a place in which to warm themselves after their long and cold ride from home before meeting commenced, as well as a place in which to spend the intermission between services. Soon after the new school-house was finished, Samuel Janes, and other farmers residing at Pascommuck, asked permission to use that building “before and Between meetings as a place of Shelter and Retirement.” It would have made a very comfortable “noon house,” but the town refused to permit the school-house to be opened on Sunday for any such purpose. So the Pascommuck people were obliged to quarter themselves upon their acquaintances on Sunday, or rest and refresh themselves literally under the shadow of the pulpit.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> People who came from distant parts of the town needed some other place than the meeting-house steps in which to pass the time between sermons. In some towns “noon houses” were built by individuals, nearly always on land near the meeting-house. Most of them had two rooms, one for each sex, with fireplaces. Such houses were in use in Southampton and Westhampton, but none seems to have been built here. One family in Northampton, hired a room near the meeting-house for their especial use on Sunday.

School-Committee  
Appointed.

For one hundred five years since the settlement of the town, the schools, as well as all other municipal business, had been under the general supervision of the Selectmen. But with the increase of scholars, and the advance in methods and studies, the educational interests of the town demanded a closer attention, and more careful consideration than the townsmen with all their other duties were able to give them. Consequently on the 2<sup>d</sup> of January, 1759, the first School-Committee was appointed. It consisted of six persons, who, together with the Selectmen, were to have jurisdiction over all the schools in town. Though it was not then termed a School-Committee, its duties were such as have since devolved upon that body. For this purpose the following named persons were selected: — Isaac Parsons, Ebenezer Clark Jr., Lieut. Aaron Wright, Nathaniel Phelps, Ens. Jonathan Strong, and Capt. James Lyman. They were instructed

"to join the Selectmen to Consider how many Schools it should be necessary & profitable for this Town to keep from this Time till next ploughing Time for the Instruction and Education of y<sup>e</sup> boys of this Town both in Grammar learning and to read & Write, and Impowered s<sup>t</sup> com<sup>tee</sup> together with y<sup>e</sup> Selectmen to determine y<sup>e</sup> same in behalf of y<sup>e</sup> Town and to procure Suitable persons to Keep and Teach such Schools and to Take up Such house or houses besides the School house as Shall be needed for that purpose. To agree [upon] the Sums to be given Such Teachers or Masters. To assign the number of Boys to Each School that at present are kept or that they Shall Judge proper to Set up and to determine and order of what Sort they Shall be: To wit, wether Grammar Scholars or readers or Writers which Shall be admitted to and Taught in Each School respectively."

The assessors were ordered to raise such sums of money as might be necessary to defray the expenses. Ten pounds were also granted for "the instruction of boys living at y<sup>e</sup> farms and remote parts of Northampton." Unlimited power relating to schools was by this vote delegated to this committee. They were empowered to control the schools, to hire teachers, provide school-rooms, and were authorized to expend whatever money was needed for school purposes, without restriction.

**The School-Committee Instructed.** In January of the following year, at a special town-meeting, another school-committee was appointed. It was composed of the selectmen and four (instead of six) other persons. This committee was instructed to consider the necessity of "setting up one or more English schools in addition to those already kept" either in the town school-house or some other building, and to supply the schools with wood forthwith. It is not certain that the committee increased the number of schools under this vote, as no payments were made for teaching to any other persons than Titus and Eleazar King. An extra school, however, seems to have been kept about this time in the "old Bela Strong house," situated at the westerly corner of Main and South Streets.

**Meeting-House Repairs under Advice.** During the month of December, 1759, the subject of repairing the meeting-house was again under discussion. More extensive repairs thereon than had been anticipated were found to be necessary, and no action was taken under the vote of three years previous. Quite extensive changes were in contemplation. Among them were an addition to the northwest-erly side of the building, constructing porches over the southeasterly and southwesterly doors, moving one flight of the gallery stairs into the belfry and another into one of the porches, and making some new pews. The timbers also needed strengthening, and other repairs were imperative. A committee, appointed to consider the question, made a very unsatisfactory report and the town voted to send for Master Langdon of Springfield, an old and experienced carpenter, who was to examine the building and "give his best advice concerning the strengthening and securing the Meeting House." His suggestions were acted on to some extent, but it is evident that little was done beyond mending and patching, as the only account upon the treasurer's book, during that year, is an item of £5.12.11 $\frac{1}{2}$  paid to joiners for work upon the meeting-house. No porches were built at this time, nor were any new pews added.

Repairs were also required upon the Court-House, owned and occupied jointly by the town and county, but the

town, though requested by the county to make them, refused an appropriation for that purpose.

**Vote to Procure a  
New Bell.**

One reason for this economy of the town funds may be found in the fact that a new bell seemed to be an absolute necessity. For seventy-eight years the old one had been on duty, and it was no longer powerful enough to be heard throughout the central portion of the settlement. In March, 1760, the town voted to procure a new bell, as soon as convenient, "to hang in the Meeting House in the Town of so large a size as shall effectually serve and answer the ends & purpose of a Meeting House bell to this Town & Society." The matter was placed in the hands of a committee with power to act. In June of the following year a "Great Bell," which weighed 7 cwt. 3 qrs. 15 lbs. was shipped from Boston on board the sloop Nancy. It was imported from England and cost in that country £6 sterling per cwt. Col. Seth Pomeroy and Timothy Dwight negotiated the purchase through Joseph Scott, in Boston, whose bill for everything connected with the bell, including customs fees, freight, insurance, wharfage, etc., was £63.13.7 sterling. On this he charged a commission of 5 per cent., amounting to £3.3.8. To this sum of £66.17.3 it was necessary to add 33½ per cent. in order to find its equivalent in lawful money, which brought the amount up to £89.3. A small additional charge for wharfage and truckage in Boston, made the cost of the bell in lawful money, when shipped on board the sloop, £89.9.8. The bell was to be delivered either at Hartford or Rocky Hill, and the freight was £1.13.4.<sup>1</sup> Within a year, probably on account of overzealous ringing by irresponsible persons, and possibly, also because of incomplete machinery, the bell was broken. In August, 1761, the town was called together to decide about replacing it, as well as about "prosecuting those persons who were instrumental in breaking it." An order was adopted which provided for sending the bell to the founder at Fairfield, to be recast or mended. If it should be recast

<sup>1</sup> Similar bells were in use in the towns of Hatfield, Springfield and Longmeadow. All of them were cast in England and had this inscription: —

"To the church, the living I call,  
To the grave I summon all."

the committee was authorized to receive subscriptions towards enlarging it, and to increase its weight to the amount of the subscriptions received, provided it did not exceed 1000 lbs. Repairs on the bell, whether it was mended or recast is not known, cost £21. It was received in December, 1761, and an order was adopted requiring it to be hung so as to "effect a more easy ringing," as well as a more "effectual striking of the clock to serve the purpose of a bell and clock for the town."

**The Old Bell Sold.** Southampton made a proposition to purchase the old bell, and in 1763, a special meeting was called to decide the matter. This meeting was held in July, and the town voted not to sell, but afterwards reconsidered that vote and appointed a committee to dispose of it to the best advantage. It has been generally understood that the old bell was sold to Southampton, but the town records contain no further allusion to the subject.

**Small Pox.**

This dread disease, which may have been the occasion of the great mortality among the Indian tribes of Massachusetts, shortly before the arrival of the whites, had since been little known in the interior, and did not prevail in the inland towns to any great extent till the latter half of the eighteenth century. The disease had, however, according to Dr. Douglass, "been epidemical in Boston eight times," previous to 1752, causing the death of many persons. Apparently no one had died of it in Northampton before that date. It was probably introduced into this section from the army, a number of soldiers having died from it in Westfield and Brookfield during the year 1761. About this time a sort of hospital for inoculated small pox<sup>1</sup> was established in Springfield,

<sup>1</sup> Inoculation which had been practiced in Europe nearly half a century, where it was bitterly opposed by physicians and was very unpopular among the common people, was introduced into this country in 1720. The clergy generally defended the practice. In November, 1721, Dr. Increase Mather wrote that the practice had been introduced in England, where some judicious magistrates and ministers approved of it. Among the ministers in New England who favored it were Dr. Mather himself, who had preached over sixty years, and his son. "Also we hear," he writes, "that the Rev. and learned Mr. Solomon Stoddard of Northampton concurs with us; also Mr. Wise of Ipswich & many of our younger divines. But few profane persons approve or defend inoculation. This to me is a weighty consideration. There are worthy persons against inoculation, but the known children of the wicked are generally fierce enemies to inoculation." Its opponents called inoculation the work of the devil.

and among its patients were Caleb Strong Jr. (afterwards Governor, then sixteen years old), of Northampton, and Elisha Porter of Hadley. Cases of this nature as well as of other contagious diseases, were treated in a house owned by Increase Clark, situated probably on Pancake Plain. Some apprehension concerning this dread disease doubtless prevailed here, but the town refused to order the building of a pest-house. Existing arrangements were deemed sufficient.

**Old House of Cor-  
rection Sold.**

In March, 1760, the town voted to sell to Ithamar Strong the land "that has so long been enclosed for the old house of correction." The prison-house on this land, at the corner of Main and South Streets, built in 1707, was sold for 56s. Very probably this old building was considerably out of repair, and was of little use for the purpose for which it was constructed. It was never very secure, but seems to have answered its purpose passably well for about half a century. A new jail was built on Pleasant Street, in 1773, and for thirteen years there seems to have been no place nearer than Springfield for the detention of criminals.

**Various Town Mat-  
ters acted upon.**

Once more the thievish crow comes to the front, and again a price is put upon his head. For every fledged crow killed between the middle of April and the middle of June, a premium of 1s. was offered and 4d. for all unfledged.—That the gallery stairs had not been removed, as had been contemplated, is evident from the fact that children were prohibited from sitting on them on Sunday, above the first broad stair from the floor.—An inquiry was instituted concerning the cost of a fire-engine, but no machine of that kind was purchased for thirty years.—All the millers in town were required to conform to the laws respecting tolls, and the petition of the inhabitants of Pascommuck for an appropriation to pay for preaching in that village was denied.

**Indicted for a Defect in Highway.** In January, 1761, the town was indicted for a defective highway between Northampton and the Hatfield meeting-house.

It was voted to defend the suit, and Joseph Hawley and Benjamin Parsons were chosen agents. The vote to contest was re-affirmed in March. In May the case was tried before the Court of General Sessions at Springfield, a verdict rendered against the town, and a fine of £4 imposed. Mr. Hawley carried the case on appeal to the Superior Court, and at the September term, the former verdict was set aside, the indictment being quashed as insufficient. In the meantime, it is presumed that the highway had been repaired. Major Hawley received £2 for his services.

**Division of Hampshire County.**

The County of Hampshire was first divided in 1761. On petition of William Williams and others, the General Court sliced off the westerly portion of it, and formed Berkshire County. Named in the act establishing the county were four incorporated towns and six plantations, and the petitioners represented that the inhabitants of some of them were compelled to travel fifty miles to attend courts at Springfield and Northampton. The question was brought before the town at the March meeting in 1761, to see, as expressed in the warrant, "whether the town had any objections" to offer to the movement. No opposition manifested itself, but by way of precaution the selectmen were authorized to take such "measures as they thought fit to prevent the town's being in any manner prejudiced by the new county." Many citizens of Northampton, as well as other towns in the old county, were interested in the settlements thus set off. Not a few owned real estate in them, and among their inhabitants were sons and daughters of persons living in this town.

Some objections were made by the selectmen of Northampton to the boundary of the new county. They contended that the proposed line would take in a considerable tract of land east of No. 4 (Becket), adjacent to Northampton and Hatfield, and suggested a slight alteration. The line proposed by them was adopted substantially as the eastern boundary of the new county.

**Disputed Land in  
Middle Meadow.**

A special meeting was called to inquire into the ownership of certain lands in Middle Meadow. A committee reported that a considerable part of them belonged to the town. Thereupon a vote was passed to make the title good. From this action grew a long drawn out law suit, which was not settled till 1764, and then matters seem to have been left about as they were when the suit was commenced. Apparently a test case was made with the heirs of Jonathan Hunt, and in the course of a couple of years the town expended not far from £88 in the litigation. Northampton lost the case before the lower court, and appealed to the Superior Court. In 1764, the town decided that it "would become non suit if the Hunts would agree to be defaulted." Apparently both sides were ready to compromise on that basis, for at the September session of the higher court neither party put in an appearance.

**Attempt to make  
Northampton the  
Shire-Town.**

Hardly had the new County of Berkshire been established, when a movement was commenced to make Northampton the shire-town of Old Hampshire, instead of Springfield. A petition signed by Timothy Dwight of Northampton and Oliver Partridge of Hatfield, in which it was claimed that Northampton was much more central than Springfield, was presented to the Legislature in April, 1761. Northampton supplemented this petition by another in the following May, instructing a committee to "procure & Send Some proper person an Agent to Boston to prosecute the affair." Col. Timothy Dwight was delegated to perform this duty, and there remains on file an order on the town treasurer, signed by the three selectmen to pay him "three £ and seven pence one fifth part of a penny in full satisfaction for the like sum paid at Boston by him in and about the affair of the town of Northampton's application to the Genl Court to be constituted the Shire Town of the county of Hampshire." Some towns in the northern part of the county petitioned in favor of Northampton, and others in favor of Hadley, while those in the southern portion opposed any change. In January of the following year, twenty-one towns in the northern half of the county peti-

tioned that the shire-town should be either Northampton or Hadley, as the General Court should see fit.<sup>1</sup> Both petitions were dismissed in February, 1762, and Northampton did not attain the coveted honor till the second division of the county was made in 1812.

**Sabbath Wardens Chosen.** Either disorder in the meeting-house increased considerably or there were not tithing-men enough chosen to preserve order, for in 1761, four men were selected especially to preserve order in the meeting-house on Sunday. They were called "Sabbath Wardens," and for about eighteen years were chosen annually with other town officers. They were subsequently ordered to procure badges of office similar to those carried by tithing-men. In 1764, the town by vote, required the tithing-men and wardens to sit by turns, in some public place in the galleries, to prevent disturbances, and to enforce the law for preserving order in the meeting-house.

**New School Proposed over Mill River.** Town schools were overflowing with pupils, and it was determined in 1761 to establish a new school on the south side of Mill River. The selectmen were instructed first to take the "Lickingwater" boys out of the town school, and if one master could "advantageously instruct those that remained in the English school, to set up a school on that side of the river provided the Parents and Masters of the boys there will procure a room and wood to support it." Provision was also made that boys from other parts of the town should be sent there. It is not probable that another school was "set up" in South Street at this time. As was the case two years before, no additional teachers seem to have been employed, and it may be inferred that the "Parents and Masters" were unwilling to provide a school-room and fuel as well as pupils.

<sup>1</sup> In discussing this subject, Col. Williams of Hatfield is said to have observed:—"The people of Hatfield are industrious and thriving, and to have the courts there would injure their industry and thrift. Northampton people are very religious and the measure would be injurious to their religion, but Hadley has neither thrift nor morality to be injured." Hadley was then and long afterwards greatly demoralized by hard drinking.

Interior of the Meeting-House Improved.

In 1762, the town refused to determine the age at which boys should be allowed to sit in the gallery. This was probably prohibitory, and shut the boys out of that section entirely. So large had become the congregation, and so crowded was the meeting-house, that a general overhauling of the seatings in it was ordered. A committee was appointed to make a "general alteration of persons sitting in the meeting house," as well as to settle with persons who have built pews at their own expense, so that the whole may be "appropriated to the town's use as others are." An exception was made in the case of Noah Clark and his daughter, the wife of Gideon Lyman. They were permitted by special vote to retain the seats they then occupied.

More New Counties Petitioned for.

With the establishment of the new County of Berkshire came a desire for a general dividing up of the old counties in Middle and Western Massachusetts. Two propositions to dismember Worcester and the adjoining counties on each side, originated in the former county within three years. In 1763, Brig.-Gen. Ruggles of Worcester and others petitioned for the formation of another county to be composed of certain towns in Eastern Hampshire and Western Worcester. Northampton voted to make no opposition to the scheme, but nothing seems to have resulted from the undertaking. The year following another county was projected from towns in Northern Worcester and Middlesex Counties, but that also failed.

The Shirkshire Road. A road was laid from Northampton to Shirkshire or Murrayfield (now Norwich), in 1762, the committee reporting at the March meeting the following year. It was built at the expense of the town and was not completed for two years. For many years it was the main road to Westhampton. The principal portion of this highway seems to have been constructed under the superintendence of Col. Seth Pomeroy. He began the work on the 11<sup>th</sup> of September, 1764, on the "west side of Rocky Hill," and finished on the 8<sup>th</sup> of November. His account was kept by days' work. For instance, "Monday

24<sup>th</sup> Sept. 20 days work at the way. \* \* \* Tuesday 9<sup>th</sup> October. 29 days work at the way." The whole number of days' work charged by him was five hundred sixty-three, "reckoning a team and hand with them two days or equal to 2 men." The road commenced "against Benjamin Edwards pasture bars at Rocky Hill," and probably followed the old path to Park Hill, and to King's saw-mill on the Manhan River. The entire distance was 3003 rods, about nine and one half miles.

**Prosecuted for Malicious Mischief.** Disorder was not altogether confined to one day in the week, nor entirely to the meeting-house. Only occasionally, however, did the young misbehave themselves to such an extent as to get into the clutches of the law. Soon after the appointment of Sunday wardens, several young men from this and other towns were brought before the court, charged with malicious mischief. In May, 1764, Elijah King of Charlestown, N. H., Joseph Burt of Northfield, and John Hunt Jr. of Northampton, were presented by the jury for making a riot and disturbance in Northampton, and breaking the windows of the school-house, on the evening of January 16, 1764. They were discharged. At the same time the above named persons and William Mather of Northampton were presented for the following unlawful and unseemly acts. They were charged with "carrying away Ithamar Strong's sled; taking down Benjamin Edwards barn yard bars and letting out his cattle; taking down Simeon Clapp's barn yard bars; carrying away a small sleigh<sup>1</sup> called a pung of the value of 5s. belonging to Ebenezer Hunt, carrying away a small sleigh called a pung of the value of 5s. belonging to Josiah Clark Jr., taking down Bela Strong's bars and opening the doors of his stable and manger and letting the cattle into his barn,

<sup>1</sup> Sleighs or "Slays" as they were sometimes spelled, were not common, only six or eight being in use in Northampton in 1764. They were for the most part ordinary sleds with plank runners, and those for use with one horse were called "panga." Sleigh-rides were not among the winter diversions in this section till the last two decades of the eighteenth century. These sleighs were quite large, some having four seats and were capable of holding twelve or fifteen persons. The young people of Northampton rode down to Elias Lyman's and Lemuel Pomeroy's in Southampton, to Capt. Samuel Fairfield's in Williamsburg, and to other places in the valley. Nearly all the sleighs in the village were called in requisition when one of these rides occurred. Occasionally they had a dance and usually took the village fiddler, a colored man, with them.

taking up two planks of the bridge over Little (Mill) River near the house of Bathsheba Hull." They were fined 10s. each and costs. Bathsheba Hull lived near South Street bridge, and probably Little Mill River was the mill trench.

**Bathsheba Hull.** She was a negress, widow of Amos Hull, and occupied a small house on the Island near South Street bridge, formed by the Mill Trench. She bought the property of John McLane, who had it of his father, Cuthbert McLane. The town claimed the land, and in 1765, brought an action to evict the negress. John Webb's original home lot extended from Main Street to Mill River. When the first grist-mill was built, a short distance up the stream, the trench for carrying away the waste water was dug across the lower end of this lot, and Webb relinquished to the town that part of it cut off by the trench, receiving an equivalent elsewhere. On this transaction the town based its title to the property, claiming possession within thirty years, averring disseizure through John McLane, then of Suffield. The McLanes were squatters on the land, and John, inheriting from his father, who was for many years supported by the town, considered his title good. This claim covered the site of the old brick school-house just above the old South Street bridge, though it is probable that the bridge was then somewhat further up the stream. In 1766, the case was decided in favor of the town, and the next year a vote was passed authorizing the purchase of the dwelling-house in which Bathsheba Hull lived, "notwithstanding the fact that the town had a legal right to said house." In case she "would not accept a reasonable price for it," the committee were ordered to "demolish and abate the same in such manner as to render it uninhabitable." She probably sold out, as there appears a charge in the expense account of 1768, for "carting Bathsheba's goods to the lower end of Pleasant Street, 1s. 6d." The town afterwards sold the property. In 1837, the Mill Trench was still visible, and on the Island were three houses owned by the Hunts, who had previously come into possession of the Webb lot. Now every trace of trench or Island has been obliterated by the railroad embankment.

**Workhouse Proposed.** In 1765, a committee was constituted to confer with the neighboring “towns of Hatfield and Hadley, respecting the building of a work-house in conjunction for the use and benefit of the three towns.” Timothy Dwight Jr., Dea. Ebenezer Hunt and Col. Seth Pomeroy, constituted this committee, but nothing seems to have been accomplished. No report by them is anywhere alluded to upon the records. On consideration it was probably deemed a matter upon which the towns could not profitably enter into partnership.

**A New Court-House in Agitation.** The Court-House and Town Hall, owned and used jointly by the Town and County, built in 1738, was old, and in need of repairs. The question came before the town in 1766, in the form of a threefold proposition made by the county:—that the town buy the share owned by the county, join the county in building anew, and in selling the old one. A committee was appointed to confer with the county officials regarding the sale of the property, but the town refused to do anything more than its rateable proportion towards building a new Court-House. No terms satisfactory to either party were arranged at this time. A proposition was made the next year to purchase the home lot of Elisha Alvord, corner of Main and King Streets, as a site for the new court-house, “soon to be erected,” but the town refused to make an appropriation for that purpose. At the same time, however, it was voted “to repair the town house underpinning as may render it safe, and so not to expose any person’s life by falling.” Town-meetings continued to be held in this building till 1777, and after that time in the Court-House, till 1814, when a new Town Hall was built. In 1782, the Town and County united in the sale of the old building, when Robert Breck paid the town £4.8.9 for one half of it.

**A New Court-House Built.** The proposition to build a new Court-House, brought before the County Court in 1766, was the occasion of the above named action by the town. William Williams of Deerfield and Oliver Partridge of Hatfield, together with others,

petitioned the Court of General Sessions of the Peace, at the November term of that year, for a new Court-House. They complained that the old building was "greatly out of repair and incommodious \* \* \* that as the courts at Northampton are usually held in the winter in cold and inclement weather, your Petitioners & others necessarily attending said courts are subject and exposed to great Danger of Loss of health by reason of said Building being in want of Repairs," and asked "that a new Building be speedily erected for that purpose," or the old house repaired. The court at once ordered that £100 should be raised in the next county tax for the purpose of erecting a new Court-House, and appointed Col. Partridge and Eleazer Porter a committee to confer with the town of Northampton to ascertain whether the town would purchase the old one, or would unite with the county in selling it, or in building anew. At the March term following, the committee reported that the town refused to entertain either of the propositions. Timothy Dwight Jr., Capt. William Lyman, Mr. Solomon Stoddard of Northampton, Col. Partridge of Hatfield, and Eleazer Porter Esq. of Hadley, were constituted a committee to "form a model of a Court House," provide the materials, and proceed to erect the building. The court also ordered the committee to "set the s<sup>4</sup> house upon the Rise of Ground before Capt. Lyman's dwelling house." At the adjourned March term, the court ordered that £30 should be paid to each of the Court-House committee, very probably as compensation for their labor in preparing the "model." In August, 1767, the court ordered, "as the Rise of ground in front of Capt. William Lyman's house was not convenient for the purpose," that the committee should "set" the new Court-House "on the southerly side of Daniel Pomeroy's dwelling-house at or near the place known then by the name of the Poplar Tree.<sup>1</sup>" This was on the common at the junction of Main, Elm and West Streets, in front of Smith College. The committee at once proceeded with the work; part of the foundation stone was delivered there and the excavation commenced.

<sup>1</sup> Daniel Pomeroy lived on the lot now occupied by the Catholic Church, and his house was long known as the "Red Tavern."

Trouble about the  
Site of the Build-  
ing.

Some difficulty seems to have developed in reference to the location of the new building, the court ordering two changes before it was definitely settled. No one seems to have suggested placing it on the site of the old Court-House, which was the most central and convenient position, and as it proved quite near the point finally adopted. It stood in the highway, at the intersection of Main and King Streets, southeast of the present Court-House. When the decision to place the building in front of Capt. William Lyman's<sup>1</sup> house was made known, the location was deemed so unsatisfactory that certain citizens of Northampton endeavored to procure the Elisha Alvord homestead, on Meeting-House Hill, for that purpose. In March, the town refused to aid in the purchase, but a committee, consisting of Ebenezer Hunt, Joseph Hawley, and Timothy Dwight Jr., proceeded to raise the needed sum of money by subscription. In the meantime the court changed the location. During the summer the committee succeeded in obtaining the funds with which to purchase the Alvord place. One hundred thirty pounds were contributed by fifty-five persons from Northampton, and one from Hatfield, and the land was deeded to the county "for the purpose of a Green or Common and for erecting a Court House, or Court Houses thereon." At the November term the court approved the purchase, accepted the deed, and ordered the committee to construct and finish the Court-House at that place.

Site of the New  
Court-House.

The land on which the new Court-House was built, was first granted in 1675 to Samuel Allen, when his house on King Street was burned by the Indians. It afterwards came into the possession of Saul Alvord. He sold it in 1762 or 1763 to Elisha Alvord, and removed to Bolton. The committee of

1 It is somewhat uncertain where Capt. William Lyman lived at this time, but probably it was on Main Street, on what was afterwards the property of Judge Joseph Lyman, just west of the present Mansion House block (where now are the stores of F. W. Roberts, P. H. Dewey, E. H. Banister, and Boa Marché). Yet nothing now indicates that any special "Rise of Ground" ever existed there, unless it may be that the top of the hill at the head of South Street, was so designated. Col. William Lyman bought the homestead in 1757. Lieut. William Lyman lived on Pleasant Street, in 1763, but the topography of that street would conform still less than the other to the description in the court records.

citizens having the matter in charge bought of the widow of Elisha Pomeroy, the homestead at the corner of Main and South Streets, and exchanged the same with Alvord for his home lot on Meeting-House Hill. In 1768, the new building was finished, and the committee reported that they had expended £353 on the structure. Courts were first held in the new building in February 1769.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> For description and plan of property see Appendix.

## CHAPTER XXIII.

### POLITICAL MATTERS—CENSUS—JAIL—NEW TOWNS.

*Agitation Foreshad-  
owing the Revolu-  
tion.*

BEFORE the close of the seven years' war the agitation which resulted in the Revolution, commenced. England proposed to tax the colonies for revenue, and on that line proceeded to legislate for America. The people denied the right of taxation without representation, and protested vigorously against the arbitrary legislation of the British Parliament. Opposition to the British government did not spring up in a single night. Aware of their dependence upon the mother-country, the colonies were loyal to the King. Independence had at first little or no foundation in the minds of the people of New England. Men who afterwards became leaders in the struggle for liberty, were reared in loyalty, and basked in the sunshine of kingly favor. Even when the laws of his ministers became burdensome and oppressive, they still honored the King as good and loyal subjects. While the hand of England lay lightly upon them they had no thought of independence. But when the usurpation of power led to oppressive legislation, no other method of relief presented itself. The preliminary struggles which led up to open warfare, are so familiar that there is no need even of recapitulation. But occasionally the town records contain an allusion to passing events in this great controversy, and in order to obtain a clear understanding of town action thereon, a more detailed reference to the specific measures that called forth that action is deemed necessary.

**Obnoxious Laws.** Writs of assistance, search warrants authorizing revenue officers to enter any man's house, day or night, and break open doors, trunks, boxes and packages in search for goods suspected of having been imported without the payment of duties, were among the first of the obnoxious laws that paved the way to independence. These laws were first issued in 1761, and though not liable to be put in practice to any great extent in the valley towns, the agitation concerning them was not without its effect upon the population, however remote from the seashore. Then followed the sugar tax, by which a duty of sixpence was levied upon every gallon of molasses imported into the colony. But the Stamp Act, coupled with renewed and vigorous enforcement of the navigation Laws against smuggling, was one of the exciting causes that roused the patriotism of the people. The latter, enforced by the naval and military forces, was particularly obnoxious. It violated the sanctity of private life, and gave liberty, under the pretence of searching after contraband goods, for an entry into every man's house, against whom an unscrupulous enemy might have sworn an information. Smarting under the effects of these inquisitory laws, it required but the imposition of the Stamp Act to call out a demonstration on the part of the people that ended in riotous proceedings.

**The Stamp Act.** Intelligence of the passage of the Stamp Act reached Boston in May, 1765. The reception it met with may be considered as the opening act of the Revolution, and though the unpopular law was soon repealed, the seeds of liberty were too strongly planted to be afterwards eradicated. In Boston the excitement increased, and in August reached the boiling point. Some of the officers, influential in passing the unsatisfactory enactment, were burned in effigy by the citizens, which fury, augmented by what it fed on, soon burst into rioting. The houses of several prominent men were broken open, and their contents destroyed or carried away. The better disposed of the people met at Faneuil Hall the next day, denounced these unlawful proceedings, and called upon the authorities to take measures to prevent further outbreaks. With the repeal of the Stamp Act came a demand from

Parliament for compensation from the colony for the losses occasioned by the rioters. This proposition was discussed in the House of Deputies at its midsummer session, and a majority voted against raising any money by tax to meet these losses. In this debate, Major Hawley, representative from Northampton, was bold and outspoken in opposition. It was on this occasion that he electrified his hearers by the assertion that "the Parliament of Great Britain has no right to legislate for us," and for which he received then and there the public thanks of his friend and compatriot, James Otis. A bill was presented which proposed a grant to meet these losses, on condition that a free pardon should be given to all persons concerned in the outbreak. In order to feel the pulse of their constituents, this bill was printed and sent to the several towns.

**The Town acts upon the Bill.** In Northampton, the matter was brought before the town, November 24<sup>th</sup>, 1766, by the following article in the warrant:—

"To consider of a Bill now pending in the House of Representatives entitled An Act for granting compensation to the Sufferers & of free & general Pardon, Indemnity & oblivion to the offenders in the late times & to give Instructions to their representative for his conduct about the same."<sup>1</sup>

A committee of five persons, consisting of Capt. [Timothy] Dwight, Dea. [Ebenezer] Hunt, Mr. Gad Lyman, Mr. Solomon Stoddard, and Col. Seth Pomeroy, was authorized to consider the subject and report. At the afternoon session the committee presented their conclusions. Then followed the subjoined action by the meeting:—

"The Question was put whether they would instruct their representative to give his vote that the Said Bill Should pass to be enacted, & it passed in the negative. Then the Question was put whether they would accept the report of their Said Committee, on the said bill, & it passed in the negative. Then it was moved that the following Question might be put, to wit:—Whether it was the mind of the Town that upon all matters that are or may be under the Consideration of the Said house of representatives during the present Session, Their representative Should Act according to his best Judgment & discretion<sup>2</sup> on bearing the debates thereon in that house, whereupon the Said Question was put & it passed in the affirmative."

1 Barry's Mass., vol. 2, p. 228.

2 The views of Mr. Hawley, then representative, had already been made known by him, at the previous session of the legislature.

**The Town Undecided.** Evidently the town, divided in sentiment on the question, and unwilling to commit itself upon the issue, selected the best way out of the dilemma, by voting to abide by the decision of its representative. What discussion occurred in the town-meeting, or even what may have been the report of the committee, is not known, as that document has not been preserved. It is possible, judging from the political complexion of the committee, as developed later, that they may have reported in favor of the grant, but against the indemnity. It is not probable that they favored the passage of the bill as a whole, nor that they proposed to put the matter unreservedly into the hands of their representative, as both of these suggestions were voted on independently of their report.

**The Bill passed by the Legislature.** This committee contained in the persons of Timothy Dwight and Solomon Stoddard, two individuals who were afterwards avowed tories, and one at least of the others is believed to have had strong predilections in that direction. The result, however, was decidedly in favor of the bill, for which Major Hawley had already committed himself. During the debate in the legislature, he made strong opposition to any grant unless accompanied by the indemnity clause. A majority of the towns decided, like Northampton, to abide by the decision of their representatives, and the House voted at first to raise no money for such a purpose by taxation. After further discussion, however, an act substantially in accordance with the proposition sent to the towns, was passed by the House of Deputies, by a majority of eighteen votes. It was concurred in by the Council, and with reluctance signed by the Governor. This act was subsequently annulled by the King, but not before the provision granting compensation had been carried out.

**Further Strife with Parliamentary Laws.** Politics came once more to the front in the year 1768, when the town was called upon to join in a convention to be held in Boston, for the purpose of consulting upon the position of affairs. A brief summary of the events which led up to

this movement will indicate the critical point which the controversy with the home government had reached, as well as the conservative position assumed by the town. Feeling in the maritime towns was much more intense than in the interior of the state, and while the citizens of Northampton were ever patriotic and ready to uphold their rights, they were in no haste to follow blindly the lead of the Boston populace, though guided by such men as Otis, Adams and Warren. The repeal of the Stamp Act did not end the struggle to derive revenue from the colonies. A tax was levied on glass, paper, painters' colors, and tea, a Board of Customs was established, and writs of assistance legalized. These laws alarmed the people to a much greater extent than did the Stamp Act, and resistance to them was at once determined upon. The citizens of Boston voted in town-meeting to refuse to import certain articles of British manufacture, and to economize in the consumption of many others. Resolutions were passed by the Legislature discouraging the use of British manufactured articles, and recommending those of American production. An English war vessel impressed seamen in Boston, and a vessel belonging to John Hancock was seized on charge of defrauding the revenue. Several mass-meetings of the people were held in which Adams and Otis denounced with vigor these acts of their oppressors. The anniversary of the repeal of the Stamp Act was enthusiastically celebrated, but no overt act was committed. While all was excitement and men's passions were at fever heat, instructions were received ordering the Legislature to rescind its anti-importation resolutions. This was refused, and Gov. Barnard prorogued the General Court. Again the merchants of Boston pledged themselves to import no merchandise from England, except such as was absolutely necessary. All but sixteen of them signed the agreement, and the articles upon which duties had been imposed were especially prohibited. At a mass-meeting held in Faneuil Hall, in September, it was resolved that "the inhabitants of Boston will, at the utmost peril of their lives and fortunes, maintain and defend their rights, liberties, privileges and immunities." It was also decided at this meeting to call a convention of all the towns, within two weeks, and the

selectmen of Boston were requested to correspond with the several towns, asking their co-operation. The circular addressed to the towns suggested as an occasion for the convention, the possibility of a war with France, as well as the fact that no Legislature could be convened. Since dissolving the last one the Governor had refused to authorize another.

*The Town considers  
the Matter.*

A special town-meeting was called to consider this proposition, on the 21<sup>st</sup> of September. Nothing remains to show whether the question was discussed or not. The only record concerning it is the following extract from the town records signed by "Joseph Hawley, Mod."

*Loc 121  
1788*  
*NC and  
voters*

"Then the Question was put whether the Town would appoint a Committee to Act for them in convention with Such as may be Sent from the Several Towns in this province to be Assembled at Faneuil Hall, in Boston, on thursday the Twenty-second day of September Instant, to consult and advise Such measures as his Majesty's subjects in this province may require and it passed in the negative uno Solo contradicente. Sixty-five or six voters were present."

*Action of the Con-  
vention.*

Northampton was among the small minority of towns that declined to take part in these proceedings. Ninety-six towns and eight districts were represented. After a session of six days, during which time pending questions were thoroughly discussed, the convention dissolved, having denounced the ungracious legislation of England, and renewed their protest against the unwholesome and unwelcome laws, with so much caution and discretion, withal, that those on the watch for it were unable to detect a single trace of treason in any of their transactions.

*Districts and not  
Towns Instituted.*

For upwards of twenty years succeeding the incorporation of Southampton as a district, Northampton was represented in the General Court by only three different persons. During this time, and down to 1786, a period of thirty-three years, Northampton and Southampton constituted one representative district. Some years before the latter town was set off, a distinctive blow was aimed at popular government in

the colonies by restricting the number of representatives in the lower House. Instructions were issued that no more towns should be constituted with the privilege of representation. Hence for many years all municipal incorporations were erected into districts, but without authority to send deputies to the General Court.<sup>1</sup> Gideon Lyman was representative from the double district in 1754, 1755, 1757; Timothy Dwight for eight years in succession, from 1758 to 1765; and Joseph Hawley in 1754, 1755, and for nine years consecutively from 1766. In 1764, while Timothy Dwight represented Northampton, Joseph Hawley seems to have served in the same capacity for Southampton. A change was made in the law in 1786, and every town was authorized to send a representative.

*The Meeting House too small* Notwithstanding the hardship and disaster attendant upon the seven years' war, the town continued to increase in wealth and numbers. So large had become the population three years after the war closed, that the meeting-house, only thirty years in existence, was altogether too small, and the people had been for some time planning for its enlargement. All the available space for sittings had been utilized, and still there was not room enough. Several of these suggestions have already been enumerated, some of them had been ordered, but few apparently had been carried out. In 1767, a definite proposition was made to enlarge the structure, but the town was not ready for the undertaking, and it was promptly negatived.

*Poorhouse Provided.* During the same year it was voted to build a house with two rooms for the use of the poor, but the committee chosen to consider the matter reported that the house of Simeon Root could be hired for that purpose, and the selectmen were directed to secure the property.

*Census of the Town.* Three years previous to this last attempt to enlarge the meeting-house, a census of the town was taken, as Major Hawley says, "by order of the King of England." The result was as follows:—num-

<sup>1</sup> Holland's History of Western Massachusetts, vol. 1, p. 222.

1764

ber of dwelling-houses, 187 ; number of families, 202 ; number of males over 16, 339 ; number of males under 16, 312 ; number of females over 16, 333 ; number of females under 16, 281 ; total number of males, 651 ; total number of females, 614 ; aggregate of population, 1265. One family of nine persons was omitted, which increases the total to 1274. In addition there were ten negroes, five males and five females. Apparently they were nearly all slaves, and were distributed in the following families :— Mrs. Prudence Stoddard, widow of Col. John, one female ; Lieut. Caleb Strong, one male ; Joseph and Jonathan Clapp, one each ; Joseph Hunt, one of each sex. There was one negro at Moses Kingsley's, not a slave, another at Zadoc Danks, and Bathsheba Hull was then living near South Street bridge. This seems to have been the first numbering of the people on record.

*Leave out  
Schools*  
11  
Other Statistics and  
"Faculties."

In 1764, the town valuation usually taken in November, amounted to £14,928.9 ; the number of polls was 310. The province tax was £284.8.1 $\frac{1}{4}$  ; representative's pay, £13.10 ; town tax, £255.13.4 $\frac{1}{4}$  ; county tax, £33.3.7 ; the entire province, county and town tax amounted to £586.15.2 $\frac{1}{4}$ . In making out the tax list the term "facultys" was used to designate any business other than farming. The amounts assessed on faculties varied from year to year. In 1761, they came high. Samuel Clark, saddler, was taxed £25 worth of "faculty ;" J. Hodge, tailor, £25 ; Elisha Lyman, joiner, £15 ; Samuel Mather, physician, £40 ; Joseph Hawley, lawyer, £40 ; Lieut. Caleb Strong, tanner, £40. In this term "faculty" was included tools, stock in trade, profession, etc. To show the depreciation in the value of these faculties, a few of these personal taxes for the year 1768 are given :— Quartus Pomeroy, blacksmith, £15 ; Joseph Hawley, lawyer, £20 ; Dr. Samuel Mather, £10 ; Elisha Lyman, joiner, £4 ; Caleb Strong, tanner, £30 ; Ebenezer Hunt, hatter, £60 ; Seth Pomeroy, blacksmith, £20 ; Daniel Hitchcock, lawyer, £20 ; George Hodge, tailor, £6 ; Joel Bartlett, weaver, £6 ; Robert Breck, trader, £10 ; Ezra Clark, weaver, tanner, ferryman, £10 ; Joseph Hutchins, shoemaker, £8 ; Asa Wright, shoemaker, £10 ; John Lyman,

£3. Houses were valued in 1761, from £2 to £7; barns and shops, at 5*sh*, 4*sh*, and 3*sh*; home lots on Hawley Street, from £3 to £4; on Main and Pleasant Streets, £4 to £7; on South Street, at £1. The best meadow-land was valued at 6*sh* per acre, and varied from 4*sh* to 50*sh*, and on South Street at 40*sh* per acre. Improved uplands were commonly valued at 2*sh*, and some nearest the home lots, at from 2*sh* to 3*sh*. Oxen were valued at 40*sh* each; horses, three years old, 4*sh*; cows, three years old, 30*sh*; swine, one year old, 8*sh*; sheep and goats, at 3*sh*.

**A Severe Storm.** A terrible storm of rain, accompanied by thunder and lightning, occurred on the 5<sup>th</sup> of July, 1769. For several hours the rain fell in torrents, and the meadows were covered with water to the depth of three or four feet. Much damage was done to the roads and bridges, and large quantities of hay were carried off by the flood. During the storm the house of Dea. Jonathan Hunt was struck by lightning. The fluid entered at the top of the chimney, and descended to the lower floor, where two of his children, Jonathan, aged 15, and Thankful, aged 7, were standing. Both were instantly killed. The house was but slightly damaged.

**An Extensive Flood.** January of the following year was made memorable by a great flood. The streams were all raised above their banks, and many bridges were carried away. Dea. Ebenezer Hunt, who occupied the property east of the present City Hall, extending from Main Street to Mill River, has left the following account of it:—

"Jan'y 7, a great rain with South wind, the Mill river broke up, and the ice carried off Lickingwater bridge. It was one of the highest floods that any person remembers in Mill River, when the Great River did not set up. It was soon over the bank in my home lot."

Within a few days a town-meeting was held, which voted "almost unanimously," to rebuild the bridge, as the records read, "in the road to Lickingwater." The committee was instructed to build it "in the new form and method of constructing bridges lately gone into by the town." A foot-bridge was constructed for use while the other was in building.

**Patrolling the Meeting-House on Sunday.**

Tithing-men were instructed in 1769, "to prevent disorders among the young people and children in time of worship in the house of God, tho' they be under the necessity of walking about the house to suppress them." Unruly indeed must have been the young provincials, when it became necessary to order the meeting-house to be patrolled during service in order to keep them within bounds. From the numerous votes passed, and by-laws adopted at different times for their regulation, and noted in these pages, it may be safely inferred that the young in those days had no very great respect for sacred things. Apparently the good people, while they insisted that every one, old and young, should attend public worship, did not impress upon their children the propriety of the outward observance of their cherished ceremonials. All attempts to manage the younger element in the meeting-house seem to have been without result. Three years after, the above vote was renewed, and a committee chosen to draft a by-law touching this matter, but no definite action by it is apparent.

**Pascommuck Peo. ple want Sabbath Services.**

For several years the people living at Pascommuck and Bartlett's Mills (Easthampton), had been agitating the question of better accommodations on the Sabbath. They lived at considerable distance from the center of the town, and many times in the year, especially during the winter months, it was difficult for them to get there; the meeting-house was crowded, and they desired that services might be held in their vicinity. Accordingly in 1769, a committee was appointed "to consult and agree upon some measures for the ease and relief of the good people at the farms in their attendance upon the public worship of God which they are desirous of & have motioned it to the town to consider of at this time," and to report at some future meeting. At a meeting held in March of the following year, the committee suggested that the whole matter should be placed in the hands of another committee, who should be instructed

"to view the situation of the Said Farmers Settlements & also the lands in those parts of the Town which are Suitable & likely soon to be settled & upon such general view to pitch upon a spot for a meeting

house to accommodate such Farmers & out Settlements & that when they should have fixed upon the spot the said committee should make the same known to all the Inhabitants living at such farms & as soon as might be learn from the said Inhabitants dwelling at the places above said who & what number of them would consent to assemble at the said place pitched on by the said committee for a meeting house, provided that the town would set up a meeting house at the said place at the expense of the Town & also grant the monies for defraying the charge of winter preaching there."

This report was considered and accepted and a committee of five persons chosen "for the service proposed in said report." Nothing satisfactory seems to have been accomplished at this time, and within three years the settlers in that section petitioned to be set off into a town by themselves.

"Lickingwater" School. This year a log school-house was built "on the south side of Mill river, in that part of the town called 'Lickingwater.'" Some

opposition was manifested and an unsuccessful attempt was made to reconsider the vote by which it was authorized, but a school was established there, and scholars from Bartlett's Mills were allowed to attend. In 1771, an article was inserted in the warrant for the May meeting to consider the question of allowing females to attend this school. When the matter came up in the meeting, it was found that those who "were to be benefitted by it did not desire it and it was dropt." This is the first allusion to the schooling of girls upon the public records. The building must have been poorly constructed, as the next year it seemed to be in need of repairs, but the town refused to make an appropriation for that purpose, though in 1772 it was rough boarded in order to make it more comfortable.

Change in the Sessions of the County Court.

In 1770, Col. Israel Williams of Deerfield presented a petition for the approval of the town concerning a change in the sessions of the court in Northampton and Springfield. The town acted favorably upon it, and instructed its representative, Joseph Hawley, to urge the matter in the Legislature. This petition was granted by the General Court, and an additional term of the Superior Court was ordered to be holden at Northampton.

Right of Southampton to the interest of the School Fund.

An inquiry was ordered into the right of Southampton to a portion of the interest on the school money belonging to the town, which had been regularly paid over to that district. Apparently the town refused to pay any more of it to Southampton, as no more such payments can be found upon the treasurer's books.

Several Matters Adjusted.

Timothy Dwight and others were granted the privilege, in 1771, of erecting a slaughter-house on the town land, near Aaron Kingsley's tan-yard pasture, and the selectmen were authorized to procure the proper and necessary tools for digging graves and put them into the hands of responsible persons. The town also ordered the prosecution of those persons who had recently brought a squaw into the town, unless they would refund the money paid out on her behalf during her illness. Surveyors were allowed "two coppers per mile," when obliged to go to distant parts of the town in the discharge of their official duties. At the same time it was voted not to build a school-house at Pascommuck.

Westhampton Petitions for a Minister.

In 1772, settlers in the west part of the town followed the example of Pascommuck and sent the annexed Petition to the town :

" Northampton, February y<sup>e</sup> 25, A. D. 1772.

" To the Gentleme freeholders and other inhabitants of the town of Northampton assembled and meet on their annual March meeting.

" The petition of the inhabitants of the west or Long Division So called in the County of hampshire.

" humbly shews that whereas we have long Laboured under the unhappiness of being So Situate in our Settlements hear in the woods that we cant with any convenience injoy many of the previlidges of the town for which we have heither to boorn a proportionable part of the charge and cost viz: the Support of the Minister of the gosple and Schooling of children which we cant but Look upon a burden two heavy for us to Bare now in our infant State of begining.

" And as we are now propoeeing a meathod for our releaf with respect to haveing the gosple preached among us hear in the neighbourhood So that our famalyes may take the benefit thereof—in which proceedings we humbly hope and trust that your generossetyes will So fully acquies and be So well pleased to See any thing Done that hath a tendancy to promote peace and good order and Espetially the revival of Decaying religon which is or aught to be much Lemented that you will

contribute sumthing for the incorraignment of the same Especially if no more that you would Grant that we may have our minister raits allowed us that we Shall be the better able to Support the word preacht among our Selvrs—and that you would order sumthing relitive to Schooling as you in your wisdom Shall See fit—the other things we leav at your Discretion nothing Doubting but you will gratify us in this or sum other way as may be that proper as your petitionors Shew.

“And as in Duty Bound Shall Ever pray.”

This document was signed by Joshua Clafin and fifteen other persons, residents in that section of the town. The above modest though ill spelled request was granted on condition that the money allowed should be applied to pay for preaching among themselves. At the next annual meeting £8 were appropriated to the “4 miles of Long Division” for preaching. Again in the following year £9 were granted to the inhabitants of “Westhampton,” viz.: “those who live on Long Division, within four miles east of the west line of Division for preaching and schooling.” Though the name Westhampton is upon the records, the new town was not incorporated till four years after. Every year an appropriation was made; in 1776 one of £9, and the next year another of £15.

**A Meeting Protracted by Adjournment.** In 1772, the March meeting was adjourned from the 3<sup>d</sup> to the 23<sup>d</sup>, then to the 18<sup>th</sup> of May, and then to the first Monday in July. These meetings were mainly occupied with the laying out of roads and the settlement of damages. While this meeting was thus carried forward by adjournment, another was called in May and that was adjourned till July 6<sup>th</sup>.

**The Pauper Question Again.** Every town endeavored to relieve itself of the care of paupers whose legal settlement was elsewhere, and summary methods of removal were often used. The selectmen in 1772 were “desired (as occasion may from time to time require) to use their Discretion in endeavoring a removal of all such persons who have no legal settlement here as they are apprehensive may become chargeable to the town or who are likely to prove bad or troublesome neighbors, altho they may be members of the church here.” Many persons had

been "warned out of town" at different times, but here was a vote severing their connection with the parish, in spite of any claim they might have upon the church. Paupers were given to understand that even though they might be church-members in good and regular standing, they were not to be encouraged. Not less than twenty persons were "warned out of town" in 1741 and 1742, and for several succeeding years the number was scarcely less. With this provision of the law, thoroughly enforced, it is not probable that Northampton was burdened to any great extent with the paupers of other towns.

**Town indicted for defective High-ways.** During this year the town was indicted for defective highways. Joseph Hawley and Timothy Dwight were appointed to defend the suit. One indictment was found by the Grand Jury in August, and another presentment was made at the November term of the Court of General Sessions of the Peace. The cases went against the town, and fines to the amount of £9.9 were paid.

**Wolves.** These animals were becoming very numerous and destructive, and a bounty of £3 for all hunted down and 40s. for all caught in traps, was offered, in addition to the bounty paid by the Province, provided the animals were killed before the first of June.

**Pascommuck School-House.** When the town denied the petition of the Pascommuck settlers, in 1771, to build them a school-house, they erected one at their own expense the following year, and the next year petitioned the town for an appropriation towards its payment. This request was granted, and the town paid one half the cost amounting to £7.1.9, in 1775.

**The Village Sets up for Itself.** Pascommuck, tired of being longer dependent upon the parent town, and disgusted with the treatment its requests for school and ministerial privileges had received, sought permission in 1773, to set up for itself. After a favorable report from a special committee, the town voted to make no opposition to the petitioners, and granted them £300

towards building a meeting-house and settling a minister. The boundary lines of the proposed new district, which also included Bartlett's Mills, were designated by the committee and accepted by the town. This line as reported extended on the south to Connecticut River, and included Mt. Tom and the land east of it to the river. The town, however, voted that the settlers living on that tract, might remain in Northampton "if they continued desirous of it." They did continue desirous of it, and the easterly boundary of the new town was run west of the mountain, and that is the reason why the villages of Smiths Ferry and Mt. Tom still remain a part of this town. In June the petitioners again came before the town asking for a larger appropriation and increase of territory. The request for more money was negatived, but the northern boundary was changed so as to include much more land. In December, the representative in the General Court was instructed to "use his best endeavor" to procure the incorporation of the new town. In January of the following year, about a dozen of the inhabitants in the northeasterly part of Southampton, petitioned the Legislature to be set off with the Pascommuck settlers. They argued that they lived at a great distance from the meeting-house in Southampton, and that they were very "near these brethren" who desired to be incorporated into a new town. They disclaimed any dislike to their minister or any disagreement with the other inhabitants of the district. Southampton, very naturally, resisted this projected dismemberment, and a remonstrance to the above petition was forwarded to the Legislature. In this document it was contended

"that the westerly part of Southampton is mountainous and barren, that most of the lands in the town are poor, and in their natural state generally sold at 4s. an acre. The inhabitants were much kept back by the last two wars, and the town was but just able to pay public charges. Some who dwelt at the south west part will probably soon be joined to Norwich or Westfield, and have already concerted measures for that purpose. The meeting house is old, and a new one must be built. If the petitioners are set off, there will be great difficulty about a spot for a new one. The petitioners do not any of them live over four miles from the meeting house, and the roads are good, and they have some of the best land in the district. They also intend to draw away others from said district, who will be nearer to their proposed new meeting house."

These arguments of the remonstrants prevailed for the time being, and not till after the Revolution was the new district established. Considerable feeling was manifested in Southampton, and several spicy town-meetings were held. Jonathan Judd Jr., of that town, son of the minister, has the following entry in his journal on the 22<sup>d</sup> and 23<sup>d</sup> of June:—

“A meeting in order to see about setting off the North Part of the District \* \* After the matter was proposed and a vote had like to have been taken, but with much ado it was put by. Capt. Clapp designed to have catched us, but his son could not keep it to himself.” In another entry of January 3<sup>d</sup>, 1774, he writes:—“Town meeting about the Designed parish to the N. E. Instructions to Major Hawley to hinder those People from going off were voted for. N-n had voted for him to forward their going off,<sup>1</sup> those People much engaged to go.”

Again in 1781, the subject was in agitation. Mr. Judd says, August 13<sup>th</sup>:—“Meeting did not vote off the North part of the town.” The next year Northampton once more voted in favor of establishing the new town, and decided to give one eighth of all the public property in the town, estimating that to be about the proportion of its inhabitants that would be included within the boundary lines of the new settlement. Three years however elapsed before Easthampton was incorporated.

*Author.*  
Jail Ordered to be  
Built.

No place existed in Northampton for the proper detention of criminals, the old house of correction, erected in 1707, having been sold by the town in 1760. In 1772, the Court of General Sessions of the Peace, appointed Major Joseph Hawley, Major Timothy Dwight, Capt. Solomon Stoddard, Lieut. Gideon Clark, and Mr. Jonathan Allen, a committee to buy land and build a Jail in Northampton. Work was commenced on the structure during the following year. They purchased of Asabel Danks and wife the homestead which had belonged to Benjamin Bartlett (father of Danks' wife), for £110, which together with the interest brought the amount of the purchase money to £119.18. This was a por-

<sup>1</sup> Major Hawley was at this time representative for the towns of Northampton and Southampton. One year he received instructions from Northampton to favor the project for a new town, and the next year he was requested by Southampton to oppose the movement. That is, Northampton desired him to favor the Pascomuck petition, and Southampton instructed him to oppose the division of that town. This latter territory was known as “Clapp's Farms.”

tion of the homestead of Robert Bartlett, one of the first settlers, and was situated at the lower end of Pleasant Street. The old dwelling-house was moved back and fitted up for the use of the jailer. It was called the "Mansion House," and was demolished in 1833. The new jail was built of squared logs which were cut on the commons in the west part of the town. The entire cost of the building, including interest, was £672, equal to \$2,240.

**Description of the  
New Jail.**

This building, like all of its class then in use, was very insecure, and from it many prisoners escaped. It was badly constructed, although in all probability one of the best of its kind in this part of the Province. "The cells were scarce four feet high, and filled with the noxious gases of the privy vaults through which they were supposed to be ventilated. Light came in from two chinks in the walls."<sup>1</sup> The notorious Stephen Burroughs, convicted of passing counterfeit money, was removed from the jail in Springfield to this one, in 1796. No sooner were the prisoners placed within the building than they began the work of breaking out of it. On the night that Burroughs had been placed in the gaol at Springfield, several prisoners made their escape, consequently he was removed. Though he was not concerned in the Springfield jail delivery, he had hardly reached his new quarters before he commenced the same game himself. His first attempt was by undermining the chimney, but he was caught before his labors were completed. A short time after, while chained to the floor, he set the jail on fire; on still another occasion in company with a companion, he succeeded in digging under the foundation of the building, breaking ground outside of it only to fall into the hands of the officers, who had discovered the attempt and were waiting to greet him.<sup>2</sup>

**A New Jail Built.** This structure answered its purpose for about twenty-seven years, holding securely all prisoners who were willing to remain within its walls. In the year 1800 a new one of stone was built on its site,

<sup>1</sup> McMaster's History of the American People, vol. 1, p. 22.

<sup>2</sup> Life of Stephen Burroughs.

forty feet long, twenty-eight feet wide, and sixteen feet high. The committee charged with its erection were Ebenezer Mattoon of Amherst, Charles Phelps of Hadley, and Josiah Dickinson of Northampton. It cost \$5,183.85. Persons now living who remember the building, state that it was two stories in height, the debtor's room being on the second floor. For more than half a century this building was in use. In 1853, the present Jail and House of Correction was erected, at a cost of \$49,000.

**Horse-Blocks.** These conveniences are first noticed upon the records in 1773, when a suitable number were ordered to be set up near the meeting-house "for those who ride to meeting." They afterwards became fixtures everywhere, and many other votes are recorded concerning them.<sup>1</sup>

**Subscription for Bounty on Wolves.** In March, the town voted the usual premium of £3 for every wolf killed, in addition to the same amount established by law. But certain of the citizens "being apprehensive that the raising of the premium about five or six pounds more \* \* \* would be vastly beneficial to the town & particularly to the owners of the sheep therein, as it would tend greatly & might be the means of their preservation \* \* by encouraging persons skilled that way & others to employ a much greater portion of their time than they have been able heretofore to do in hunting, killing & driving them away out of town," circulated a subscription paper and raised £3.7.6 to be added to the premiums already offered. Twenty-seven names are appended to this paper. No one gave more than 4s., and none less than 1s. These twenty-seven names represent, undoubtedly, the owners of the largest flocks of sheep in town.

**Manufacture of Pottery.** One of the earliest attempts at manufacturing in Northampton, of which any record has been found, was pottery. It was established by Capt. Jonathan Hale, who came here from Had-

<sup>1</sup> In the latter part of the 18<sup>th</sup> century, horse-blocks were very common throughout the town. In South Street one could be found at nearly every house on both sides of the street. Some were made of boards and plank and slit work, or of large timbers; others were simply a log squared, with steps cut at one side.





ley in 1773. He lived on Bridge Street, and his factory was at the rear of his home lot. Clay was obtained on the bank of the Connecticut River above and below the location of the present bridges. He died in 1776, and Ebenezer Gibbs succeeded to the business. Gibbs came from Chatham, and obtained a portion of the clay he used from "Clay hill" beyond West Street bridge. The business passed into the hands of Dea. Ebenezer Hunt, in 1779, and he carried it on for several years.

**Articles Manufactured.** Coarse red pottery, partially glazed, seems to have been the output of this small establishment. It consisted of pots, pans, pitchers, platters, pudding dishes, jugs, bowls, etc., which were sold by peddlers throughout the county. Considerable business was done in this line by Dea. Hunt, who purchased the tools of Samuel Parsons. It is not known what became of the industry, though in all probability, during the unsettled times that preceded and followed the Revolution, the demand for the product ceased, and the business died out. It is not certainly known where Dea. Hunt manufactured the goods, whether at the old stand on Bridge Street, or elsewhere. Everything was shaped by hand and little machinery used.

**Orders to the Selectmen.** The next year the selectmen were ordered to provide a place where the bier could be housed, to repair the wall about the burying yard, and to procure and set out trees at convenient distances around the same. These trees were set out at a cost of 10s., and in a year or two all that had died were replaced. The selectmen were also ordered "as often as once a quarter to visit the Several Schools in the body of the Town, & examine into the State of them & make Such orders & give Such directions respecting their Instruction & management of them as Shall appear proper."



























